









2 Vols.

7 1 8  
2:6:0



8





THE  
HISTORY and ADVENTURES  
OF THE RENOWNED  
DON QUIXOTE.

Translated from the SPANISH of

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA.

To which is prefixed,

Some ACCOUNT of the AUTHOR'S LIFE.

By T. SMOLLETT, M.D.

Illustrated with Twenty-eight new Copper-Plates, designed by HAYMAN,  
And engraved by the best ARTISTS.

---

IN TWO VOLUMES.

---

VOL. I.

---

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for A. MILLAR, over against Catherine-Street, in the Strand;  
T. OSBORN, T. and T. LONGMAN, C. HITCH and L. HAWES, J. HODGES,  
and J. and J. RIVINGTON.  
MDCCLV.



To his EXCELLENCY

DON RICARDO WALL,

PRINCIPAL SECRETARY OF STATE TO HIS MOST  
CATHOLIC MAJESTY,

LIEUTENANT GENERAL OF THE ARMIES OF SPAIN,

COMMENDARY OF PENAUZENDE IN THE  
ORDER OF ST. JAGO, &c. &c.

AND HERETOFORE

AMBASSADOR AND PLENIPOTENTIARY  
AT THE COURT OF GREAT BRITAIN.

S I R,

**T**HE permission I obtained to inscribe the following translation of DON QUIXOTE to your Excellency, while you resided in this Capital, affords me a double pleasure; as it not only gives me an opportunity of expressing that profound respect and veneration with which I contemplate your Excellency's character; but also implies your approbation, which cannot fail to influence the public in behalf of the performance. I have the honour to be,

S I R,

Your Excellency's most obedient

Humble Servant,

LONDON, Feb. 7,  
1755.

T. SMOLLETT.



---

---

THE  
L I F E  
O F  
C E R V A N T E S.

**M**IGUEL de Cervantes Saavedra was at once the glory and reproach of Spain; for, if his admirable genius and heroic spirit conducted to the honour of his country, the distress and obscurity which attended his old age, as effectually rebounded to her disgrace. Had he lived amidst Gothic darkness and barbarity, where no records were used, and letters altogether unknown, we might have expected to derive from tradition, a number of particulars relating to the family and fortune of a man so remarkably admired even in his own time. But, one would imagine pains had been taken to throw a veil of oblivion over the personal concerns of this excellent author. No inquiry hath, as yet, been able to ascertain the place of his nativity; and, although in his works he has declared himself a gentleman by birth, no house has hitherto laid claim to such an illustrious descendant.

One \* author says he was born at Esquivias; but, offers no argument in support of his assertion: and probably the conjecture was founded upon the encomiums which Cervantes himself bestows on that place, to which he gives the epithet of Renowned, in his preface to *Perfiles and Sigismunda*. Others affirm he first drew breath in Lucena, grounding their opinion upon a vague tradition which there prevails: and a † third set

\* Thomas Tamayo de Vargas.

† Don Nicholas Antonio.

take it for granted that he was a native of Seville, because there are families in that city known by the names of Cervantes and Saavedra; and our author mentions his having, in his early youth, seen plays acted by Lope Rueda, who was a Sevillian. These, indeed, are presumptions that deserve some regard, tho', far from implying certain information, they scarce even amount to probable conjecture: nay, these very circumstances seem to disprove the supposition; for, had he been actually descended from those families, they would, in all likelihood, have preserved some memorials of his birth, which Don Nicholas Antonio would have recorded, in speaking of his fellow-citizen. All these pretensions are now generally set aside in favour of Madrid, which claims the honour of having produced Cervantes, and builds her title on an expression \* in his Voyage to Parnassus, which, in my opinion, is altogether equivocal and inconclusive.

In the midst of such undecided contention, if I may be allowed to hazard a conjecture, I would suppose that there was something mysterious in his extraction, which he had no inclination to explain, and that his family had domestic reasons for maintaining the like reserve. Without admitting some such motive, we can hardly account for his silence on a subject that would have afforded him an opportunity to indulge that self-respect which he so honestly displays in the course of his writings. Unless we conclude that he was instigated to renounce all connexion with his kindred and allies, by some contempt'ous slight, mortifying repulse, or real injury he had sustained; a supposition which, I own, is not at all improbable, considering the jealous sensibility of the Spaniards in general, and the warmth of resentment peculiar to our author, which glows through his productions, unrestrained by all the fears of poverty, and all the maxims of old age and experience.

Whatever may have been the place of his nativity, we gather from the preface to his novels, that he was born in the year 1549: and his writings declare that his education was by no means neglected; for, over and above a natural fund of humour and invention, he appears to have possessed a valuable stock of acquired knowledge: we find him intimately acquainted with the Latin classics, well read in the history of nations, versed in the philosophy, rhetoric, and divinity of the schools, tinged with astrology and geography, conversant with the best Italian authors, and perfectly

\* He describes his departure from Madrid in these words: "Out of my country and myself I go!"

matter of his own Castilian language. His genius, which was too delicate and volatile to engage in the severer studies, directed his attention to the productions of taste and polite literature, which, while they amused his fancy, enlarged, augmented, and improved his ideas, and taught him to set proper bounds to the excursions of his imagination.

Thus qualified, he could not fail to make pertinent observations in his commerce with mankind: the peculiarities of character could not escape his penetration; whatever he saw became familiar to his judgment and understanding; and every scene he exhibits, is a just well drawn characteristic picture of human life.

How he exercised these talents in his youth, and in what manner the first years of his manhood were employed, we are not able to explain, because history and tradition are altogether silent on the subject; unless we admit the authority of one \* author, who says, he was secretary to the duke of Alva, without alledging any one fact or argument in support of his assertion. Had he actually enjoyed a post of such importance, we should not, in all probability, have wanted materials to supply this chasm in his life; nor should we find him afterwards in the station of a common soldier.

Others imagine that he served as volunteer in Flanders, where he was raised to the rank of ensign in the company commanded by Don Diego de Urbina; grounding this belief on the supposition that the history of the Captive, related in the first part of Don Quixote, is a literal detail of his own adventures. But, this notion is rejected by those who consider that Cervantes would hardly have contented himself with the humble appellation of soldier, which, in speaking of himself, he constantly assumes, had he ever appeared in any superior station of a military character. In a word, we have very little information touching the transactions of his life but what he himself is pleased to give through the course of his writings; and from this we learn that he was chamberlain to cardinal Aquaviva in Rome, and followed the profession of a soldier for some years, in the army commanded by Marco Antonio Colona †, who was, by pope Pius V. appointed general of the ecclesiastical forces employed against the Turk, and received the consecrated standard from the hands of his holiness, in the church of St. Peter.

\* Nicholas Antonio, Biblioth. Hisp.

† His dedication of Galatea.

Under this celebrated captain, Cervantes embarked in the christian fleet commanded by Don John of Austria, who obtained over the Turks the glorious victory of Lepanto, where our author lost his left hand by the shot of an arquebus. This mutilation, which redounded so much to his honour, he has taken care to record on divers occasions: and, indeed, it is very natural to suppose his imagination would dwell upon such an adventure, as the favourite incident of his life. I wish he had told us what recompence he received for his services, and what consolation he enjoyed for the loss of his limb, which must have effectually disqualified him for the office of a common soldier, and reduced him to the necessity of exercising some other employment.

Perhaps it was at this period he entered into the service of cardinal Aquaviva, to whose protection he was entitled by his gallantry and misfortune; and now, in all likelihood, he had leisure and opportunity to prosecute his favourite studies, to cultivate the muse, and render himself conspicuous by the productions of his genius, which was known and admired by several authors of distinction even before his captivity; for, Louis Galvez de Montalvo, in his poem prefixed to *Galatea*, says, the world lamented his misfortune in tears, and the muse expressed a widow's grief at his absence. I will even venture to suppose, that, in this interval, his situation was such as enabled him to raise an independent fortune; for, we find him afterwards relieving the wants of his fellow-captives in *Barbary*, with such liberality as denoted the affluence of his own circumstances; and, in his voyage to *Parnassus*, which was published in his old age, *Apollo* upbraids him with want of œconomy, and reminds him of his having once made his own fortune, which in the sequel he squandered away.

I make no doubt but this was the most fortunate period of *Saavedra's* life, during which he reformed and improved the Spanish theatre, and ushered into the world a number of dramatic performances which were acted with universal applause. He \* tells us that he had seen plays acted by the great *Lope de Rueda*, who was a native of *Seville*, and originally a gold-beater: when this genius first appeared, the Spanish drama was in its infancy: one large sack or bag contained all the furniture and dress of the theatre, consisting of four sheepskin jackets with the wool on, trimmed with gilt leather; four beards and periwigs, and the same number of pastoral crooks. The piece was no other than a dialogue or eclogue be-

\* In the preface to his plays.



tween two or three swains and a shepherdess, seasoned with comic interludes, or rather low buffoonery, exhibited in the characters of a black-amoor, a bravo, a fool, and a Biscayan. The stage itself was composed of a few boards, raised about three feet from the ground, upon four benches or forms. There was no other scenery than a blanket or horse-cloth stretched across, behind which the musicians sung old ballads unaccompanied by any sort of instrument. Lopè de Rueda not only composed theatrical pieces, but also acted in every character with great reputation; in which he was succeeded by Naharro, a Toledan, who improved and augmented the decorations, brought the music from behind the blanket and placed it forwards to the audience, deprived the actors of their counterfeit beards, without which no man's part had been hitherto performed, invented machines, clouds, thunder and lightening, and introduced challenges and combats with incredible success: but, still the drama was rude, unpolished, and irregular; and the fable, tho' divided into five acts, was almost altogether destitute of manners, propriety, and invention.

From this uncultivated state of ignorance and barbarity, Cervantes raised the Spanish theatre to dignity and esteem, by enriching his dramatic productions with moral sentiments, regularity of plan, and propriety of character; together with the graces of poetry, and the beauties of imagination. He published thirty pieces, which were represented at Madrid with universal applause; so that he may be justly deemed the patriarch of the Spanish drama; and, in this particular, revered above Lopè de Vega himself, who did not appear until he had left off writing for the stage.

In the year 1574, he was unfortunately taken by a Barbary corsair, and conveyed to Algiers, where he was sold to a Moor, and remained a slave for the space of five years and an half; during which he exhibited repeated proofs of the most enterprising genius and heroic generosity. Though we know not on what occasion he fell into the hands of the Barbarians, he himself gives us to understand, in the story of the Captive, that he resided at Algiers in the reign of Hassan Aga, a ruffian renegado, whose cruelty he describes in these terms: "He was every day hanging one, impaling another, maiming a third, upon such slight occasions, frequently without any cause assigned, that the Turks themselves owned he acted thus out of meer wantonness of barbarity, as being naturally of a savage disposition, and an inveterate enemy to the whole human race. The person who used the greatest freedom with him, was one Saavedra, a Spanish  
a
soldier,

soldier, who, tho' he did many things which those people will not soon forget, in attempting to regain his liberty, he never gave him one blow, nor ordered him once to be chastised, nor even chid him with one hasty word; and yet, the least of all his pranks was sufficient, as we thought, to bring him to the stake; nay, he himself was more than once afraid of being impaled alive. If time would permit, I could here recount some of that soldier's actions, which, perhaps, might entertain and surprize you more than the relation of my own story."

Thus, Cervantes ascertains the time of his own slavery, delineates, with great exactness, the character of that inhuman tyrant, who is recorded in history as a monster of cruelty and avarice; and proves to demonstration, that his own story was quite different from that which the Captive related of himself. Saavedra's adventures at Algiers were truly surprizing; and tho' we cannot favour the public with a substantial detail of every incident, we have found means to learn such particulars of his conduct, as cannot fail to reflect an additional lustre on a character which has been long the object of admiration.

We are informed by a respectable historian \*, who was his fellow slave and an eye witness of the transaction, that Don Miguel de Cervantes, a gallant, enterprizing Spanish cavalier, who, tho' he never wanted money, could not obtain his release without paying an exorbitant ransom, contrived a scheme for setting himself free, together with fourteen unhappy gentlemen of his own country, who were all in the like circumstances of thralldom under different patrons. His first step was to redeem one Viana, a bold Majorcan mariner, in whom he could confide, and with whom he sent letters to the governor of that island, desiring, in the name of himself and the other gentlemen captives, that he would send over a brigantine, under the direction of Viana, who had undertaken, at an appointed time, to touch upon a certain part of the coast, where he should find them ready to embark. In consequence of this agreement, they withdrew themselves from their respective masters, and privately repaired to a garden near the sea-side, belonging to a renegado Greek, whose name was Al-Caid Hassan; where they were concealed in a cave, and carefully screened from the knowledge of the owner, by his gardener, who was a christian captive. Viana punctually performed his promise, and returned in a vessel, with which he was supplied by the governor of Majorca; but, some Moors chancing to pass, just as he anchored at the appointed place,

\* F. Diego de Haedo.

the coast was instantly alarmed, and he found himself obliged to relinquish the enterprize. Meanwhile, the captives, being ignorant of this accident, remained in the cavern, which they never quitted except in the night, and were maintained by the liberality of Cervantes, for the space of seven months, during which the necessaries of life were brought to them by a Spanish slave, known by the appellation of *El Dorador* or *The Gilder*. No wonder that their hope and patience began to fail, and their constitutions to be affected by the dampness of the place, and the grief of their disappointment, which Don Miguel endeavoured to alleviate by the exercise of his reason, good humour and humanity; 'till, at last, their purveyor turned traitor, and, allured by the hope of receiving a considerable reward, discovered the whole affair to Hassan Basha. This tyrant, transported with joy at the information, immediately ordered the guardian Basha, with a body of armed men, to follow the perfidious wretch, who conducted them to the cave, where they seized those unhappy fugitives, together with their faithful gardener, and forthwith carried the whole number to the public Bagnio, except Cervantes, touching whose person they had received particular directions from Hassan, who knew his character, and had been long desirous of possessing such a notable slave. At present, however, his intention was to persuade Don Miguel to accuse Oliver, one of the fathers of the redemption then at Algiers, as an accomplice in the scheme they had projected, that he might, on this pretence, extort from the frier, by way of composition, the greatest part of the money which had been collected for the ransom of christian slaves. Accordingly, he endeavoured to inveigle Saavedra with artful promises, and to intimidate him with dreadful threats and imprecations, into the confession or impeachment, on which he wanted to lay hold: but, that generous Spaniard, with a resolution peculiar to himself, rejected all his offers, and despising the terrors of his menaces, persisted in affirming that he had no associate in the plan of their escape, which was purely the result of his own reflection.

After having in vain tampered with his integrity, in repeated trials that lasted for several days, he restored him and his companions to their respective patrons, notwithstanding the remonstrances of Al-Caid Hassan, owner of the garden in which they had been apprehended, who, probably with a view to manifest his own innocence, strenuously exhorted the Basha to inflict the most exemplary punishment on the offenders, and actually put his own gardener to death. Cervantes had so often signalized his genius, courage, and activity, that Hassan resolved to make him his

own, and purchased him from his master for five hundred ducats : then he was heard to say, " While I hold that maimed Spaniard in safe custody, my vessels, slaves, and even my whole city are secure." For, he had not only concerted a number of schemes for the deliverance of his fellow captives, but his designs had even aspired to the conquest of Algiers, and he was at four different times on the point of being impaled, hooked, or burned alive. Any single attempt of that kind would have been deemed a capital offence, under the mildest government that ever subsisted among the Moors; but, there was something in the character or personal deportment of Cervantes, which commanded respect from barbarity itself; for, we find that Hassan Basha treated him with incredible lenity, and his redemption was afterwards effected by the intercession of a trinitarian father, for a thousand ducats \*.

From this account of his behaviour in Barbary, it appears that he acted a far more important part than that of a poor mutilated soldier : he is dignified with the appellation of Don Miguel de Cervantes, and represented as a cavalier whose affluent fortune enabled him to gratify the benevolence and liberality of his disposition. We must therefore take it for granted that he acquired this wealth after the battle of Lepanto, where he surely would not have fought as a private soldier, could he have commanded either money or interest to procure a more conspicuous station in the service. Be that as it will, his conduct at Algiers reflects honour upon his country, and while we applaud him as an author, we ought to revere him as a man; nor will his modesty be less the object of our admiration, if we consider that he has, upon this occasion, neglected the fairest opportunity a man could possibly enjoy, of displaying his own character to the greatest advantage, and indulging that self-complacency which is so natural to the human heart.

As he returned to his own country, with those principles by which he had been distinguished in his exile, and an heart entended and exercised in sympathizing with his fellow creatures in distress; we may sup-

\* To this adventure he, doubtless, alludes, in the story of the Captive; who says, that when he and his fellow slaves were deliberating about ransoming one of their number, who should go to Valencia or Majorca, and procure a vessel with which he might return and fetch off the rest, the renegado, who was of their council, opposed the scheme, observing, that those who are once delivered seldom think of performing the promises they have made in captivity: as a confirmation of the truth of what he alledged, he briefly recounted a case which had lately happened to some christian gentleman, attended with the strangest circumstances ever known, even in those parts, where the most uncommon and surprizing events occur almost every day.

pose he could not advert to the lessons of œconomy, which a warm imagination seldom or never retains; but, that his heart glowed with all the enthusiasm of friendship, and that his bounty extended to every object of compassion which fell within his view.

Notwithstanding all the shafts of ridicule which he hath so successfully levelled against the absurdities of the Spanish romance, we can plainly perceive, from his own writings, that he himself had a turn for chivalry: his life was a chain of extraordinary adventures, his temper was altogether heroic, and all his actions were, without doubt, influenced by the most romantic notions of honour.

Spain has produced a greater number of these characters, than we meet with upon record in any other nation; and whether such singularity be the effect of natural or moral causes, or of both combined, I shall not pretend to determine. Let us only affirm, that this disposition is not confined to any particular people or period of time: even in our own country, and in these degenerate days, we sometimes find individuals whom nature seems to have intended for members of those ideal societies which never did, and perhaps never can exist but in imagination; and who remind us of the characters described by Homer and Plutarch, as patriots sacrificing their lives for their country, and heroes encountering danger, not with indifference and contempt, but, with all the rapture and impetuosity of a passionate admirer.

If we consider Cervantes as a man inspired by such sentiments, and actuated by such motives; and at the same time, from his known sensibility and natural complexion, suppose him to have been addicted to pleasure and the amusements of gallantry; we cannot be surpris'd to find his finances in a little time exhausted, and the face of his affairs totally reversed. It was probably in the decline of his fortune, that he resolv'd to re-appear in the character of an author, and stand candidate for the public favour, which would be a certain resource in the day of trouble: he, therefore, compos'd his *Galatea* in six books, which was published in the year 1584, dedicated to Ascanio Colonna, at that time abbot of St. Sophia; and afterwards cardinal of the holy cross of Jerusalem.

The rich vein of invention, the tenderness of passion, the delicacy of sentiment, the power and purity of diction, displayed in this performance, are celebrated by Don Louis de Vargas Manrique, in a commendatory

datory sonnet, which is a very elegant and honourable testimony of our author's success. Nevertheless, the production has been censured for the irregularity of its style, the incorrectness of its versification, and the multiplicity of its incidents, which encumber and perplex the principal narration; and, over and above these objections, the design is not brought to a conclusion, so that the plan appears meagre and defective. He himself pleads guilty to some part of the charge, in the sentence pronounced by the curate, in the first part of *Don Quixote*, who when the barber takes up the *Galatea* of Miguel de Cervantes; "That same Cervantes, says he, has been an intimate friend of mine these many years, and is, to my certain knowledge, more conversant with misfortunes than with poetry. There is a good vein of invention in his book, which proposes something, tho' it concludes nothing. We must wait for the second part which he promises, and then, perhaps, his amendment may deserve a full pardon, which is now denied."

Whether the success of *Galatea* encouraged our author to oblige the world with some of those theatrical pieces, which we have already mentioned as the first regular productions of the Spanish drama, or the whole number of these was written and acted before his captivity, I have not been able to determine; but, in all probability, his first essays of that kind were exhibited in the interval between the battle of Lepanto and the commencement of his slavery, and the rest published after his redemption.

Unless we suppose him to have been employed at Madrid in this manner for his subsistence, we must pass over two and twenty years, which afford us no particular information touching the life of Saavedra; tho', in that period, he married Donna Catalina de Salazar, dissipated the remains of his fortune, experienced the ingratitude of those he had befriended in his prosperity, and, after having sustained a series of mortifications and distresses, was committed to prison in consequence of the debts he had contracted.

In this dismal situation, he composed that performance which is the delight and admiration of all Europe; I mean, the first part of *Don Quixote*, which he wrote with a view to ridicule and discredit those absurd romances, filled with the most nauseous improbability and unnatural extravagance, which had debauched the taste of mankind, and were indeed a disgrace to common sense and reason. Not that Cervantes had any intention to combat the spirit of knight-errantry, so prevalent among the Spaniards;

Spaniards; on the contrary, I am persuaded he would have been the first man in the nation, to stand up for the honour and defence of chivalry, which when, restrained within due bounds, was an excellent institution, that inspired the most heroic sentiments of courage and patriotism, and on many occasions conduced to the peace and safety of the commonwealth. In the character of Don Quixote, he exhibits a good understanding, perverted by reading romantic stories, which had no foundation in nature or in fact. His intellects are not supposed to have been damaged by the perusal of authentic histories, which recount the exploits of knights and heroes who really existed; but, his madness seems to have flowed from his credulity and a certain wildness of imagination which was captivated by the marvelous representation of dwarfs, giants, negromancers, and other preternatural extravagance. From these legends he formed his whole plan of conduct; and tho' nothing can be more ridiculous than the terms upon which he is described to have commenced knight-errant, at a time when the regulations of society had rendered the profession unnecessary, and indeed illegal; the criterion of his frenzy consists in that strange faculty of mistaking and confounding the most familiar objects with the fantastical illusions which those romances had engendered in his fancy. So that our author did not enter the lists against the memory of the real substantial chivalry, which he held in veneration; but, with design to expel an hideous phantome that possessed the brains of the people, waging perpetual war with true genius and invention.

The success of this undertaking must have exceeded his most sanguine hopes. Don Quixote no sooner made his appearance, than the old romances vanished like mist before the sun. The ridicule was so striking, that even the warmest admirers of Amadis and his posterity seemed to wake from a dream, and reflected with amazement upon their former infatuation. Every dispassionate reader was charmed with the humorous characters of the knight and squire, who straight became the favourites of his fancy; he was delighted with the variety of entertaining incidents, and considered the author's good sense and purity of style with admiration and applause.

He informs us, by the mouth of the batchelor Sampson Carrasco, that even before the publication of the second part, twelve thousand copies of the first were already in print, besides a new impression then working off at Antwerp. "The very children, says he, handle it, boys read it, men understand, and old people applaud the performance. It is no sooner laid

laid down by one, than another takes it up, some struggling, and some entreating for a fight of it: in fine, this history is the most delightful and least prejudicial entertainment that ever was seen; for, in the whole book, there is not the least shadow of a dishonourable word, nor one thought unworthy of a good catholic."

Nor was this applause confined to the kingdoms and territories of Spain. The fame of Don Quixote diffused itself through all the civilized countries of Europe; and the work was so much admired in France, that some gentlemen who attended the French ambassador to Madrid, in a conversation with the licentiate Marques Torres, chaplain to the archbishop of Toledo, expressed their surprize that Cervantes was not maintained from the public treasury, as the honour and pride of the Spanish nation.—Nay, this work which was first published at Madrid in the year 1605, had the good fortune to extort the approbation of royalty itself: Philip III. standing in a balcony of his palace and surveying the adjacent country, perceived a student on the bank of the Manzanares, reading a book, and every now and then striking his forehead and bursting out into loud fits of laughter. His majesty having observed his emotions for some time; "That student, said he, is either mad, or reading Don Quixote." Some of the courtiers in attendance had the curiosity to go out and inquire, and actually found the scholar engaged in the adventures of our Manchegan.

As the book was dedicated to the duke de Bejar, we may naturally suppose that nobleman, either by his purse or interest, obtained the author's discharge from prison; for, he congratulates himself upon the protection of such a patron, in certain verses prefixed to the book, and supposed to be written by Urganda the unknown. He afterwards attracted the notice of the count de Lemos, who seems to have been his chief and favourite benefactor; and even enjoyed a small share of the countenance of the cardinal archbishop of Toledo: so that we cannot, with any probability, espouse the opinion of those who believe his Don Quixote was intended as a satire upon the administration of that nobleman. Nor is there the least plausible reason for thinking his aim was to ridicule the conduct of Charles V. whose name he never mentions without expressions of the utmost reverence and regard. Indeed, his own indigence was a more severe satire than any thing he could have invented against the ministry of Philip III. for, tho' their protection kept him from starving, it did not exempt him from the difficulties and mortifications of want; and no  
man



man of taste and humanity can reflect upon his character and circumstances, without being shocked at the barbarous indifference of his patrons. What he obtained was not the offering of liberality and taste, but the scanty alms of compassion : he was not respected as a genius, but relieved as a beggar.

One would hardly imagine that an author could languish in the shade of poverty and contempt, while his works afforded entertainment and delight to whole nations, and even sovereigns were found in the number of his admirers : but, Cervantes had the misfortune to write in the reign of a prince whose disposition was sordid, and whose talents, naturally mean, had received no manner of cultivation ; so that his head was altogether untaught with science, and his heart an utter stranger to the virtues of beneficence. Nor did the liberal arts derive the least encouragement from his ministry, which was ever weak and wavering. The duke de Lerma seems to have been a proud, irresolute, shallow-brained politician, whose whole attention was employed in preserving the good graces of his master ; tho' notwithstanding all his efforts, he still fluctuated between favour and disgrace, and at last was fain to shelter himself under the hat of a cardinal. As for the count de Lemos, who had some share in the administration, he affected to patronize men of genius, tho' he had hardly penetration enough to distinguish merit ; and the little taste he possessed, was so much warped by vanity and self-conceit, that there was no other avenue to his friendship but the road of adulation and panegyric : we need not, therefore, wonder that his bounty was so sparingly bestowed upon Cervantes, whose conscious worth and spirit would not suffer him to practise such servility of prostration.

Rather than stoop so far beneath the dignity of his own character, he resolved to endure the severest stings of fortune, and, for a series of years, wrestled with unconceivable vexation and distress. Even in this low situation, he was not exempted from the ill offices of those who envied his talents and his fame. The bad writers vilified his genius, and censured his morals ; they construed Don Quixote into an impertinent libel, and endeavoured to depreciate his exemplary novels, which were published at Madrid, in the year 1613. This performance is such as might be expected from the invention and elegance of Cervantes, and was accordingly approved by the best judges of his time. Indeed, it must have been a great consolation to him, in the midst of his misfortunes, to see himself celebrated by the choicest wits of Spain ; and, among the rest, by the

renowned Lope de Vega, prince of the Spanish theatre, who, both during the life, and after the death of our author, mentioned him in the most respectful terms of \* admiration.

But, of all the insults to which he was exposed from the malevolence of mankind, nothing provoked him so much, as the outrage he sustained, from the insolence and knavery of an author, who, while he was preparing the second part of *Don Quixote* for the press, in the year 1614, published a performance, intituled, *The second Volume of the sage Hidalgo Don Quixote de la Mancha*, containing his third sally. Composed by the licentiate Alonzo Fernandez de Avellaneda, a native of Tordefillas; dedicated to the alcalde, regidors, and gentlemen of the noble town of Argamesilla, the happy country of *Don Quixote de la Mancha*. This impostor, not contented with having robbed Cervantes of his plan, and, as some people believe, of a good part of his copy, attacked him personally, in his preface, in the most virulent manner; accusing him of envy, malice, peevishness, and rancour; reproaching him with his poverty, and taxing him with having abused his cotemporary writers, particularly Lope de Vega, under the shade of whose reputation this spurious writer takes shelter, pretending to have been lashed, together with that great genius, in some of our author's critical reflexions.

In spite of the disguise he assumed, Cervantes discovered him to be an Arragonian; and in all probability knew his real name, which, however, he did not think proper to transmit to posterity; and, his silence in this particular, was the result either of discretion, or contempt. If he was a person of consequence, as some people suppose, it was undoubtedly prudent in Cervantes to pretend ignorance of his true name and quality; because, under the shadow of that pretence, he could the more securely chastise him for his dulness, scurrility, and presumption: but, if he knew him to be a man of no character or estimation in life, he ought to have deemed him altogether unworthy of his resentment; for, his production was such as could not possibly prejudice our author's interest or reputation. It is altogether void of invention and propriety: the characters of *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* are flattened into the most insipid absurdity; the adventures are unentertaining and improbable; and the style barbarous, swoln, and pedantic.

\* *Laurel de Apollo Selva* 8.

Howsoever Saavedra's fortune might have been affected by this fraudulent anticipation, I am persuaded, from the consideration of his magnanimity, that he would have looked upon the attempt with silent disdain, had the fictitious Avellaneda abstained from personal abuse; but finding himself so injuriously upbraided with crimes which his soul abhorred, he gave a loose to his indignation and ridicule, which appear through the preface and second part of *Don Quixote*, in a variety of animadversions equally witty and severe. Indeed, the genuine continuation, which was published in the year 1615, convinced the world that no other person could complete the plan of the original projector. It was received with universal joy and approbation; and, in a very little time translated into the languages of Italy, France, England, and other countries, where, tho' the knight appeared to disadvantage, he was treated as a noble stranger of superlative merit and distinction.

In the year after the publication of his novels, Cervantes ushered into the world a poem, called, *A Voyage to Parnassus*, dedicated to Don Rodrigo de Tapia, knight of St. Jago. This performance is an ironical satire on the Spanish poets of his time, written in imitation of Cæsar Caporali, who lashed his cotemporaries of Italy under the same title: tho' Saavedra seems to have had also another scope; namely, to complain of the little regard that was payed to his own age and talents. Those who will not allow this piece to be an excellent poem, cannot help owning that it abounds with wit and manly satire; and that nothing could be a more keen reproach upon the taste and patronage of the times, than the dialogue that passes between him and Apollo; to whom, after having made a bold, yet just recapitulation of his own success in writing, he pathetically complains, that he was denied a seat among his brethren; and takes occasion to observe, that rewards were not bestowed according to merit, but in consequence of interest and favour.

He has, upon other occasions, made severe remarks upon the scarcity of patrons among the nobility of Spain, and even aimed the shafts of his satire at the throne itself. In his dedication of the second part of *Don Quixote*, to the count de Lemos, he proceeds in this ironical strain: "But, no person expresses a greater desire of seeing my *Don Quixote*, than the mighty emperor of China, who, about a month ago sent me a letter by an express, desiring, or rather beseeching, me to supply him with a copy of that performance, as he intended to build and endow a college for teaching the Spanish language from my book, and was resolved to make

me rector or principal teacher." I asked if his majesty had sent me any thing towards defraying the charges ; and, when he answered in the negative, " Why then, friend, said I, you may return to China as soon as you please ; for my own part, I am not in a state of health to undertake such a long journey ; besides, I am not only weak in body, but still weaker in purse, and so I am the emperor's most humble servant. In short, emperor for emperor, and monarch for monarch, to take one with the other, and set the hare's head against the goose giblets, there is the noble count de Lemos, at Naples, who, without any rectorships, supports, protects, and favours me to my heart's content."

This facetious paragraph certainly alludes to some unsubstantial promise he had received from the court. At the same time, I cannot help observing, that his gratitude and acknowledgement to the count de Lemos, seem to have greatly exceeded the obligation ; for, at this very time, while he is extolling his generosity, he gives us to understand that his circumstances were extremely indigent.

At the very time of this dedication, the poverty of Cervantes had increased to such a degree of distress, that he was fain to sell eight plays, and as many interludes, to Juan Villaroel, because he had neither means nor credit for printing them at his own expence. These theatrical pieces, which were published at Madrid in the year 1615, tho' counted inferior to many productions of Lope de Vega, have, nevertheless, merit enough to persuade the discerning reader that they would have succeeded in the representation ; but, he was no favourite with the players, who have always arrogated to themselves the prerogative of judging and rejecting the productions of the drama ; and, as they forbore to offer, he disdained to solicit their acceptance. The truth is, he considered actors as the servants of the public, who, tho' intitled to a certain degree of favour and encouragement for the entertainment they afforded, ought ever to demean themselves with modesty and respect for their benefactors ; and he had often professed himself an enemy to the self-sufficiency, insolence, and outrageous behaviour of the king's company, some of whom had been guilty of the most flagrant crimes, and even committed murder with impunity.

It is sometimes in the power of the most inconsiderable wretch to mortify a character of the highest dignity. Cervantes, notwithstanding his contempt of such petty critics, could not help feeling the petulance of a puny player, who presumed to depreciate the talents of this venerable father

ther of the stage. "Some years\* ago, says he, I had recourse again to my old amusement, and, on the supposition that the times were not altered since my name was in some estimation, I composed a few pieces for the stage; but, found no birds in last year's nests: my meaning is, I could find no player who would ask for my performances, tho' the whole company knew they were finished; so that I threw them aside and condemned them to perpetual silence. About this time, a certain bookseller told me he would have purchased my plays, had he not been prevented by an actor, who said that from my prose much might be expected; but, nothing from my verse. I confess, I was not a little chagrined at hearing this declaration; and said to myself, Either I am quite altered or the times are greatly improved, contrary to common observation, by which the past is always preferred to the present. I revised my comedies, together with some interludes which had lain some time in a corner, and I did not think them so wretched, but that they might appeal from the muddy brain of this player, to the clearer perception of other actors less scrupulous and more judicious.—Being quite out of humour, I parted with the copy to a bookseller, who offered me a tolerable price: I took his money, without giving myself any further trouble about the actors, and he printed them as you see. I could wish they were the best in the world, or, at least, possessed of some merit. Gentle reader, thou wilt soon see how they are, and if thou canst find any thing to thy liking, and afterwards shouldst happen to meet with my back-biting actor, desire him, from me, to take care and mend himself; for, I offend no man: as for the plays, thou mayest tell him, they contain no glaring nonsense, no palpable absurdities."

The source of this indifference towards Cervantes, we can easily explain, by observing that Lope de Vega had, by this time, engrossed the theatre, and the favour of the public, to such a degree as ensured success to all his performances; so that the players would not run any risk of miscarriage, in exhibiting the productions of an old neglected veteran, who had neither inclination nor ability to support his theatrical pieces by dint of interest and cabal. Far from being able to raise factions in his favour, he could hardly subsist in the most parsimonious manner, and in all probability would have actually starved, had not the charity of the count de Lemos enabled him barely to breathe.

The last work he finished was a novel, intituled, *The Troubles of Perfiles and Sigismunda*, which, however, he did not live to see in print. This

\* In his preface to his plays.

child of his old age he mentions\* in the warmest terms of paternal affection, preferring it to all the rest of his productions; a compliment which every author pays to the youngest offspring of his genius; for, whatever sentence the world may pronounce, every man thinks he daily improves in experience and understanding; and that in refusing the pre-eminence to his last effort, he would fairly own the decay and degeneracy of his own talents.

We must not, however, impute the encomiums which Cervantes bestows upon his last performance to this fond partiality alone; because the book has indubitable merit, and, as he himself says, may presume to vie with the celebrated romance of Heliodorus† in elegance of diction, entertaining incidents, and fecundity of invention. Before this novel saw the light, our author was seized with a dropsy, which gradually conveyed him to his grave; and nothing could give a more advantageous idea of his character, than the fortitude and good humour which he appears to have maintained to the last moment of his life, overwhelmed as he was with misery, old age, and an incurable distemper. The preface and dedication of his *Perfiles* and *Sigismunda*, contain a journal of his last stage, by which we are enabled to guess at the precise time of his decease. “Loving reader, said he, as two of my friends and myself were coming from the famous town of *Esquivias*—famous, I say, on a thousand accounts; first, for its illustrious families, and, secondly, for its more illustrious wines, &c. I heard somebody galloping after us, with intent, as I imagined, to join our company; and, indeed, he soon justified my conjecture, by calling out to us to ride more softly. We accordingly waited for this stranger, who, riding up to us upon a she ass, appeared to be a grey student; for, he was cloathed in grey, with country buskins such as peasants wear to defend their legs in harvest time, round toed shoes, a sword provided, as it happened, with a tolerable chape, a starched band, and an even number of three thread breeds; for, the truth is, he had but two; and, as his band would every now and then shift to one side, he took incredible pains to adjust it again. “Gentlemen, said he, you are going, belike, to solicit some post or pension at court: his eminence of Toledo must be there, to be sure, or the king, at least, by your making such haste. In good faith, I could hardly overtake you, tho’ my ass hath been more than once applauded for a tolerable ambler.” To this address one of my companions replied, “We were obliged to set on at a good rate,

\* Preface to his novels. Dedication of the last part of *Don Quixote*.

† *The Loves of Theagenes and Chariclea*.

to keep up with that there mettlesome nag, belonging to signor Miguel de Cervantes." Scarce had the student heard my name, when, springing from the back of his ass, while his pannel fell one way, and his wallet another, he ran towards me, and, taking hold of my stirrup, "Aye, aye, cried he, this is the found cripple! the renowned, the merry writer; in a word, the darling of the muses!" In order to make some return to these high compliments, I threw my arms about his neck, so as that he lost his band by the eagerness of my embraces, and told him he was mistaken, like many of my well-wishers. "I am, indeed, Cervantes, said I, but not the darling of the muses, or in any shape deserving of those encomiums you have bestowed: be pleased, therefore, good signor, to remount your beast, and let us travel together like friends the rest of the way." The courteous student took my advice, and as we jogged on softly together, the conversation happening to turn on the subject of my illness, the stranger soon pronounced my doom, by assuring me that my distemper was a dropsy, which all the water of the ocean, although it were not salt, would never be able to quench. "Therefore, signor Cervantes, added the student, you must totally abstain from drink, but, do not forget to eat heartily: and this regimen will effect your recovery without physic." "I have received the same advice from other people, answered I, but I cannot help drinking, as if I had been born to do nothing else but drink. My life is drawing to a period, and by the daily journal of my pulse, which, I find, will have finished its course by next Sunday at farthest, I shall also have finished my career; so that you come in the very nick of time to be acquainted with me, though I shall have no opportunity of shewing how much I am obliged to you for your good will." By this time we had reached the Toledo bridge, where finding we must part, I embraced my student once more, and he having returned the compliment with great cordiality, spurred up his beast, and left me as ill disposed on my horse, as he was ill mounted on his ass; although my pen itched to be writing some humorous description of his equipage: but, adieu my merry friends all; for, I am going to die, and I hope to meet you again in the other world, as happy as heart can wish."

After this adventure, which he so pleasantly relates, nay even in his last moments, he dictated a most affectionate dedication to his patron, the count de Lemos, who was at that time president of the supreme council in Italy. He begins facetiously with a quotation from an old ballad, then proceeds to tell his excellency, that he had received extreme unction, and was on the brink of eternity; yet he wished he could live to see the count's return,

return, and even to finish the Weeks of the garden, and the Second part of Galatea, in which he had made some progress.

This dedication was dated April 19, 1617, and in all probability the author died the very next day, as the ceremony of the unction is never performed until the patient is supposed to be in extremity: certain it is, he did not long survive this period; for, in September, a licence was granted to Donna Catalina de Salazar, widow of Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra, to print the Troubles of Persiles and Sigismunda, a northern history, which was accordingly published at Madrid, and afterwards translated into Italian.

Thus have I collected and related all the material circumstances mentioned by history or tradition, concerning the life of Cervantes, which I shall conclude with the portrait of his person, drawn by his own pen, in the preface to his novels. His visage was sharp and aquiline, his hair of a chestnut colour, his forehead smooth and high, his nose hookish or hawkish, his eye brisk and chearful, his mouth little, his beard originally of a golden hue, his upper-lip furnished with large mustachios, his complexion fair, his stature of the middling size: and he tells us, moreover, that he was thick in the shoulders, and not very light of foot.

In a word, Cervantes, whether considered as a writer or a man, will be found worthy of universal approbation and esteem; as we cannot help applauding that fortitude and courage which no difficulty could disturb, and no danger dismay; while we admire that delightful stream of humour and invention, which flowed so plenteous and so pure, surmounting all the mounds of malice and adversity.





**T**HE Translator's aim, in this undertaking, was to maintain that ludicrous solemnity and self-importance by which the inimitable Cervantes has distinguished the character of Don Quixote, without raising him to the insipid rank of a dry philosopher, or debasing him to the melancholy circumstances and unentertaining caprice of an ordinary madman; and to preserve the native humour of Sancho Panza, from degenerating into mere proverbial phlegm, or affected buffoonry.

He has endeavoured to retain the spirit and ideas, without servilely adhering to the literal expression, of the original; from which, however, he has not so far deviated, as to destroy that formality of idiom, so peculiar to the Spaniards, and so essential to the character of the work.

The satire and propriety of many allusions, which had been lost in the change of customs and lapse of time, will be restored in explanatory notes; and the whole conducted with that care and circumspection, which ought to be exerted by every author, who, in attempting to improve upon a task already performed, subjects himself to the most invidious comparison.

Whatever may be the fate of the performance, he cannot charge himself with carelessness or precipitation; for it was begun, and the greatest part of it actually finished, four years ago; and he has been for some time employed in revising and correcting it for the press.





# P R E F A C E

T O T H E

R E A D E R.

**I**DLE reader, without an oath thou mayest believe, that I wish this book, as the child of my understanding, were the most beautiful, sprightly and discreet production that ever was conceived. But, it was not in my power to contravene the order of nature, in consequence of which, every creature procreates its own resemblance: what therefore could be engendered in my barren, ill-cultivated genius, but a dry, meagre offspring, wayward, capricious and full of whimsical notions peculiar to his own imagination, as if produced in a prison, which is the seat of inconvenience, and the habitation of every dismal \* sound. Quiet, solitude, pleasant fields, serene weather, purling streams, and tranquillity of mind, contribute so much to the fecundity even of the most barren genius, that it will bring forth productions so fair as to awaken the admiration and delight of mankind.

A man who is so unfortunate as to have an ugly child, destitute of every grace and favourable endowment, may be so hood-winked by paternal tenderness, that he cannot perceive his defects; but, on the contrary, looks upon every blemish as a beauty, and recounts to his friends every instance of his folly as a sample of his wit: but I, who, tho' seemingly the parent, am no other than the step-father of Don Quixote, will not fail with the stream of custom, nor like some others, supplicate the gentle reader, with the tears in my eyes, to pardon or conceal the faults which thou mayest spy in this production. Thou art neither its father nor kinsman; hast thy own soul in thy own body, and a will as free as the finest; thou art in thy own house, of which I hold thee as absolute master as the king of his revenue; and thou knowest the common saying, Under my cloak the king is a joke. These considerations free and exempt thee from all man-

\* This is a strong presumption, that the first part of Don Quixote was actually written in a jail.

ner of restraint and obligation; so that thou mayest fully and frankly declare thy opinion of this history, without fear of calumny for thy censure, and without hope of recompense for thy approbation.

I wished only to present thee with the performance, clean, neat and naked, without the ornament of a preface, and unincumbered with an innumerable catalogue of such sonnets, epigrams and commendatory verses, as are generally prefixed to the productions of the present age; for, I can assure thee, that although the composition of the book hath cost me some trouble, I have found more difficulty in writing this preface, which is now under thy inspection: divers and sundry times did I seize the pen, and as often laid it aside, for want of knowing what to say; and during this uneasy state of suspense, while I was one day ruminating on the subject, with the paper before me, the quill behind my ear, my elbow fixed on the table, and my cheek leaning on my hand; a friend of mine, who possesses a great fund of humour, and an excellent understanding, suddenly entered the apartment, and finding me in this musing posture, asked the cause of my being so contemplative. As I had no occasion to conceal the nature of my perplexity, I told him I was studying a preface for the history of Don Quixote; a task which I found so difficult, that I was resolved to desist, and even suppress the adventures of such a noble cavalier: for, you may easily suppose how much I must be confounded at the animadversions of that antient lawgiver the vulgar, when it shall see me, after so many years that I have slept in silence and oblivion, produce, in my old age, a performance as dry as a rush, barren of invention, meagre in stile, beggarly in conceit, and utterly destitute of wit and erudition; without quotations in the margin, or annotations at the end; as we see in other books, let them be never so fabulous and profane: indeed they are generally so stuffed with apothegms from Aristotle, Plato, and the whole body of philosophers, that they excite the admiration of the readers, who look upon such authors as men of unbounded knowledge, eloquence and erudition. When they bring a citation from the holy scripture, one would take them for so many St. Thomas's, and other doctors of the church; herein observing such ingenious decorum, that in one line they will represent a frantic lover, and in the very next begin with a godly sermon, from which the christian readers, and even the hearers receive much comfort and edification. Now, my book must appear without all these advantages; for, I can neither quote in the margin, nor note in the end: nor do I know what authors I have imitated, that I may, like the rest of my brethren, prefix them to the work in alphabetical order, beginning

ginning with Aristotle, and ending in Xenophon, Zoilus or Zeuxis, though one was a back-biter, and the other a painter. My history must likewise be published without poems at the beginning, at least without sonnets written by dukes, marquisses, counts, bishops, ladies, and celebrated poets: although, should I make the demand, I know two or three good natured friends, who would oblige me with such verses as should not be equalled by the most famous poetry in Spain.

In a word, my good friend, said I, signor Don Quixote shall be buried in the archives of la Mancha, until heaven shall provide some person to adorn him with those decorations he seems to want; for, I find myself altogether unequal to the task, through insufficiency and want of learning; and because I am naturally too bashful and indolent, to go in quest of authors to say, what I myself can say as well without their assistance. Hence arose my thoughtfulness and meditation, which you will not wonder at, now that you have heard the cause. My friend having listened attentively to my remonstrance, slapped his forehead with the palm of his hand, and bursting into a loud laugh: "Fore God! brother, said he, I am now undeceived of an error, in which I have lived during the whole term of our acquaintance; for, I always looked upon you as a person of prudence and discretion; but now, I see, you are as far from that character, as heaven is distant from the earth. What! is it possible that such a trifling inconvenience, so easily remedied, should have power to mortify and perplex a genius like yours, brought to such maturity, and so well calculated to demolish and surmount much greater difficulties? in good faith this does not proceed from want of ability, but from excessive indolence, that impedes the exercise of reason. If you would be convinced of the truth of what I alledge, give me the hearing, and, in the twinkling of an eye, all your difficulties shall vanish, and a remedy be prescribed for all those defects which, you say, perplex your understanding, and deter you from ushering to the light, your history of the renowned Don Quixote, the luminary and sole mirror of knight-errantry." Hearing this declaration, I desired he would tell me in what manner he proposed to fill up the vacuity of my apprehension, to diffuse light, and reduce to order the chaos of my confusion; and he replied, "Your first objection, namely the want of sonnets, epigrams and commendatory verses from persons of rank and gravity, may be obviated by your taking the trouble to compose them yourself, and then you may christen them by any name you shall think proper to choose, fathering them upon Prester John of the Indies, or the emperor of Trebisond, who, I am well informed, were very famous poets;

poets; and even should this intelligence be untrue, and a few pedants and batchelors of arts should back-bite and grumble at your conduct, you need not value them three farthings; for, although they convict you of a lie, they cannot cut off the hand that wrote it\*.

With regard to the practice of quoting, in the margin, such books and authors as have furnished you with sentences and sayings for the embellishment of your history, you have nothing to do, but, to season the work with some Latin maxims, which your own memory will suggest, or a little industry in searching, easily obtain: for example, in treating of freedom and captivity, you may say, “Non bene pro toto libertas venditur auro;” and quote Horace, or whom you please, in the margin. If the power of death happens to be your subject, you have at hand, “Pallida mors æquo pulsat pede pauperum tabernas regumque turrets.” And in expatiating upon that love and friendship which God commands us to entertain even for our enemies, you may have recourse to the holy scripture, though you should have never so little curiosity, and say, in the very words of God himself, “Ego autem dico vobis, diligite inimicos vestros.” In explaining the nature of malevolence, you may again extract from the Gospel, “De corde exeunt cogitationes malæ.” And the instability of friends may be aptly illustrated by this distich of Cato, “Donec eris felix, multos numerabis amicos; tempora si fuerint nubila, solus eris.” By these, and other such scraps of Latin, you may pass for an able grammarian; a character of no small honour and advantage in these days. And as to the annotations at the end of the book, you may safely furnish them in this manner: when you chance to write about giants, be sure to mention Goliath, and this name alone, which costs you nothing, will afford a grand annotation, couched in these words: “The giant Goliath, or Goliath, was a Philistine, whom the shepherd David slew with a stone from a sling, in the valley of Terebinthus, as it is written in such a chapter of the book of Kings.”

If you have a mind to display your erudition and knowledge of cosmography, take an opportunity to introduce the river Tagus into your history, and this will supply you with another famous annotation, thus expressed: “The river Tagus, so called from a king of Spain, takes its rise in such a place, and is lost in the sea, after having kissed the walls of the famous city of Lisbon; and is said to have golden sands, &c.” If you treat of robbers, I will relate the story of Cacus, which I have by rote. If of harlots, the bishop of Mondoneda will lend you a Lamia, a

\* Alluding to the loss of his hand in the battle of Lepanto.

Lais, and a Flora, and such a note will greatly redound to your credit. When you write of cruelty, Ovid will surrender his Medea. When you mention wizzards and enchanters, you will find a Calypso in Homer, and a Circe in Virgil. If you have occasion to speak of valiant captains, Julius Cæsar stands ready drawn in his own Commentaries; and from Plutarch you may extract a thousand Alexanders. If your theme be love, and you have but two ounces of the Tuscan tongue, you will light upon Leon Hebreo, who will fill up the measure of your desire: and if you do not choose to travel into foreign countries, you have at home Fonseca's treatise, On the love of God, in which all that you, or the most ingenious critic, can desire, is fully decyphered and discussed. In a word, there is nothing more to be done, than to procure a number of these names, and hint at their particular stories in your text; and leave to me the task of making annotations and quotations, with which I'll engage, on pain of death, to fill up all the margins, besides four whole sheets at the end of the book. Let us now proceed to the citation of authors, so frequent in other books, and so little used in your performance: the remedy is obvious and easy: take the trouble to find a book that quotes the whole tribe alphabetically, as you observed, from Alpha to Omega, and transfer them into your book; and though the absurdity should appear never so glaring, as there is no necessity for using such names, it will signify nothing. Nay, perhaps, some reader will be weak enough to believe you have actually availed yourself of all those authors, in the simple and sincere history you have composed; and if such a large catalogue of writers should answer no other purpose, it may serve at first sight to give some authority to the production: nor will any person take the trouble to examine, whether you have or have not followed those originals, because he can reap no benefit from his labour. But, if I am not mistaken, your book needs none of those embellishments in which you say it is defective; for, it is one continued satire upon books of chivalry; a subject which Aristotle never investigated, St. Basil never mentioned, and Cicero never explained. The punctuality of truth, and the observations of astrology, fall not within the fabulous relation of our adventures; to the description of which, neither the proportions of geometry, nor the confirmation of rhetorical arguments, are of the least importance; nor hath it any connection with preaching, or mingling divine truths with human imagination; a mixture which no christian's fancy should conceive. It only seeks to avail itself of imitation, and the more perfect this is, the more entertaining the book will be: now, as your sole aim in writing, is to invalidate the authority, and ridicule the absurdity of those books of chivalry,  
which

which have, as it were, fascinated the eyes and judgment of the world, and in particular of the vulgar, you have no occasion to go a begging maxims from philosophers, exhortations from holy writ, fables from poets, speeches from orators, or miracles from saints; your business is, with plain, significant, well chosen and elegant words, to render your periods sonorous, and your style entertaining; to give spirit and expression to all your descriptions, and communicate your ideas without obscurity and confusion. You must endeavour to write in such a manner as to convert melancholy into mirth, increase good humour, entertain the ignorant, excite the admiration of the learned, escape the contempt of gravity, and attract applause from persons of ingenuity and taste. Finally, let your aim be levelled against that ill-founded bulwark of idle books of chivalry, abhorred by many, but applauded by more, which if you can batter down, you will have achieved no inconsiderable exploit."

I listened to my friend's advice in profound silence, and his remarks made such impression upon my mind, that I admitted them without hesitation or dispute, and resolved that they should appear instead of a preface. Thou wilt, therefore, gentle reader, perceive his discretion, and my good luck in finding such a counsellor in such an emergency; nor wilt thou be sorry to receive, thus genuine and undisguised, the history of the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, who, in the opinion of all the people that live in the district of Montiel, was the most virtuous and valiant knight who had appeared for many years in that neighbourhood. I shall not pretend to enhance the merit of having introduced thee to such a famous and honourable cavalier; but I expect thanks for having made thee acquainted with Sancho Panza, in whom I think are united all the squirish graces, which we find scattered through the whole tribe of vain books written on the subject of chivalry. So, praying that God will give thee health, without forgetting such an humble creature as me, I bid thee heartily farewell.



THE  
LIFE and ATCHIEVEMENTS

Of the SAGE and VALIANT

DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

PART I. BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Of the quality and amusements of the renowned DON QUIXOTE  
DE LA MANCHA.

**I**N a certain corner of la Mancha, the name of which I do not choose to remember, there lately lived one of those country gentlemen, who adorn their halls with a rusty lance and worm-eaten target, and ride forth on the skeleton of a horse, to course with a sort of a starved greyhound.

Three fourths of his income were scarce sufficient to afford a dish of hodge-podge, in which the mutton bore \* no proportion to the beef, for dinner; a plate of falmagundy, commonly at supper †; gripes and grumbings ‡ on saturdays, lentils on fridays, and the addition of a pigeon or some

\* Mutton in Spain is counted greatly preferable to beef.  
† *Salpicon*, which is the word in the original, is no other than cold beef sliced, and eaten with oil, vinegar and pepper.  
‡ Gripes and grumbings, in Spanish *Duelos y Quebrantos*: the true meaning of which, the former translators have been at great pains to investigate, as the importance of the subject (no doubt) required. But their labours have, unhappily, ended in nothing else than conjectures, which for the entertainment and instruction of our readers, we beg leave to repeat. One interprets the phrase into collops and eggs, "being" faith he, "a very sorry dish." In this decision, however, he is contradicted by another commentator, who affirms, "it is a mess too good to mortify withal"; neither can this virtuoso agree with a late editor, who translates the passage in question, into an amlet; but takes occasion to fall out with Boyer for his description of that dish, which he most sagaciously understands to be a "bacon froize," or "rather fryze, from it's being fried, from *frit* in French;" and concludes with this judicious query,

such thing on the Lord's-day. The remaining part of his revenue was consumed in the purchase of a fine black suit, with velvet breeches and slippers of the same, for holy-days; and a coat of home-spun, which he wore in honour of his country, during the rest of the week.

He maintained a female house-keeper turned of forty, a niece of about half that age, and a trusty young fellow, fit for field and market, who could turn his hand to any thing, either to saddle the horse or handle the hough\*.

Our squire, who bordered upon fifty, was of a tough constitution, extremely meagre, and hard-featured, an early riser, and in point of exercise, another Nimrod†. He is said to have gone by the name of Quixada, or Quésada, (for in this particular, the authors who mention that circumstance, disagree) though from the most probable conjectures, we may conclude, that he was called by the significant name of Quixada‡; but this is of small importance to the history, in the course of which it will be sufficient if we swerve not farther from the truth.

Be it known, therefore, that this said honest gentleman at his leisure hours, which engrossed the greatest part of the year, addicted himself to the reading of books of chivalry, which he perused with such rapture and application, that he not only forgot the pleasures of the chace, but also utterly neglected the management of his estate: nay to such a pass did his curiosity and madness, in this particular, drive him, that he sold many good acres of Terra Firma, to purchase books of knight-errantry, with which he furnished his library to the utmost of his power; but, none of them pleased him so much, as those that were written by the famous Feliciano de Sylva, whom he admired as the pearl of all authors, for the brilliancy of his prose, and the beautiful perplexity of his expression. How was he transported, when he read those amorous complaints, and doughty challenges, that so often occur in his works.

“The reason of the unreasonable usage my reason has met with, so unreasons my reason, that I have reason to complain of your beauty”: and how did he enjoy the following flower of composition! “The high Heaven

\* after all these learned disquisitions, who knows but the author means a dish of nichils? If this was his meaning indeed, surely we may venture to conclude, that fasting was very expensive in la Mancha; for the author mentions the *Duelos y Quebrantos*, among those articles that consumed three fourths of the knight's income.

Having considered this momentous affair with all the deliberation it deserves, we in our turn present the reader, with cucumbers, greens and pease-porridge, as the fruit of our industrious researches; being thereunto determined, by the literal signification of the text, which is not “grumbings and groanings,” as the last mentioned ingenious annotator seems to think; but rather pains and breakings; and evidently points at such eatables as generate and expel wind; qualities (as every body knows) eminently inherent in those vegetables we have mentioned as our hero's saturday's repast.

▪ *Podadera* literally signifies a pruning hook.

† In the original, a lover of hunting.

‡ *Quixadas* signifies jaws, of which our knight had an extraordinary provision.

of your divinity, which with stars divinely fortifies your beauty, and renders you meritorious of that merit, which by your highness is merited!"

The poor gentleman lost his senses, in poring over, and attempting to discover the meaning of these and other such rhapsodies, which Aristotle himself would not be able to unravel, were he to rise from the dead for that purpose only. He could not comprehend the probability of those direful wounds, given and received by Don Bellianis, whose face, and whole carcase, must have remained quite covered with marks and scars, even allowing him to have been cured by the most expert surgeons of the age in which he lived.

He, notwithstanding, bestowed great commendations on the author, who concludes his book with the promise of finishing that interminable adventure; and was more than once inclined to seize the quill, with a view of performing what was left undone; nay, he would have actually accomplished the affair, and published it accordingly, had not reflexions of greater moment employed his imagination, and diverted him from the execution of that design.

Divers and obstinate were the disputes he maintained against the parson of the parish, (a man of some learning, who had taken his degrees at Sigüenza \*,) on that puzzling question, whether Palmerin of England, or Amadis de Gaul, was the most illustrious knight-errant: but master Nicholas, who acted as barber to the village, affirmed, that none of them equalled the Knight of the Sun, or indeed could be compared to him in any degree, except Don Galaor, brother of Amadis de Gaul; for his disposition was adapted to all emergencies; he was neither such a precise, nor such a puling coxcomb as his brother; and in point of valour, his equal at least.

So eager and intangled was our Hidalgo † in this kind of history, that he would often read from morning to night, and from night to morning again, without interruption; till at last, the moisture of his brain being quite exhausted with indefatigable watching and study, he fairly lost his wits: all that he had read of quarrels, enchantments, battles, challenges, wounds, tortures, amorous complaints, and other improbable conceits, took full possession of his fancy; and he believed all those romantic exploits so implicitly, that in his opinion, the holy scripture was not more true. He observed that Cid Ruydias was an excellent knight; but not equal to the Lord of the Flaming-sword, who with one back stroke had cut two fierce and monstrous giants through the middle. He had still a

\* *Sigüenza*, a town situated on the banks of the Henarés, in New Castile; in which there is a small university.

† *Hidalgo*, has much the same application in Spain, as *Squire* in England; though it literally signifies the son of something, in contradistinction to those who are the sons of nothing.

better opinion of Bernardo del Carpio, who, at the battle of Roncevalles, put the enchanter Orlando to death, by the same means that Hercules used, when he strangled the earth-born Anteon. Neither was he silent in the praise of Morgante, who, though of that gigantic race, which is noted for insolence and incivility, was perfectly affable and well-bred. But his chief favourite was Reynaldo of Montalvan, whom he hugely admired for his prowess, in sallying from his castle to rob travellers; and above all things, for his dexterity in stealing that idol of the impostor Mahomet, which, according to the history, was of solid gold. For an opportunity of pummelling the traitor \* Galalon, he would willingly have given his house-keeper, body and soul, nay, and his niece into the bargain. In short, his understanding being quite perverted, he was seized with the strangest whim that ever entered the brain of a madman. This was no other, than a full persuasion, that it was highly expedient and necessary, not only for his own honour, but also for the good of the public, that he should profess knight-errantry, and ride through the world in arms, to seek adventures, and conform in all points to the practice of those itinerant heroes, whose exploits he had read; redressing all manner of grievances, and courting all occasions of exposing himself to such dangers, as in the event would entitle him to everlasting renown. This poor lunatic looked upon himself already as good as seated, by his own single valour, on the throne of Trebisond; and intoxicated with these agreeable vapours of his unaccountable folly, resolved to put his design in practice forthwith.

In the first place, he cleaned an old suit of armour, which had belonged to some of his ancestors, and which he found in his garret, where it had lain for several ages, quite covered over with mouldiness and rust: but having scoured and put it to rights, as well as he could, he perceived, that instead of a compleat helmet, there was only a simple head-piece without a beaver. This unlucky defect, however, his industry supplied by a vizor, which he made of paste-board, and fixed so artificially to the morrion, that it looked like an entire helmet. True it is, that in order to try if it was strong enough to risk his jaws in, he unsheathed his sword, and bestowed upon it two hearty strokes, the first of which in a twinkling, undid his whole week's labour: he did not at all approve of the facility with which he hewed it in pieces, and therefore, to secure himself from any such danger for the future, went to work anew, and faced it with a plate of iron, in such a manner, as that he remained satisfied of its strength, without putting it to a second trial, and looked upon it as a most finished piece of armour.

\* Galalon is said to have betrayed the Spanish army at Ronsevalles.

He next visited his horse, which (though he had more corners than a † rial, being as lean as Gonela's, that "tantum pellis et ossa fuit") nevertheless, in his eye, appeared infinitely preferable to Alexander's Bucephalus, or the Cid's Babieca. Four days he consumed, in inventing a name for this remarkable steed; suggesting to himself, what an impropriety it would be, if an horse of his qualities belonging to such a renowned knight, should go without some sounding and significant appellation: he therefore resolved to accommodate him with one that should not only declare his past, but also his present capacity; for he thought it but reasonable, that since his master had altered his condition, he should also change his name, and invest him with some sublime and sonorous epithet, suitable to the new order and employment he professed: accordingly, after having chosen, rejected, amended, tortured and revolved a world of names, in his imagination, he fixed upon Rozinante, † an appellation, in his opinion, lofty, sonorous and expressive, not only of his former, but likewise of his present situation, which intitled him to the preference over all other horses under the sun. Having thus denominated his horse, so much to his own satisfaction, he was desirous of doing himself the like justice, and after eight days study, actually assumed the title of Don Quixote: from whence, as hath been observed, the authors of this authentic history, concluded, that his former name must have been Quixada, and not Quefada, as others are pleased to affirm: but recollecting, that the valiant Amadis, not satisfied with that simple appellation, added to it, that of his country, and in order to dignify the place of his nativity, called himself Amadis de Gaul; he resolved, like a worthy knight, to follow such an illustrious example, and assume the name of Don Quixote de la Mancha; which, in his opinion, fully expressed his generation, and at the same time, reflected infinite honour on his fortunate country.

Accordingly his armour being scoured, his beaver fitted to his head-piece, his steed accommodated with a name, and his own dignified with these additions, he reflected, that nothing else was wanting, but a lady to inspire him with love; for a knight-errant without a mistress, would be like a tree destitute of leaves and fruit, or a body without a soul. "If," said he, "for my sins, or rather for my honour, I should engage with some giant, an adventure common in knight-errantry, and overthrow him in the field, by cleaving him in twain, or in short, disarm and sub-

† This is a joke upon the knight's steed, which was so meagre, that his bones stuck out like the corners of a Spanish rial, a coin of a very irregular shape, not unlike the figure in geometry, called *Trapezium*.

† *Rozinante* implies that which was formerly an horse, though the *ante* seems to have been intended by the knight as a badge of distinction, by which he was ranked before all other horses.

due him ; will it not be highly proper, that I should have a mistress, to whom I may send my conquered foe, who coming into the presence of the charming fair, will fall upon his knees, and say, in an humble and submissive tone : “ Incomparable princess, I am the giant Carculiambro, lord of the island Malindrania, who being vanquished in single combat by the invincible knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, am commanded by him to present myself before your beauty, that I may be disposed of, according to the pleasure of your highness ? ” How did the heart of our worthy knight dance with joy, when he uttered this address ; and still more, when he found a lady worthy of his affection ! This, they say, was an hale, buxom country wench, called Aldonza Lorenzo, who lived in the neighbourhood, and with whom he had formerly been in love ; though by all accounts, she never knew, nor gave herself the least concern about the matter. Her he looked upon as one qualified, in all respects, to be the queen of his inclinations ; and putting his invention again to the rack, for a name that should bear some affinity with her own, and at the same time become a princess or lady of quality, he determined to call her Dulcinea del Toboso, she being a native of that place, a name, in his opinion, musical, romantic and expressive, like the rest which he had appropriated to himself and his concerns.

## C H A P. II.

Of the sage DON QUIXOTE's first fally from his own Habitation.

THESE preparations being made, he could no longer resist the desire of executing his design; reflecting with impatience, on the injury his delay occasioned in the world, where there was abundance of grievances to be redressed, wrongs to be rectified, errors amended, abuses to be reformed, and doubts to be removed; he therefore, without communicating his intention to any body, or being seen by a living soul, one morning before day, in the scorching month of July, put on his armour, mounted Rozinante, buckled his ill-contrived helmet, braced his target, seized his lance, and, thro' the back-door of his yard, sallied into the fields, in a rapture of joy, occasioned by this easy and successful beginning of his admirable undertaking: but, scarce was he clear of the village, when he was assaulted by such a terrible objection, as had well nigh induced our hero to abandon his enterprize directly: for, he recollected that he had never been knighted; and therefore, according to the laws of chivalry, he neither could nor ought to enter the lists with any antagonist of that degree; nay, even granting he had received that mark of distinction, it was his duty to wear white armour, like a new knight, without any device in his shield, until such time as his valour should intitle him to that honour.\*

These cogitations made him waver a little in his plan; but his madness prevailing over every other consideration, suggested, that he might be dubbed by the first person he should meet, after the example of many others who had fallen upon the same expedient; as he had read in those mischievous books which had disordered his imagination †. With respect to the white armour, he proposed, with the first opportunity, to scour his own, until it should be fairer than ermine; and having satisfied his conscience in this manner, he pursued his design, without following any other road than that which his horse was pleased to choose; being persuaded, that in so doing, he manifested the true spirit of adventure. Thus proceeded our flaming adventurer, while he uttered the following soliloquy.

“Doubtless, in future ages, when the true history of my famed exploits shall come to light, the sage author, when he recounts my first and early fally, will express himself in this manner: “Scarce had ruddy Phœbus, o'er this wide and spacious earth, display'd the golden threads of his resurgent hair; and

\* According to the ancient rules of chivalry, no man was intitled to the rank and degree of knight-hood, until he had been in actual battle, and taken a prisoner with his own hand.

† It was common for one knight to dub another. Francis I. king of France was knighted, at his own desire, by the chevalier Bayard, who was looked upon as the flower of chivalry.

scarce the little painted warblers with their forky tongues, in soft, mellifluous harmony, had hail'd the approach of rosy-wing'd Aurora, who stealing from her jealous husband's couch, thro' the balconies and aerial gates of Mancha's bright horizon, stood confes'd to wondering mortals; when lo! the illustrious knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, up-springing from the lazy down, bestrode fam'd Rozinante his unrival'd steed! and thro' Montiel's ancient, well known field (which was really the case) pursu'd his way." Then he added, " O fortunate age! O happy times! in which shall be made public my incomparable atchievements, worthy to be ingraved in brass, on marble sculptured, and in painting shewn, as great examples to futurity! and O! thou sage enchanter, whosoever thou may'st be, doom'd to record the wondrous story! forget not, I beseech thee, my trusty Rozinante, the firm companion of my various fate!" Then turning his horse, he exclaimed, as if he had been actually in love, " O Dulcinea! sovereign princess of this captive heart, what dire affliction hast thou made me suffer, thus banished from thy presence with reproach, and fettered by thy rigorous command, not to appear again before thy beauteous face! Deign princess, to remember this thy faithful slave, who now endures such misery for love of thee!" These and other such rhapsodies he strung together; imitating, as much as in him lay, the stile of those ridiculous books which he had read; and jogged along, in spite of the sun which beam'd upon him so intensely hot, that surely his brains, if any had remained, would have been fryed in his skull: that whole day, did he travel, without encountering any thing worth mentioning; a circumstance that grieved him sorely, for he had expected to find some object on which he could try the prowess of his valiant arm\*.

Some authors say his first adventure was that of the pass of Lapice, but others affirm, that the Wind-mills had the maidenhead of his valour: all that I can aver of the matter, in consequence of what I found recorded in the annals of la Mancha, is, that having travelled the whole day, his horse and he, about twilight, found themselves excessively wearied and half dead with hunger; and that looking around for some castle or sheep cot, in which he might allay the cravings of nature, by repose and refreshment; he descried not far from the road, an inn, which he looked upon as the star that would guide him to the porch, if not the palace, of his redemption: in this hope, he put spurs to his horse, and just in the twilight reached the gate, where, at that time, there happened to be two ladies of the game, who being on their journey to Seville, with the carriers, had chanced to take up their night's lodging in this place.

\* He might have imitated the young knight described in Penceforest, who having been dubbed by king Alexander, rode into a wood, and attacked the trees with such fury and address, that the king and his whole court were convinced of his prowess and dexterity.



As our hero's imagination converted whatsoever he saw, heard or considered, into something of which he had read in books of chivalry; he no sooner perceived the inn, than his fancy represented it, as a stately castle with its four towers and pinnacles of shining silver, accommodated with a draw-bridge, deep moat, and all other conveniencies, that are described as belonging to buildings of that kind.

When he was within a small distance of this inn, which to him seemed a castle, he drew bridle, and stopt Rozinante, in hope that some dwarf would appear upon the battlements, and signify his arrival by sound of trumpet: but, as this ceremony was not performed so soon as he expected, and his steed expressed great eagerness to be in the stable; he rode up to the gate, and observing the battered wenchs before mentioned, mistook them for two beautiful maidens, or agreeable ladies, enjoying the cool breeze at the castle-gate. At that instant, a swine-herd, who, in a field hard by, was tending a drove of hogs, (with leave be it spoken) chanced to blow his horn, in order to collect his scattered subjects: immediately the knight's expectation was fulfilled, and concluding that now the dwarf had given the signal of his approach, he rode towards the inn with infinite satisfaction. The ladies no sooner perceived such a strange figure, armed with lance and target, than they were seized with consternation, and ran affrighted to the gate; but Don Quixote, guessing their terror by their flight, lifted up his paste-board vizor, and discovering his meagre lanthorn jaws besmeared with dust, addressed them thus, with gentle voice and courteous demeanour: "Fly me not, ladies, nor dread the least affront; for, it belongs not to the order of knighthood, which I profess, to injure any mortal, much less such high-born damsels as your appearance declares you to be."

The wenchs, who stared at him with all their curiosity, in order to discover his face, which the sorry beaver concealed, hearing themselves stiled HIGH-BORN DAMSELS, an epithet so foreign to their profession, could contain themselves no longer, but burst out into such a fit of laughing, that Don Quixote being offended, rebuked them in these words; "Nothing is more commendable in beautiful women than modesty; and nothing more ridiculous than laughter proceeding from a slight cause: but this I mention not as a reproach, by which I may incur your indignation; on the contrary, my intention is only to do you service."

This address, which was wholly unintelligible to the ladies, together with the ludicrous appearance of him who pronounced it, increased their mirth, which kindled the knight's anger, and he began to wax wroth, when luckily the landlord interposed. This innkeeper, who, by reason of his unwieldy belly, was of a pacific disposition, no sooner beheld the prepos-

rous figure of our hero, equipped with such ill-suited accoutrements as his bridle, lance, target and corlet composed, than he was seized with an inclination to join the nymphs in their unseasonable merriment; but, being justly afraid of incensing the owner of such unaccountable furniture, he resolved to behave civilly, and accordingly accosted him in these words: "Sir knight, if your worship wants lodging, you may be accommodated in this inn with every thing in great abundance, except a bed; for at present we have not one unengaged." Don Quixote perceiving the humility of the governor of the castle, for such he supposed the landlord to be, answered, "For me, signior Castellano, any thing will suffice; my dress is armour, battles my repose, &c." Mine host imagining that he called him Castellano\*, because he looked like a hypocritical rogue; tho' indeed he was an Andalusian, born on the coast of St. Lucar, as great a thief as Cacus, and more mischievous than a collegian or a page, replied with a sneer, "If that be the case, I suppose your worship's couch is no other than the flinty rock, and your sleep perpetual waking; so that you may alight with the comfortable assurance, that you will find in this mansion, continual opportunities of defying sleep, not only for one night, but for a whole year, if you please to try the experiment." With these words, he laid hold of the stirrup of Don Quixote, who dismounting with infinite pain and difficulty, occasioned by his having travelled all day long without any refreshment, bad the landlord take special care of his steed; for, he observed, a better piece of horse-flesh had never broke bread.

The innkeeper, tho' with all his penetration he could not discern any qualities in Rozinante sufficient to justify one half of what was said in his praise, led him civilly into the stable, and having done the honours of the place, returned to receive the commands of his other guest, whom he found in the hands of the high-born damsels, who having by this time reconciled themselves to him, were busied in taking off his armour: they had already disincumbered him of his back and breast-plates, but could fall upon no method of disengaging his head and neck from his ill-contriv'd helmet and gorget, which were fast tied with green ribbons, the gordian knots of which no human hands could loose; and he would, by no means, allow them to be cut; so that he remained all night, armed from the throat upwards, and afforded as odd and comical a spectacle as ever was seen†. While these kind harridans, whom he supposed to be the constable's lady and daughter, were

\* *Sano de Castilla*, signifies a crafty knave.

† This circumstance of the ladies disarming the knight, is exactly conformable to the practice of chivalry: tho' his refusing to lay aside his helmet, is no great argument of his courtesy or attachment to the laws and customs of his profession; for, among knights, it was looked upon as an indispensable mark of respect, to appear without the helmet in church, and in presence of ladies, or respectable personages, and indeed, in those iron times, this was considered as a necessary mark and proof of peaceable intention; hence we derive the custom of uncovering the head in salutation.

employed

employed in this hospitable office, he said to them with a smile of inconceivable pleasure, " Never was knight so honoured by the service of ladies, as Don Quixote when he first ushered himself into the world; ladies ministered unto him, and princesses took charge of his Rozinante. O Rozinante! (for that, fair ladies, is the name of my steed, and Don Quixote de la Mancha the appellation of his master) not that I intended to have disclosed myself until the deeds atchieved in your service should have made me known; but, in order to accommodate my present situation to that venerable romance of Sir Lancelot, I am obliged to discover my name a little prematurely: yet, the time will come, when your highnesses shall command, and I will obey, and the valour of this arm testify the desire I feel of being your slave."

The charmers, whom nature never designed to expose to such extraordinary compliments, answered not a syllable, but asked if he chose to have any thing for supper? To which kind question Don Quixote replied, that from the information of his bowels, he believed nothing eatable could come amiss. As it was unluckily a meagre day, the inn afforded no other fare than some bundles of that fish which is called Abadexo in Castile, Baccalao in Andalusia, Curadillo in some parts of Spain, and Truchuela in others: so that they enquired if his worship could eat Truchuela; for there was no other fish to be had. " A number of troutlings, answered the knight, will please me as much as one trout: for, in my opinion, eight single rials are equivalent to one piece of eight; besides, those troutlings may be as much preferable to trouts, as veal is to beef, or lamb to mutton: be that as it will, let the fish be immediately produced; for, the toil and burthen of arms are not to be borne without satisfying the cravings of the stomach." A table being therefore covered at the inn-door, for the benefit of the cool air, mine host brought out a cut of Baccalao, wretchedly watered, and villanously cooked, with a loaf as black and greasy as his guest's own armour: but, his manner of eating afforded infinite subject for mirth; for, his head being inclosed in his helmet, and the beaver lifted up, his own hands could be of no service in reaching the food to his mouth; and therefore, one of the ladies undertook to perform that office; but, they found it impossible to convey drink in the same manner; and our hero must have made an uncomfortable meal, if the landlord had not bored a cane, and putting one end of it in his mouth, poured some wine into the other; an operation he endured with patience, rather than suffer the ribbons of his helmet to be destroyed.

While they were thus employed, a sow-gelder happened to arrive at the inn, and winding three or four blasts with his horn, confirmed Don Quixote in his opinion, that he sat in some stately castle, entertained with music, during his repast, which, consisting of delicate troutling and bread of the

finest flour, was served up, not by a brace of harlots, and a thievish innkeeper, but by the fair hands of two beautiful ladies, and the courteous governor of the place. This conceit justified his undertaking, and rendered him very happy in the success of his first sally; but, he was mortified when he recollected that he was not as yet knighted; because he thought he could not lawfully achieve any adventure without having been first invested with that honourable order.

### C H A P. III.

The diverting expedient DON QUIXOTE falls upon, in order to be knighted.

**H**Arrassed by this reflection, he abridged his sorry meal, and called for the landlord, with whom having shut himself up in the stable, he fell upon his knees, and addressed the supposed constable in these words. "Never will I rise from this suppliant posture, thrice valiant knight, until your courtesy shall grant the boon I mean to beg; a boon! that will not only redound to your particular praise, but also to the inestimable benefit of mankind in general\*." The innkeeper hearing such discourse proceed from the mouth of his guest, who kneeled before him, was astonished; and gazed at our hero, without knowing what to say or do: at length, however, he intreated him to rise; but, this request was absolutely refused, until he assured him that his boon should be granted. "Signior," said Don Quixote, "I could expect no less from the courtesy of your magnificence: I will now therefore tell you, that the boon which I have begged, and obtained from your generosity, is, that you will, tomorrow morning, vouchsafe to confer upon me the order of knighthood. This night will I watch my arms in the chapel of your castle; that the morning, as I said, may fulfill my eager desire, and enable me, as I ought, to traverse the four corners of the world, in search of adventures for the relief of the distressed, according to the duty and office of chivalry, and of those knights-errant whose genius, like mine, is strongly addicted to such achievements."

The landlord, who, as we have already observed, was a sort of a wag, and had from the beginning suspected that his lodger's brain was none of the soundest, having heard him to an end, no longer entertained any doubts about the matter, and in order to regale himself and the rest of his guests with a dish of mirth, resolved to humour him in his extravagance. With this view, he told him, that nothing could be more just and reasonable than his request, his conceptions being extremely well suit-

\* This request was a little premature, inasmuch as the practice of chivalry did not authorise the suppliant to ask a boon of his godfather, until he was dubbed, and then he had a right to demand it.

ed, and natural to such a peerless knight as his commanding presence and gallant demeanour demonstrated him to be: that he himself had, in his youth, exercised the honourable profession of errantry, strolling from place to place, in quest of adventures, in the course of which he did not fail to visit the suburbs of Malaga, the isles of Riaran, the booths of Seville, the market-place of Segovia, the olive-gardens of Valencia, the little tower of Grenada, the bay of St. Lucar, the spout of \*Cordova, the public-houses of Toledo, and many other places, in which he had exercised the dexterity of his hands as well as the lightness of his heels, doing infinite mischief, courting widows without number, debauching damsels, ruining heirs, and in short, making himself known at the bar of every tribunal in Spain: that, at length, he had retired to this castle, where he lived on his own means, together with those of other people; accommodating knights-errant of every quality and degree, solely on account of the affection he bore to them, and to the coin which they parted with in return for his hospitality. He moreover informed him, that there was no chapel in the castle at present, where he could watch his armour, it having been demolished in order to be rebuilt; but, that in case of necessity, as he very well knew, he might choose any other place; that the court-yard of the castle would very well serve the purpose, where, when the knight should have watched all night, he, the host, would in the morning, with God's permission, perform all the other ceremonies required, and create him not only a knight, but such an one as should not have his fellow in the whole universe.

He then asked, if he carried any money about with him, and the knight replied, that he had not a soure; for he had never read in the history of knights-errant, that they had ever troubled themselves with any such incumbrance. The innkeeper assured him that he was very much mistaken; for, that though no such circumstance was to be found in those histories, the authors having thought it superfluous to mention things that were so plainly necessary as money and clean shirts, it was not to be supposed that their heroes travelled without supplies of both: he might, therefore, take it for granted and uncontrovertible, that all those knights, whose actions are so voluminously recorded, never rode without their purses well-lined in cases of emergency †; not forgetting to carry a stock of linnen, with

\* Literally the colt of Cordova, because the water gushes out of a fountain, resembling an horse's mouth. These are places of resort frequented by thieves and sharpers.

† Here the landlord was more selfish than observant of the customs of chivalry; for, knights were actually exempted from all expence whatever; except when damages were awarded against them in a court of justice, and in that case they paid for their rank. This they looked upon as a mark of their preheminance; in consequence of which, at the siege of *Dun le Roi*, in the year 1411, each knight was ordered to carry eight falcines, while the squire was quit for half the number.

a small box of ointment to cure the wounds they might receive in the course of their adventures ; for, it was not to be imagined, that any other relief was to be had every time they should have occasion to fight, and be wounded in fields and desarts ; unless they were befriended by some sage enchanter, who would assist them by transporting through the air, in a cloud, some damsel, or dwarf, with a cordial of such virtue, that one drop of it would instantly cure them of their bruises and wounds, and make them as sound as if no such mischance had happened : but, the knights of former ages, who had no such friend to depend upon, laid it down as a constant maxim, to order their squires to provide themselves with money and other necessaries, such as ointment and lint for immediate application : and when the knight happened to be without a squire, which was very seldom the case, he himself kept them in very small bags, that hung scarce perceptible at his horse's rump, as if it were a treasure of much greater importance. Though indeed, except upon such an occasion, that of carrying bags was not much for the honour of knight-errantry ; for which reason, he advised Don Quixote, and now that he was his god-son, he might command him, never thenceforward to travel without money, and those other indispensable necessaries, with which he should provide himself as soon as possible ; and then he would, when he least thought of it, find his account in having made such provision.

The knight promised to follow his advice with all deference and punctuality ; and thereupon received orders to watch his armour in a large court on one side of the inn, where, having gathered the several pieces on a heap, he placed them in a cistern that belonged to the well ; then bracing on his target and grasping his lance, he walked with courteous demeanour backward and forward before the cistern, beginning this knightly exercise as soon as it was dark\*. The roguish landlord having informed every lodger in his house, of our hero's frenzy, the watching of his armour, and his expectation of being dubbed a knight ; they were astonished at such a peculiar strain of madness, and going out to observe him at a distance, beheld him with silent gesture sometimes stalking along, sometimes leaning on his spear, with his eyes fixed upon his armour, for a considerable space of time. Though it was now night, the moon shone with such splendour as might even vie with the source from which she derived her brightness ; so that every motion of our novice was distinctly perceived by all present. At this instant, a carrier who lodged in

\* This custom of watching armour in church or chapel, was a religious duty imposed upon knights, who used to consume the whole night in prayer to some saint, whom they chose as their patron ; and this exercise of devotion was performed on the night preceding the said saint's day. The same ceremony was observed by those who were sentenced to the combat-proof.

the inn took it in his head to water his mules, and it being necessary for this purpose to clear the cistern, he went to lift off Don Quixote's armour; when a loud voice accosted him in these words: "O thou! whosoever thou art, bold and insolent knight, who presumest to touch the armour of the most valiant errant that ever girded himself with cold iron, consider what thou art about to attempt, and touch it not, unless thou art desirous of yielding thy life as the price of thy temerity."

The carrier, far from regarding these threats, which had he regarded his own carcase, he would not have despised, laid hold on the sacred deposit, and threw it piecemeal into the yard with all his might. Don Quixote no sooner beheld this profanation, than lifting up his eyes to heaven, and addressing himself, in all likelihood, to his mistress Dulcinea, he said: "Grant me thy assistance, dear lady of my heart! in this insult offered to thy lowly vassal, and let me not be deprived of thy favourable protection in this my first perilous achievement." Having uttered this, and some other such ejaculations, he quitted his target, and raising his lance with both hands, bestowed it with such good will upon the carrier's head, that he fell prostrate on the ground, so effectually mauled, that, had the blow been repeated, there would have been no occasion to call a surgeon. This exploit being performed, he replaced his armour, and returned to his walk, which he continued with his former composure.

It was not long before another carrier, not knowing what had happened to his companion, who still lay without sense or motion, arrived with the same intention of watering his mules, and went straight up to the cistern, in order to remove the armour; when Don Quixote, without speaking a syllable, or asking leave of any living soul, once more quitted his target, and lifting up his lance, made another experiment of its hardness upon the pate of the second carrier, which failed in the application, giving way in four different places. At the noise of this encounter, every body in the house, innkeeper and all, came running to the field, at sight of whom Don Quixote, snatching up his target and drawing his sword, pronounced aloud, "O lady! of transcendent beauty, the force and vigour of my enfeebled heart; now, if ever, is the time for thee to turn thy princely eyes on this thy caitiff knight, who is on the eve of so mighty an adventure." So saying, he seemed to have acquired such courage, that had he been assaulted by all the carriers in the universe, he would not have retreated one step.

The companions of the wounded, seeing how their friends had been handled, began at a distance, to discharge a shower of stones upon the knight, who, as well as he could, sheltered himself under his shield, not daring to leave the cistern, lest some mischance should happen to his  
armour.

armour. The innkeeper called aloud, entreating them to leave off, for, as he had told them before, the man being mad, would be acquitted on account of his lunacy, even tho' he should put every soul of them to death. At the same time Don Quixote, in a voice louder still, upbraided them as cowardly traitors, and called the constable of the castle a worthless and base-born knight, for allowing his guest to be treated in such an inhospitable manner; swearing, that if he had received the order of knighthood, he would make him repent his discourteous behaviour. "But, as for you, said he, ye vile, ill-mannered scum, ye are beneath my notice. Discharge, approach, come forward, and annoy me as much as you can, you shall soon see what reward you will receive for your insolent extravagance." These words delivered in a bold and resolute tone, struck terror into the hearts of the assailants, who, partly for this menace, and partly on account of the landlord's persuasion, gave over their attack, while he, on his side, allowed the wounded to retire, and returned to his watch, with his former ease and tranquility.

These pranks of the knight were not at all to the liking of the landlord, who resolved to abridge the ceremony, and bestow this unlucky order of knighthood immediately, before any other mischief should happen. Approaching him therefore, he disclaimed the insolence with which his guest had been treated by those saucy plebeians, without his knowledge or consent; and observed that they had been justly chastised for their impudence: that, as he had told him before, there was no chapel in the castle, nor indeed, for what was to be done, was it at all necessary; nothing of the ceremony now remaining unperformed, except the cuff on the neck, and the thwack on the shoulders, as they are prescribed in the ceremonial of the order; and that this part might be executed in the middle of a field: he assured him also, that he had punctually complied with every thing that regarded the watching of his armour, which might have been finished in two hours, tho' he had already remained double the time on that duty. Don Quixote believing every syllable that he spoke, said, he was ready to obey him in all things, and besought him to conclude the matter as soon as possible; for, in case he should be attacked again, after having been knighted, he would not leave a soul alive in the castle, except those whom he should spare at his request.

The constable, alarmed at this declaration, immediately brought out his day-book, in which he kept an account of the barley and straw that was expended for the use of the carriers, and attended by a boy with a candle's end in his hand, together with the two ladies before-mentioned, came to the place where Don Quixote stood: then ordering him to kneel before him, mumbled in his manual, as if he had been putting up some very devout







vout petition; in the midst of which, he lifted up his hand, and gave him an hearty thump on the neck; then, with the flat of his own sword, bestowed an handsome application across his shoulders, muttering all the time between his teeth, as if he had been employed in some fervent ejaculation\*: this article being fulfilled, he commanded one of the ladies to gird on his sword, an office she performed with great dexterity and discretion, of which there was no small need to restrain her laughter at each particular of this strange ceremony: but, the effects they had already seen of the knight's disposition, kept their mirth effectually under the rein.

When this good lady had girded on his sword, "Heaven preserve your worship! adventurous knight, said she, and make you fortunate in all your encounters." Don Quixote then begged to know her name, that he might thenceforward understand to whom he was obliged for the favour he had received at her hands, and to whom he might ascribe some part of the honour he should acquire by the valour of his invincible arm. She answered with great humility, that her name was Tolosa, daughter of an honest butcher in Toledo, who lived in one of the stalls of Sancho Minaya; that she should always be at his service, and acknowledge him for her lord and master. The knight professed himself extremely obliged to her for her love; and begged she would, for the future, dignify her name by calling herself Donna Tolosa. This request she promised faithfully to comply with; and a dialogue of the same kind passed between him and the other lady who buckled on his spur; when he asked her name, she told him it was Mollinera; and that her father was an honourable miller of Antequera. Don Quixote entreated her also, to ennoble her name with the same title of Donna, loaded her with thanks, and made a tender of his service. These hitherto unseen ceremonies being dispatched, as it were, with post haste, Don Quixote, impatient to see himself on horseback, in quest of adventures, saddled and mounted Rozinante forthwith, and embracing his host, uttered such a strange rhapsody of thanks for his having dubbed him knight, that it is impossible to rehearse the compliment. The landlord, in order to get rid of him the sooner, answered in terms no less eloquent, tho' something more laconic, and let him march off in happy hour, without demanding one farthing for his lodging.

\* The flap on the shoulders, and the box on the ear being bestowed, the godfather pronounced, "In the name of God, St. Michael and St. George, I dub thee knight; be worthy, bold and loyal."

## C H A P. IV.

Of what befel our knight, when he sallied from the inn.

**I**T was early in the morning, when Don Quixote sallied from the inn, so well satisfied, so sprightly and so glad to see himself invested with the order of knighthood, that the very girths of his horse vibrated with joy: but, remembring his landlord's advice with regard to the necessaries he ought to carry along with him, in particular, the money and clean shirts; he resolved to return to his own house, and furnish himself not only with these, but also with a squire, for which office he fixed, in his own mind, upon a poor ploughman who lived in his neighbourhood, maintaining a family of children by his labour; a person in all respects qualified for the lower services of chivalry: with this view, he steered his course homeward; and Rozinante, as if he had guessed the knight's intention, began to move with such alacrity and nimbleness, that his hoofs scarce seemed to touch the ground.

He had not travelled far, when from the thickest part of a wood that grew on his right hand, his ear was saluted with shrill repeated cries, which seemed to issue from the mouth of some creature in grievous distress; and no sooner did our hero hear this lamentation, than he exclaimed, "Heaven be praised for the favour with which it now indulges me, in giving me an opportunity so soon of fulfilling the duties of my profession, and reaping the fruit of my laudable intention! These cries doubtless proceed from some miserable male, or female, who stands in need of my immediate aid and protection:" Then turning Rozinante, he rode towards the place whence the complaint seemed to come, and having entered the wood a few paces, he found a mare tied to one oak, and a lad about fifteen naked from the waist upwards, made fast to another. This was he who screamed so piteously, and indeed not without reason, for, a sturdy peasant was employed in making applications to his carcase with a leathern strap, accompanying each stripe with a word of reproof and advice. Above all things, laying upon him strong injunctions, to use his tongue less, and his eyes more: the young fellow replied, with great fervency, "I will never do so again, master, so help me God! I won't do so any more; but, for the future, take more care, and use more dispatch."

Don Quixote observing what passed, pronounced aloud, with great indignation: "Discourteous knight, it ill becomes thee to attack one who cannot defend himself: mount thy steed, couch thy lance, (for there was actually a lance leaning against the tree, to which the mare was tied) and I will  
make

make thee sensible of the cowardice of the action in which thou art now engaged." The peasant seeing this strange figure, buckled in armour, and brandishing a lance over his head, was mortally afraid, and with great humility replied: "Sir knight, this lad whom I am chastising, is my own servant, hired to keep a flock of sheep, which feed in these fields; but, he is so negligent, that every day I lose one of the number, and because I punish him for his carelessness, or knavery, he says that I scourge him out of avarice, rather than pay him his wages: tho', upon my conscience, and as I shall answer to God, he tells a lie." "How! a lie, before me, base caitif, cried Don Quixote; by the sun, that enlightens this globe, I have a good mind to thrust this lance thro' thy body: pay the young man his wages straight without reply, or by the power that rules us! I will finish and annihilate thee in an instant: unbind him, therefore, without hesitation."

The countryman hung his head, and without speaking a syllable, untied his man; who, being asked by the knight, how much money was due to him, said his master owed him for three quarters, at the rate of six rials a month. His deliverer having cast it up, found that the whole amounted to sixty-three rials, and ordered the peasant to disburse them instantly, unless he had a mind to perish under his hands. The affrighted farmer affirmed, by the grievous situation in which he was, and the oath he had already taken, tho', by the bye, he had taken no oath at all, that the sum did not amount to so much; for, that he was to discount and allow for three pair of shoes he had received, and a rial for two bleedings while he was sick. "Granting that to be true, replied Don Quixote, the shoes and the bleeding shall stand for the stripes you have given him without cause; for, if he has wore out the leather of the shoes that you paid for, you have made as free with the leather of his carcase; and if the barber let out his blood when he was sick, you have blooded him when he was well; he therefore stands acquitted of these debts." "The misfortune, Sir knight, said the peasant, is this: I have not coin about me; but, if Andrew will go home to my house, I will pay him honestly in ready money." "Go with you, cried the lad, the devil fetch me, if I do! no, no, master, I must not think of that; were I to go home with him alone, he would flea me like another St. Bartholomew." "He won't do so, replied the knight, but shew more regard to my commands; and if he will swear to me by the laws of that order of knighthood which he has received, that he will pay you your wages, I will set him free, and warrant the payment." "Lord how your worship talks! said the boy; this master of mine is no gentleman, nor has he received any order of knighthood, but is known by the name of rich John Haldudo, and lives in the neighbourhood of Quintanar." "No matter, replied Don Quixote, there may be knights among the Haldudos, especially as every

one is the son of his own works." " True, said Andrew ; but what works is my master the son of, since he refuses to pay me for my labour, and the sweat of my brows?" " I don't refuse, honest Andrew, answered the peasant ; thou wilt do me a pleasure in going home with me ; and I swear by all the honours of knighthood in the universe, that I will pay thee thy wages, as I said before, in ready money ; nay, you shall have it perfumed into the bargain." " Thank you for your perfumes, said the knight, pay him in lawful coin, and I shall be satisfied ; and be sure you fulfil the oath you have taken ; for, by the same obligation, I swear, that in case you fail, I will return to chastise you, and ferret you out, even tho' you should be more concealed than a lizard. If you would understand, who it is that lays such commands upon you, that you may find yourself under a necessity of performing them with reverence and awe, know, that I am the valiant Don Quixote de la Mancha, the redresser of wrongs, and scourge of injustice : so farewell, remember not to belie your promise and oath, on pain of the penalty prescribed." With these words, he clapped spurs to Rozinante, and was out of sight in a moment.

The countryman followed him with his eyes, till he saw him quite clear of the wood ; then turning to Andrew, said, " Come hither, child, I must pay what I owe you, according to the orders of that redresser of wrongs." " And adad, said Andrew, you had best not neglect these orders of that worthy knight, who (blessings on his heart) is equally valiant and upright ; for odds-bobs, if you do not pay me, he will return, and be as good as his word." " In faith, I am of the same opinion, replied the peasant ; but, out of my infinite regard for you, I am desirous of increasing the debt, that the payment may be doubled." So saying, he laid hold of his arm, and tying him again to the tree, flogged him so severely, that he had like to have died on the spot. " Now is the time, Mr. Andrew, said the executioner, to call upon the redresser of grievances, who will find it difficult to redress this, which by the bye I am loth to finish, being very much inclined to justify your fear of being flead alive." At length, however, he unbound, and left him at liberty to find out his judge, who was to execute the sentence he had pronounced. Andrew sneaked off, not extremely well satisfied ; on the contrary, vowing to go in quest of the valiant Don Quixote de la Mancha, and inform him punctually of every thing that had happened, an account which would certainly induce him to pay the countryman sevenfold.

In spite of this consolation, however, he departed blubbering with pain, while his master remained weeping with laughter. And thus was the grievance redressed by the valiant Don Quixote, who transported with the success, and the happy and sublime beginning which he imagined his chivalry had been favoured with, jogged on towards his own village, with infinite  
self-

self-satisfaction, and pronounced with a low voice; "O Dulcinea del Toboso, fairest among the fair! well may'st thou be counted the most fortunate beauty upon earth, seeing it is thy fate, to keep in subjection, and wholly resigned to thy will and pleasure, such a daring and renowned knight as Don Quixote de la Mancha now is, and always will remain. Who, as all the world knows, but yesterday received the honour of knighthood, and has this day redressed the greatest wrong and grievance that ever injustice hatched, and cruelty committed! To-day he wrested the lash from the hand of the merciless enemy, who so unjustly scourged the body of that tender infant!" Having uttered this exclamation, he found himself in a road that divided into four paths, and strait his imagination suggested those cross-ways that were wont to perplex knights-errant in their choice; in imitation of whom, he paused a little, and after mature deliberation, threw the reins on Rozinante's neck, leaving the decision to him, who following his first intention, took the path that led directly to his own stable.

Having travelled about two miles farther, Don Quixote descried a number of people, who, as was afterwards known, were six merchants of Toledo going to buy silks at Murcia, and who travelled with umbrelloes, attended by four servants on horseback, and three mule-drivers on foot. Don Quixote no sooner perceived them at a distance, than he imagined them to be some new adventure, and, in order to imitate as much as in him lay, those scenes he had read in his books of chivalry, he thought this was an occasion expressly ordained for him to execute his purposed achievement.

He therefore, with gallant and resolute deportment, seated himself firmly in his stirrups, grasped his lance, braced on his target, and posting himself in the middle of the road, waited the arrival of those knights-errant, for such he judged them to be; and when they were near enough to hear him, pronounced in a loud and arrogant tone; "Let the whole universe cease to move, if the whole universe refuses to confess, that there is not in the whole universe a more beautiful damsel than the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso, the high and mighty empress of La Mancha."

The merchants hearing this declaration, and seeing the strange figure from which it proceeded, were alarmed at both, and halting immediately, at a distance reconnoitred the madness of the author; curious, however, to know the meaning of that confession which he exacted, one of them, who was a sort of a wag, tho' at the same time a man of prudence and discretion, accosted him thus: "Sir knight, as we have not the honour to know who this worthy lady is, be so good as to produce her; and if we find her so beautiful as you proclaim her to be, we will gladly, and without any sort of reward, confess the truth, according to your desire." "If I produce her, replied Don Quixote, what is the mighty merit of your confessing such

a notorious truth? The importance of my demand consists in your believing, acknowledging, affirming upon oath, and defending her beauty before you have seen it. And this ye shall do, ye insolent and uncivil race, or engage with me in battle forthwith. Come on then, one by one, according to the laws of chivalry, or all together, as the treacherous custom is among such wretches as you; here I expect you with full hope and confidence in the justice of my cause." "Sir knight, replied the merchant, I humbly beg, in the name of all these princes here present, that your worship will not oblige us to burden our consciences, by giving testimony to a thing that we have neither seen nor heard, especially as it tends to the prejudice of the queens and princesses of Alcarria and Estremadura: but, if your worship will be pleased to shew us any sort of a picture of this lady, tho' it be no bigger than a grain of wheat, so as we can judge the clue by the thread, we will be satisfied with this sample, and you shall be obeyed to your heart's content: for, I believe we are already so prepossessed in her favour, that tho' the portrait should represent her squinting with one eye, and distilling vermilion and brimstone with the other, we will, notwithstanding, in compliance to your worship, say what you desire in her favour." "Her eyes, infamous wretch! replied Don Quixote in a rage, distil not such productions, but teem with amber and rich perfume: neither is there any defect in her sight, or in her body, which is more strait than a Guadarrama-spindle: but, you shall suffer for the licentious blasphemy you have uttered against the unparalleled beauty of my sovereign mistress." So saying, he couched his lance, and attacked the spokesman with such rage and fury, that, had not Rozinante luckily stumbled and fallen in the midst of his career, the merchant would have had no cause to rejoice in his rashness; but when the unhappy steed fell to the ground, the rider was thrown over his head, and pitched at a good distance upon the field, where he found all his endeavours to get up again ineffectual, so much was he encumbered with his lance, target, helmet and spurs, together with the weight of his ancient armour.

While he thus struggled, but in vain, to rise, he bellowed forth, "Fly not, ye cowardly crew; tarry a little, ye base caitifs; not thro' any fault of my own, but of my horse, am I thus discomfited." One of the mule-drivers, who seems not to have been of a very milky disposition, could not bear this arrogant language of the poor overthrown knight, without making a reply upon his ribs. Going up to him, therefore, he laid hold on his lance, and breaking it, began to thresh him so severely, that, in spite of the resistance of his armour, he was almost beaten into mummy, and tho' the fellow's master called to him to forbear, he was so incensed, that he could not leave off the game, until he had exhausted the whole of his choler;



ler; but, gathering the other pieces of the lance, reduced them all to shivers, one after another, on the miserable carcase of the Don, who, notwithstanding this storm of blows which descended on him, never shut his mouth, but continued threatening heaven and earth, and those banditti, for such he took the merchants to be.

The driver was tired at length of his exercise, and his masters pursued their journey, carrying with them sufficient food for conversation about this poor battered knight, who no sooner found himself alone, than he made another effort to rise; but, if he found this design impracticable when he was safe and sound, much less could he accomplish it now that he was disabled, and as it were wrought into a paste. He did not, however, look upon himself as unhappy, because this misfortune was, in his opinion, peculiar to knights-errant, and that he was not able to rise on account of the innumerable bruises he had received, he ascribed entirely to the fault of his horse.

#### C H A P. V.

In which the story of our knight's misfortune is continued.

**F**inding it therefore impossible to move, he was fain to have recourse to his usual remedy, which was to amuse his imagination with some passages of the books he had read; and his madness immediately recalled to his memory that of Valdovinos and the marquis of Mantua, when Carlotto left him wounded on the mountain. A piece of history that every boy knows, that every young man is acquainted with, and which is celebrated, nay more, believed by old age itself, though it be as apocryphal as the miracles of Mahomet; nevertheless, it occurred to him, as an occasion expressly adapted to his present situation. And therefore, with marks of extreme affliction, he began to roll about upon the ground, and with a languid voice, exclaim, in the words of the wounded knight of the wood,

Where art thou, lady of my heart,  
 Regardless of my misery?  
 Thou little know'st thy lover's smart,  
 Or faithless art, and false, pardie!

In this manner he went on repeating the romance, until he came to these lines:

O noble prince of Mantuan plains,  
 My carnal kinsman, and my lord!

And

And, before he could repeat the whole couplet, a peasant who was a neighbour of his own, and lived in the same village, chanced to pass, in his way from the mill where he had been with a load of wheat. This honest countryman seeing a man lying stretched upon the ground, came up, and asked him who he was, and the reason of his lamenting so piteously? Don Quixote doubtless believed, that this was his uncle, the marquis of Mantua, and made no other reply but the continuation of his romance, in which he gave an account of his own misfortune, occasioned by the amour betwixt his wife and the emperor's son, exactly as it is related in the book. The peasant, astonished at such a rhapsody, took off his beaver, which had been beaten to pieces by the mule-driver, and wiping his face, which was covered with dust, immediately knew the unfortunate knight. "Signor Quixada," said he, (for so he was called before he had lost his senses, and was transformed from a sober country-gentleman into a knight-errant) who has left your worship in such a woeful condition! But he, without minding the question that was put to him, proceeded as before, with his romance; which the honest man perceiving, went to work, and took off his back and breast-plates, to see if he had received any wound, but, he could perceive neither blood, nor scar upon his body. He then raised him upon his legs, and with infinite difficulty mounted him upon his own beast, which appeared to him a safer carriage than the knight's steed.

Having gathered up his armour, even to the splinters of the lance, he tied them upon Rozinante, and taking hold of the reins, together with the halter of his own ass, jogged on towards the village, not a little concerned to hear the mad exclamations of Don Quixote, who did not find himself extremely easy, for, he was so battered and bruised, that he could not sit upright upon the beast; but, from time to time vented such dismal sighs, as obliged the peasant to ask again what was the matter with him? And indeed one would have thought, that the devil had assisted his memory in supplying him with tales accommodated to the circumstances of his own situation. For at that instant, forgetting Valdovinos, he recollected the story of Abindar-raez, the Moor, whom Rodrigo de Narvaez, governor of Antequera, took prisoner, and carried into captivity to the place of his residence: so that, when the countryman repeated his desire of knowing where he had been, and what was the matter with him, he answered to the purpose; nay, indeed in the very words used by the captive Abencerraje to the said Rodrigo de Narvaez, as may be seen in the *Diana* of George Monte-major, which he had read; and so well adapted for his purpose, that the countryman, hearing such a composition of folly, wished them both at the devil.

It

It was then he discovered, that his neighbour was mad; and therefore made all the haste he could to the village, that he might be the sooner rid of his uneasiness at the unaccountable harangue of Don Quixote, who had no sooner finished this exclamation, than he accosted his conductor in these words: "Know then, valiant Don Rodrigo de Narvaez, that this same beautiful Xarifa, whom I have mentioned, is no other than the fair Dulcinea del Toboso, for whom I have performed, undertake, and will achieve the most renowned exploits, that ever were, are, or will be seen on earth." To this address the countryman replied with great simplicity: "How your worship talks? As I am a sinner, I am neither Don Rodrigo de Narvaez, nor the marquis of Mantua, but Pedro Alonzo, your neighbour; nor is your worship either Valdovinos, or Abindaraez, but the worthy gentleman, signor Quixado." "I know very well who I am, replied Don Quixote; and that it is possible for me to be not only those whom I have mentioned, but also the whole twelve peers of France, and even the nine worthies, seeing that my achievements will excel, not only those of each of them singly, but even the exploits of them all joined together.

Discoursing in this manner, they arrived at the village about twilight; but the peasant staid till it was quite dark, that the poor rib-roasted knight might not be seen in such a woeful condition. Then he conducted Don Quixote to his own house, which was all in confusion. When he arrived, the curate, and the barber of the village, two of his best friends and companions, were present, and his housekeeper was just saying with a woeful countenance; "Mr. Licentiate Pero Perez," that was the curate's name, "some misfortune must certainly have happened to my master\*; for six days, both he and his horse together, with the target, lance and armour have been missing; as I am a sinner, it is just come into my head, and it is certainly as true as that every one is born to die, those hellish books of knight-errantry, which he used to read with so much pleasure, have turned his brain; for, now I remember to have heard him say to himself more than once, that he longed to be a knight-errant, and stroll about in quest of adventures. May the Devil and Barrabas lay hold of such legends, which have perverted one of the soundest understandings in all La Mancha."

To this remark the niece assented, saying, "Moreover, you must know, Mr. Nicolas," this was the name of the barber, "my uncle would frequently, after having been reading in these profane books of misadventures, for two whole days and nights together, start up, throw the book

\* The author seems to have committed a small oversight in this paragraph; for the knight had not been gone above two days and one night, which he spent in waking his armour.

upon the ground, and drawing his sword, fence with the walls, till he was quite fatigued, then affirm, that he had killed four giants as big as steeples, and swear that the sweat of his brows, occasioned by this violent exercise, was the blood of his enemies, whom he had slain in battle: then he would drink off a large pitcher of cold water, and remain quiet and refreshed, saying, that the water was a most precious beverage, with which he was supplied by the sage Ilquife, a mighty enchanter and friend of his: but I take the whole blame to myself, for not having informed your worship of my dear uncle's extravagancies, that some remedy might have been applied, before they had proceeded to such excess; and that you might have burnt all those excommunicated books, which deserve the fire as much as if they were crammed with heresy."

"I am of the same opinion, said the curate, and assure you, before another day shall pass, they shall undergo a severe trial, and be condemned to the flames, that they may not induce other readers to follow the same path, which I am afraid, my good friend has taken." Every syllable of this conversation was overheard by Don Quixote and his guide, who had now no longer any doubt about his neighbour's infirmity, and therefore pronounced with a loud voice, "Open your gates to the valiant Valdovinos, and the great marquis of Mantua, who comes home wounded from the field, together with the Moor Abindarraez, who drags in captivity the valiant Rodrigo de Narvaez, governor of Antequera."

Alarmed at these words, they came all to the door, and perceiving who it was, the barber and curate went to receive their friend, and the women ran to embrace their master and kinsman, who, though he had not as yet alighted, for indeed it was not in his power, proclaimed aloud, "Let the whole world take notice, that the wounds I have received were owing to the fault of my horse alone; carry me therefore to bed, and send, if possible, for the sage \*Urganda, to search and cure them." "See now in an evil hour," cried the housekeeper, hearing these words, "if I did not truly foretel, of what leg my master was lame? Your worship shall understand, in good time, that without the assistance of that same Urganda, we know how to cure the hurts you have received; and cursed, I say, nay, a hundred and a hundred times cursed be those books of chivalry, which have so disordered your honour's brain." Having carried him to his

\* The name of an enchantress in Amadis de Gaul. During the age of knight-errantry, it was usual for ladies to study the art of surgery, in order to dress the wounds of those knights who were their servants. One of the heroines of Perceforest says to Norgal, "Fair nephew, methinks your arm is not at ease." "In faith, dear lady," answered Norgal, "You are in the right, and I beseech you to take it under your care." Then she called her daughter Helen, who entertained her cousin with good cheer, and then reduced his arm which was dislocated.



J. Hayman inv. et del.

C. Grignion Sculp.



bed, they began to search for his wounds, but could find none: and he told them that his whole body was one continued bruise, occasioned by the fall of his horse Rozinante, during his engagement with ten of the most insolent and outrageous giants that ever appeared upon the face of the earth. " Ah, hah! cried the curate, have we got giants too in the dance! Now by the faith of my function, I will reduce them all to ashes before to-morrow night."

A thousand questions did they ask of the knight, who made no other answer, but desired them to bring him some food, and leave him to his repose, which indeed was what he had most occasion for. They complied with his request, and the curate informed himself at large, of the manner in which he had been found by the countryman, who gave him full satisfaction in that particular, and repeated all the nonsense he had uttered, when he first found him; as well as what he afterwards spoke in their way home. This information confirmed the licentiate in his resolution, which was executed next day, when he brought his friend master Nicolas the barber along with him, to Don Quixote's house.

#### C H A P. VI.

Of the diverting and minute scrutiny performed by the curate and the barber, in the library of our sagacious hero.

**W**HILE the knight was asleep, his friends came, and demanded of his niece the key of the closet, in which those books, the authors of his misfortune, were kept, and she delivering it with great cheerfulness, they went into it in a body, housekeeper and all, and found upwards of an hundred volumes, great and small, extremely well bound; which were no sooner perceived by the governante, than she ran out with great eagerness, and immediately returned with a porringer of holy water, and a sprig of hyssop, saying: " Here, master licentiate, pray take and sprinkle the closet, lest some one of the many enchanters contained in these books should exercise his art upon us, as a punishment for our burning, and banishing them from the face of the earth."

The licentiate, smiling at the old housekeeper's simplicity, desired the barber to hand him the books, one by one, that he might see of what subjects they treated, because they might possibly find some that did not deserve to be purged by fire. " There is not one of them, replied the niece, which deserves the least mercy, for they are all full of mischief and deceit. You had better therefore, throw them out of the window into the

court-yard, and there fet fire to them, in a heap: or, let them be carried into the back-yard, where the bonfire may be made, and the smoke will offend no body. The housekeeper assented to this proposal, so eager were they both to destroy those innocents; but, the curate would by no means encourage such barbarity, without reading first, if possible, the title-pages.

The first that master Nicolas delivered into his hand, were the four volumes of Amadis de Gaul. "There is, said the good man, something mysterious in this circumstance; for, as I have heard, that was the first book of chivalry printed in Spain, from which all the rest have derived their origin and plan; and therefore in my opinion, we ought to condemn him to the fire, without hesitation, as the lawgiver of such a pernicious sect." "By no means, cried the barber, for I have also heard, that this is the best book of the kind that was ever composed, and therefore ought to be pardoned, as an original and model in its way." "Right, said the curate, and for that reason, he shall be spared for the present. Let us see that author, who stands next to him." "This, says the barber, contains the achievements of Esplandian, the lawful son of Amadis de Gaul." "Truly then, said the curate, the virtues of the father shall not avail the son: here, mistress housekeeper, open that window, and toss him into the yard, where he shall serve as a foundation for the bonfire we intend to make."

This task the housekeeper performed with infinite satisfaction, and the worthy Esplandian took his flight into the yard, to wait in patience for the fire, with which he was threatened. "Proceed, cried the curate." "This that comes next, said the barber, is Amadis of Greece; and I believe all the authors on this shelf are of the same family." To the yard then with all of them, replied the curate; for, rather than not burn queen Pintiquinestra, and the shepherd Darinel with his Eclogues, together with the unintelligible and bedevilled discourses of his author, I would even consume the father who begat me, should he appear in the figure of a knight-errant." "I am of your opinion, said the barber." "And I," cried the niece. "Since that is the case, said the housekeeper, to the yard with them immediately." Accordingly they delivered a number into her hands, and she, out of tenderness for the stair-case, sent them all out of the window.

"Who may that tun-like author be?" said the curate. "This here," answered the barber, is Don Olivante de Laura." "The very same, replied the curate, who composed the Garden of Flowers, and truly it is hard to determine, which of his two books is the most true, or rather which of them is least false; all that I know is, that he shall go to the pile for his arrogance and folly." "He that follows, says the barber, is Florismarte  
of



of Hircania." "What, Signor Florismarte? replied the curate: in faith then he must prepare for his fate; notwithstanding his surprising birth, and mighty adventures, and the unparalleled stiffness and sterility of his stile. Down with him, mistress housekeeper, and take this other along with you also." "With all my heart, dear sir, replied the governante, who executed his commands with vast alacrity.

"He that comes next, said the barber, is the knight Platir." "That is an old book, said the clergyman; but, as I can find nothing in him that deserves the least regard, he must e'en keep the rest company." He was accordingly doomed to the flames, without farther question. The next book they opened was entitled, The Knight of the Cross, which the curate having read; "the ignorance of this author, said he, might be pardoned on account of his holy title; but, according to the proverb, the devil skulks behind the cross, and therefore let him descend into the fire." Master Nicolas taking up another book, found it was the Mirror of Chivalry. "Oh, ho, cried the curate, I have the honour to know his worship; away with Signor Rinaldos de Mont-alban, with his friends and companions, who were greater thieves than Cacus, not forgetting the twelve Peers, together with Turpin, their candid historian. Though truly, in my opinion, their punishment ought not to exceed perpetual banishment, because they contain some part of the invention of the renowned Matteo Boyardo, on which was weaved the ingenious web of the christian poet Ludovico Ariosto, to whom, should I find him here speaking in any other language than his own, I would pay no regard; but, if he talks in his own idiom, I will place him on my head, in token of respect." "I have got him at home, said the barber, in Italian, but I don't understand that language." "Nor is it necessary you should, replied the curate; and here let us pray heaven to forgive the captain, who has impoverished him so much, by translating him into Spanish, and making him a Castilian. And indeed, the same thing will happen to all those who pretend to translate books of poetry into a foreign language; for, in spite of all their care and ability, they will find it impossible to give the translation the same energy which is found in the original. In short, I sentence this book, and all those which we shall find treating of French matters, to be thrown and deposited in a dry well, until we can determine at more leisure what fate they must undergo, except Bernardo del Carpio, and another called Roncesvalles, which, if they fall into my hands, shall pass into those of the housekeeper, and thence into the fire, without any mitigation."

This was approved of as an equitable decision, and accordingly confirmed by the barber, who knew the curate to be such a good christian, and so much a friend to truth, that he would not be guilty of an equivocation

cation for the whole universe. The next volume he opened was Palmerin d' Oliva; and hard by him stood another called Palmerin of England, which was no sooner perceived by the licentiate than he cried, "Let that Oliva be hewn in pieces, and burned so, as not so much as a cinder of him shall remain; but let the English Palmerin be defended, and preserved as an inestimable jewel, and such another casket be made for him as that which Alexander found among the spoils of Darius, and destined as a case for the works of Homer. That book, neighbour, is venerable for two reasons: first, because it is in itself excellent; and secondly, because it is said to have been composed by an ingenious king of Portugal. All the adventures of the castle of Miraguarda are incomparable, and contrived with infinite art; the language perspicuous and elegant, and the characters supported with great propriety of sentiment and decorum. I propose, Mr. Nicolas, saving your better judgment, to exempt this book and Amadis de Gaul from the flames, and let all the rest perish, without farther enquiry."

"Pardon me, neighbour, replied the barber, I have here got in my hand the renowned Don Bellianis." "Even he, answered the priest, with the second, third, and fourth parts, stands very much in need of a little rhubarb to purge his excessive choler, and ought to be pruned of that whole Castle of fame, and other more important impertinencies. For which reason, let the sentence be changed into transportation, and according as he reforms he shall be treated with lenity and justice. In the mean time, friend Nicolas, keep him safe in your house, out of the reach of every reader." "With all my soul!" answered the barber; and without giving themselves the trouble of reading any more titles, they ordered the housekeeper to dismiss all the large books into the yard.

This direction was not given to a person who was either doting or deaf, but to one who was much more inclined to perform that office than to compose the largest and finest web that ever was seen. Taking up therefore, seven or eight at a time, she heaved them out of the window, with incredible dispatch. While she was thus endeavouring to lift a good many together, one of them chanced to fall at the feet of the barber, who being seized with an inclination of knowing the contents, found, upon examination, that it was called the history of the famous knight Tirante the White. "Heaven be praised! cried the curate aloud, that we have discovered Tirante the White in this place; pray give it me, neighbour; for in this book I reckon I have found a treasure of satisfaction, and a rich mine of amusement." "Here is the famous Don Godamercy \* of Mont-alban, and his brother Thomas of Mont-alban, and the knight Fon-

\* In the original *Quivielysen*, from the two Greek words *επι* *δωρου*, signifying, Lord have mercy.

feca, together with an account of the battle fought between Alano and the valiant Detriante, together with the witticisms of the young lady, Joy of my life, with the amorous stratagems of the widow Quiet, and her highness the empress, who was enamoured of her squire Hippolito. I do assure you, upon my word, Mr. Nicolas, that in point of stile, this is the best book that ever was written. Here the knights eat, sleep, and die in their beds, after having made their wills, with many circumstances that are wanting in other books of the same kind. Notwithstanding, the author who composed it certainly deserved to be sent to the galleys for life, for having spent his time in writing so much nonsense. Take, and read him at home, and you shall find what I say is true." "Very like, replied the barber; what shall we do with these small books that remain?"

"These, said the curate, cannot be books of chivalry, but must be poems." Accordingly, opening one, he found it was the Diana of George de Monte-mayor, and taking it for granted that all the rest were of the same kind, said, "These books do not deserve to be burnt with the rest; for they neither are, nor ever will be guilty of so much mischief, as those of chivalry have done; being books of entertainment, and no ways prejudicial to religion." "Pray, sir, said the niece, be so good as to order these to be burnt with the rest; for my uncle will no sooner be cured of his knight-errantry, than, by reading these, he will turn shepherd, and wander about the groves and meadows piping and singing. Nay, what is worse, perhaps turn poet, which they say, is an infectious and incurable distemper." "The young woman is in the right, said the curate, and therefore it won't be amiss to remove this temptation and stumbling-block out of our friend's way. Since we have, therefore, begun with the Diana of Monte-mayor, I am of opinion, that we should not burn him, but only expunge what relates to the sage Felicia, and the enchanted water, together with all the larger poems, and leave to him a God's-name all the prose, and the honour of being the ringleader of the writers of that class."

"This that follows, said the barber, is called Diana the second of Salmantino, and this other that bears the same name, is written by Gil Polo." "Let Salmantino, replied the curate, encrease the number of those that are already condemned to the yard; but, let Gil Polo be preserved as carefully as if it was the production of Apollo himself. Proceed, friend Nicolas, and let us dispatch; for, it grows late." "This here book, said the barber, opening the next, is called the ten books of the Fortune of Love, the production of Antonio Lofrasco, a Sardinian poet." "By my holy orders, cried the curate, since Phœbus was Apollo, the muses the daughters of Jove, and bards delighted in poetry, there never was such

such a pleasant and comical performance composed, as this, which is the best and most original of the kind, which ever saw the light: and he who has not read it may assure himself, that he has never read any thing of taste: reach it me, neighbour; it gives me more pleasure to have found this, than if I had received a caffock of Florence silk.

Accordingly he laid it carefully by, with infinite pleasure, and the barber proceeded in his talk, saying, "Those that come next are the Shepherd of Iberia, the nymphs of Henares, and the Undeceptions of jealousy." "Then there is no more to do, said the priest, but to deliver them over to the secular arm of the housekeeper, and do not ask me, why? else we shall never have done." "Here comes the Shepherd of Filida. He is no shepherd, cried the curate, but a very elegant courtier, and therefore preserve him as a precious jewel." Then the barber laid hold of a very large volume, which was entitled the treasure of poetry. "If there was not so much of him he would be more esteemed, said the licentiate; that book ought to be weeded, and cleared of certain meannesses, which have crept into the midst of its excellencies: take care of it, for the author is my friend, and deserves regard for some other more heroic and elevated works, which he has composed." "And this, continued the barber, is a collection of songs by Lopez Maldonado." "That author is my very good friend also, replied the curate, and his own verses out of his own mouth are the admiration of every body; for he chants them with so sweet a voice, that the hearers are enchanted. His eclogues are indeed a little diffuse, but there cannot be too much of a good thing. Let them be preserved among the elect: but, pray what book is that next to it?" "When the barber told him, it was the Galatea of Miguel de Cervantes;" that same Cervantes, said he, has been an intimate friend of mine these many years, and is, to my certain knowledge, more conversant with misfortunes than poetry. There is a good vein of invention in his book, which proposes something, though it concludes nothing. We must wait for the second part, which he promises, and then perhaps his amendment may deserve a full pardon, which is now denied: until that happens, let him be close confined in your closet."

"With all my heart, replied the barber; but here come three more together, the Araucana of Don Alonzo de Ercilla, the Austriada of Juan Rufo Jurado de Cordova, and the Monserrate of Christoval de Virues, a Valentian poet." "These three books, said the curate, are the best epic poems in the Castilian language, and may be compared with the most renowned performances of Italy. Let them be kept as the inestimable pledges of Spanish poetry." The curate grew tired of examining more books, and would have condemned all the rest, contents unknown,

if

if the barber had not already opened another, which was called the Tears of Angelica. "I should have shed tears for my rashness, said the curate, hearing the name, if I had ordered that book to be burned: for, its author was one of the most celebrated poets not only of Spain, but of the whole world, and in particular, extremely successful in translating some of the metamorphoses of Ovid.

## C H A P. VII.

The second sally of our worthy knight Don Quixote de la Mancha.

WHILE they were busied in this manner, Don Quixote began to cry aloud: "This way, this way, ye valiant knights, now is the time to shew the strength of your invincible arms, that the courtiers may not carry off the honour of the tournament." The scrutiny of the books that remained, was deserted by the curate and barber, who hastened to the author of this noisy exclamation, and it is believed, that all were committed to the flames, unseen, unheard, not even excepting the Carolea, and Lyon of Spain, together with the exploits of the emperor, composed by Don Luis d'Avila, which were, doubtless, among those committed to the fire, tho' perhaps, had the curate seen them, they would not have undergone so severe a sentence.

When they arrived in Don Quixote's chamber, they found him on the floor, proceeding with his rhapsody, and fencing with the walls, as broad awake as if he had never felt the influence of sleep. Laying hold on him, by force they reconveyed him to his bed, where, after having rested a little, he returned to his ravings, and addressed himself to the curate in these words: "Certainly, my lord, archbishop Turpin, we who are called the twelve peers of France, will be greatly disgraced, if we allow the court-knights to win the victory in this tournament, after we the adventurers have gained the prize in the three preceding days." "Give yourself no trouble about that consideration, my worthy friend, said the curate; for, providence may turn the scale, and what is lost to-day may be retrieved to-morrow. In the mean time, have a reverend care of your health, for you seem to be excessively fatigued, if not wounded grievously." "I am not wounded, replied the knight; but, that I am battered and bruised, there is no manner of doubt: for, the bastard Don Orlando has mauled me to mummy, with the trunk of an oak; and all out of mere envy, because he saw, that I alone, withstood his valour. But, may I no longer deserve the name of Reynaldos de Mont-alban, if, when I rise from this bed, I do not repay him in his own coin, in spite of all his enchantments. Mean

while bring me some food, which is what I chiefly want at present, and let me alone, to take vengeance for the injury I have received."

In compliance with his desire, they brought him something to eat, and left him again to his repose, not without admiration of his madness and extravagance. That very night, the housekeeper set fire to, and consumed, not only all the books that were in the yard, but also every one she could find in the house; and no doubt many were burned, which deserved to have been kept as perpetual archives. But, this, their destiny, and the laziness of the inquisitors would not allow: so that, in them was fulfilled the old proverb, *a saint may sometimes suffer for a sinner*. Another remedy, which the curate and barber prescribed for the distemper of their friend was, to alter and block up the closet where his books had been kept; that upon his getting up, he should not find them, and the cause being taken away, the effect might cease; and that upon his enquiry, they should tell him, an enchanter had carried them off, closet and all: this resolution was executed with all imaginable dispatch, during the two days that Don Quixote kept his bed.

The first thing he did, when he got up, was to go and visit his books, and not finding the apartment where he had left it, he went from one corner of the house to the other, in quest of his study. Coming to the place where the door stood, he endeavoured, but in vain, to get in, and cast his eyes all around, without uttering one syllable: but, after he had spent some time in this sort of examination, he enquired of his housekeeper whereabouts he might find his book-closet. She being well instructed, readily answered, "What closet, or what nothing is your worship in search of? There are neither books nor closet in this house; for, the devil himself has run away with both." "It was not the devil, cried the niece, but, an enchanter that conveyed himself hither in a cloud, one night after your worship's departure, and alighting from a dragon on which he was mounted, entered the closet, where I know not what he did, but having staid a very little while, he came flying thro' the roof, leaving the whole house full of smoke. And when we went to see what he had done, we could neither find books nor closet: only, the housekeeper and I can very well remember, that when the old wicked conjurer went away, he cried in a loud voice, that for the hatred he bore to the master of those books and closet, he had done that mischief, which would afterwards appear: he said also, that his name was the sage Munaton." "You mean Freston," said Don Quixote. "I do not know, answered the housekeeper, whether it was Freston or Friton; but this I am certain of, that his name ended in ton." "The case then is plain, said the knight; that same sage enchanter is one of my greatest enemies; who bears me a grudge, because he knows, by the mystery of his art, that the  
time

time will come when I shall fight, and vanquish in single battle a certain knight whom he favours, in spite of all he can do to prevent my success: and for this reason, he endeavours to give me every mortification in his power; but, let me tell him, he won't find it an easy matter to contradict, or evade what heaven has decreed." "Who ever doubted that?" said his niece; but, what business have you, dear uncle, with these quarrels? Would it not be better to live in peace at home, than to stray up and down the world in search of superfine bread, without considering that many a one goes out for wool, and comes home quite shorn." "My dear niece, replied Don Quixote, you are altogether out of your reckoning. Before I be shorn, I will pull and pluck off the beards of all those who pretend to touch a single hair of my mustacho."

The two women did not choose to make any farther answer, because they perceived, that his choler was very much inflamed. After this transaction, however, he staid at home fifteen days in great tranquillity, without giving the least sign or inclination to repeat his folly; during which time, many infinitely diverting conversations passed between him and his friends, the curate and the barber: wherein he observed that the world was in want of nothing so much as of knights-errant, and that in him this honourable order was revived. The clergyman sometimes contradicted him, and sometimes assented to what he said, because, without this artful conduct, he would have had no chance of bringing him to reason.

About this time too, the knight tampered with a peasant in the neighbourhood, a very honest fellow, if a poor man may deserve that title, but, one who had a very small quantity of brains in his skull. In short, he said so much, used so many arguments to persuade, and promised him such mountains of wealth, that this poor simpleton determined to follow, and serve him in quality of squire. Among other things, that he might be disposed to engage cheerfully, the knight told him, that an adventure might one day happen, in which he should win some island in the twinkling of an eye, and appoint him governor of his conquest. Intoxicated with these, and other such promises, Sancho Panza (so was the countryman called) deserted his wife and children, and listed himself as his neighbour's squire.

Thus far successful, Don Quixote took measures for supplying himself with money, and what by selling one thing, mortgaging another, and making a great many very bad bargains, he raised a tolerable sum. At the same time, accommodating himself with a target, which he borrowed of a friend, and patching up the remains of his vizor as well as he could, he advertised his squire Sancho of the day and hour in which he resolved to set out, that he might provide himself with those things which he thought most necessary for the occasion: above all things, charging him to purchase a wallet. San-

cho promised to obey his orders, and moreover, said he was resolved to carry along with him an excellent afs which he had, as he was not designed by nature to travel far on foot.

With regard to the afs, Don Quixote demurred a little, endeavouring to recollect some knight-errant who had entertained a squire mounted on an afs; but, as no such instance occurred to his memory, he was nevertheless, determined to allow it on this occasion, on a supposition, that he should be able to accommodate him with a more honourable carriage, by dismounting the first discourteous knight he should meet with. He also laid in a store of linen, and every thing else in his power, conformable to the advice of the innkeeper.

Every thing being thus settled and fulfilled, Panza, without taking leave of his children and wife; and Don Quixote, without bidding adieu to his niece and housekeeper, sallied forth from the village, one night, unperceived by any living soul, and travelled so hard, that before dawn they found themselves secure from all search, if any such had been made: Sancho Panza journeying upon his afs, like a venerable patriarch, with his wallet and leathern bottle, longing extremely to see himself settled in the government of that island which was promised to him by his master.

The knight happened to take the same route, and follow the same road in which he travelled at his first sally thro' the field of Montiel, over which he now passed with much less pain than formerly, because it was now early in the morning, the rays of the sun were more oblique, consequently he was less disturbed by the heat. It was hereabouts that Sancho first opened his mouth, saying to his master, " Sir knight-errant, I hope your worship will not forget that same island which you have promised me, and which I warrant myself able to govern, let it be as great as it will." To this remonstrance Don Quixote replied, " You must know, friend Sancho Panza, that it was an established custom among the ancient knights-errant, to invest their squires with the government of such islands and kingdoms as they had laid under their subjection; and I am firmly resolved, that such a grateful practice shall never fail in me, who, on the contrary, mean to improve it by my generosity: for, they sometimes, nay generally, waited until their squires turned grey-haired, and then after they were worn out with service, and had endured many dismal days, and doleful nights, bestowed upon them the title of count, or marquis, at least, of some valley or province, more or less: but, if heaven spares thy life and mine, before six days be at an end, I may chance to acquire such a kingdom as shall have others depending upon it, as if expressly designed for thee, to be crowned sovereign in one of them. And thou oughtest not to be surprized, that such incidents and accidents happen to knights-errant, by means never before known



or conceived, as will enable me even to exceed my promise." "In that case, replied Sancho Panza, if I should ever become a king, by any of those miracles which your worship mentions, my duck Juana Gutierrez would also be a queen, and each of my daughters an infanta." "Certainly, said the knight: who doubts that?" "That do I, said the squire; for certain I am, that tho' it were to rain kingdoms upon the earth, not one of them would fit seemly on the head of Mary \* Gutierrez; your worship must know, she is not worth a farthing for a queen; she might do indeed for a countess, with the blessing of God, and good assistance." "Recommend the matter to providence, replied Don Quixote, which will bestow upon thee what will be best adapted to thy capacity; but, let not thy soul be so far debased, as to content itself with any thing less than a vice-royalty." "That I will not, answered Sancho, especially as I have a powerful master in your worship, who will load me with as much preferment as I can conveniently bear."

## C H A P. VIII.

Of the happy success of the valiant Don Quixote, and the dreadful and inconceivable adventure of the wind-mills, with other incidents worthy to be recorded by the most able historian.

**I**N the midst of this their conversation, they discovered thirty or forty wind-mills all together on the plain, which the knight no sooner perceived than he said to his squire, "Chance has conducted our affairs even better than we could either wish or hope for; look there, friend Sancho, and behold thirty or forty outrageous giants, with whom I intend to engage in battle, and put every soul of them to death, so that we may begin to enrich ourselves with his spoils; for, it is a meritorious warfare, and serviceable both to God and man, to extirpate such a wicked race from the face of the earth." "What giants do you mean?" said Sancho Panza in amaze? "Those you see yonder, replied his master, with vast extended arms; some of which are two leagues long." "I would your worship would take notice, replied Sancho, that those you see yonder are no giants, but wind-mills; and what seem arms to you, are sails; which being turned with the wind, make the mill-stone work." "It seems very plain, said the knight, that you are but a novice in adventures; these I affirm to be giants, and if thou art afraid, get out of the reach of danger, and put up thy prayers for me, while I join with them in fierce and unequal combat." So saying, he put spurs to his steed Rozinante, without paying the least regard to the cries of his squire Sancho, who assured him, that those he was going to

\* How comes Juana to be so suddenly metamorphosed into Mary?

attack were no giants, but innocent wind-mills : but, he was so much possessed with the opinion that they were giants, that he neither heard the advice of his squire Sancho, nor would use the intelligence of his own eyes, tho' he was very near them : on the contrary, when he approached them, he called aloud : " Fly not, ye base and cowardly miscreants, for, he is but a single knight who now attacks you." At that instant, a breeze of wind springing up, the great sails began to turn ; which being perceived by Don Quixote, " Tho' you wield, said he, more arms than ever belonged to the giant Briareus, I will make you pay for your insolence." So saying, and heartily recommending himself to his lady Dulcinea, whom he implored to succour him in this emergency, bracing on his target, and setting his lance in the rest, he put his Rozinante to full speed, and assaulting the nearest wind-mill, thrust it into one of the sails, which was drove about by the wind with so much fury, that the lance was shivered to pieces, and both knight and steed whirled aloft, and overthrown in very bad plight upon the plain.

Sancho Panza rode as fast as the ass could carry him to his assistance, and when he came up, found him unable to stir, by reason of the bruises which he and Rozinante had received. " Lord have mercy upon us ! said the squire, did not I tell your worship to consider well what you were about ? did not I assure you, they were no other than wind-mills ? indeed no body could mistake them for any thing else, but one who has wind-mills in his own head !" " Prithee, hold thy peace, friend Sancho, replied Don Quixote ; the affairs of war are, more than any thing, subject to change. How much more so, as I believe, nay, am certain, that the sage Freston who stole my closet and books, has converted those giants into mills, in order to rob me of the honour of their overthrow ; such is the enmity he bears me ; but, in the end, all his treacherous arts will but little avail against the vigour of my sword." " God's will be done !" replied Sancho Panza, who helped him to rise and mount Rozinante that was almost disjointed.

While they conversed together upon what had happened, they followed the road that leads to the pass of Lapice, for in that, which was a great thoroughfare, as Don Quixote observed, it was impossible but they must meet with many and divers adventures. As he jogged along, a good deal concerned for the loss of his lance, he said to his squire, " I remember to have read of a Spanish knight called Diego Perez de Vargas, who having broken his sword in battle, tore off a mighty branch or bough from an oak, with which he performed such wonders, and felled so many Moors, that he retained the name of Machuca, or the feller, and all his descendants from that day forward, have gone by the name of Vargas and Machuca. This circumstance I mention to thee, because, from the first ash or oak that I meet with, I am resolved to rend as large and stout a bough as that, with which I expect,  
and

and intend to perform such exploits, as thou shalt think thyself extremely happy in being thought worthy to see, and give testimony to feats, otherwise incredible." "By God's help, says Sancho, I believe that every thing will happen as your worship says, but pray, Sir, sit a little more upright; for you seem to lean strangely to one side, which must proceed from the bruises you received in your fall." "Thou art in the right, answered Don Quixote; and if I do not complain of the pain, it is because knights-errant are not permitted to complain of any wound they receive, even tho' their bowels should come out of their bodies." "If that be the case, I have nothing to reply, said Sancho, but God knows, I should be glad your worship would complain when any thing gives you pain: this I know, that for my own part, the smallest prick in the world would make me complain, if that law of not complaining does not reach to the squires as well as the knights." Don Quixote could not help smiling at the simplicity of his squire, to whom he gave permission to complain as much and as often as he pleased, whether he had cause or no; for, as yet, he had read nothing to the contrary, in the history of knight-errantry.

Then Sancho observing that it was dinner-time, his master told him, that for the present he had no occasion for food; but, that he his squire might go to victuals when he pleased. With this permission, Sancho adjusted himself as well as he could, upon his ass, and taking out the provision with which he had stuffed his wallet, he dropped behind his master a good way, and kept his jaws agoing as he jogged along, lifting the bottle to his head, from time to time, with so much satisfaction, that the most pampered vintner of Malaga might have envied his situation.

While he travelled in this manner, repeating his agreeable draughts, he never thought of the promise which his master had made to him, nor considered it as a toil, but rather as a diversion, to go in quest of adventures, how dangerous soever they might be: in fine, that night they passed under a tuft of trees, from one of which Don Quixote tore a withered branch to serve instead of a lance; and fitted to it the iron head he had taken from that which was broken: all night long, the knight closed not an eye, but mused upon his lady Dulcinea, in order to accommodate himself to what he had read of those errants who passed many sleepless nights in woods and deserts, entertaining themselves with the remembrance of their mistresses.

This was not the case with Sancho Panza, whose belly being well replenished, and that not with plantane water, made but one nap of the whole night, and even then, would not have waked, unless his master had called to him, notwithstanding the sun-beams that played upon his face, and the singing of the birds, which in great numbers, and joyous melody, saluted the

the approach of the new day. The first thing he did when he got up, was to visit his bottle, which finding considerably more lank than it was the night before, he was grievously afflicted, because in the road that they pursued, he had no hopes of being able in a little time to supply its defect. Don Quixote refusing to breakfast, because, as we have already said, he regaled himself with the savoury remembrance of his mistress, they pursued their journey towards the pass, which after three days travelling, they discovered. "Here, cried Don Quixote, here, brother Sancho Panza, we shall be able to dip our hands up to the elbows in what is called adventure; but, take notice, altho' thou seest me beset with the most extreme danger, thou must by no means, even so much as lay thy hand upon thy sword, with design to defend me, unless I am assaulted by vulgar and low-born antagonists, in which case, thou mayest come to my assistance; but, if they are knights, thou art by no means permitted or licensed, by the laws of chivalry, to give me the least succour, until thou thyself hast received the honour of knight-hood\*." "As for that matter, replied Sancho, your worship shall be obeyed to a tittle, for, I am a very peaceable man, and not at all fond of meddling with riots and quarrels. True indeed, in the defence of my own person, I shall not pay much regard to the said laws, seeing every one that is aggrieved is permitted to defend himself by all the laws of God and man." "I say nothing to the contrary, replied Don Quixote, but, in the affair of assisting me against knights, thou must keep thy natural impetuosity under the rein." "That will I, answered Sancho, and keep your honour's command as strictly as I keep the Lord's-day."

While they were engaged in this conversation, there appeared before them two benedictine monks mounted upon dromedaries, for, their mules were not much less, with their travelling spectacles, and umbrellas; after them came a coach, accompanied by four or five people on horseback, and two mule-drivers on foot. In this carriage, it was afterwards known, a Biscayan lady was travelling to Seville to her husband, who was bound to the Indies with a rich cargo.

Don Quixote no sooner perceived the fryars (who, tho' they travelled the same road, were not of her company) than he said to his squire, "If I am not very much mistaken, this will be the most famous adventure that ever was known; for, those black apparitions on the road, must doubtless be enchanters, who are carrying off in that coach, some princess they have stolen; and

\* Here Don Quixote seems to have been too scrupulous: for, tho' no squire was permitted to engage with a knight on horseback, yet they were allowed, and even enjoined to assist their masters when they were unhorsed or in danger, by mounting them on fresh steeds, supplying them with arms, and warding off the blows that were aimed at them. Davy Gam, at the battle of Agincourt, lost his life in defending Henry V. of England, and St. Severin met with the same fate in warding off the blows that were aimed at Francis I. of France, in the battle of Pavia.

there

there is a necessity for my exerting my whole power in redressing her wrongs." "This will be worse than the windmills, cried Sancho; for the love of God! Sir, consider, that these are Benedictine fryars, and those who are in the coach can be no other than common travellers. Mind what I say, and consider what you do, and let not the devil deceive you." "I have told thee already, Sancho, replied Don Quixote, that with regard to adventures, thou art utterly ignorant: what I say is true, and in a moment thou shalt be convinced."

So saying, he rode forward, and placed himself in the middle of the highway thro' which the fryars were to pass, and when he thought them near enough to hear what he said, he pronounced, in a loud voice, "Monstrous and diabolical race! surrender, this instant, those high-born princesses, whom you carry captives in that coach: or prepare to receive immediate death, as a just punishment for your misdeeds." The fryars immediately stopped short, astonished as much at the figure as at the discourse of Don Quixote: to which they replied, "Sir knight, we are neither diabolical nor monstrous, but innocent monks of the order of St. Benedict, who are going this way about our own affairs; neither do we know of any princesses that are carried captives in that coach." "These fawning speeches, said Don Quixote, shall not impose upon me, who know too well what a treacherous pack ye are;" and without waiting for any other reply, he put spurs to Rozinante, and couching his lance, attacked the first fryar with such fury and resolution, that if he had not thrown himself from his mule, he would have come to the ground extremely ill-handled, not without some desperate wound, nay, perhaps stone dead. The second monk, who saw how his companion had been treated, clapped spurs to the flanks of his trusty mule, and flew thro' the field even swifter than the wind.

Sancho Panza seeing the fryar on the ground, leaped from his ass with great agility, and beginning to uncase him with the utmost dexterity, two of their servants came up, and asked for what reason he stripped their master? The squire replied, that the cloaths belonged to him, as the spoils that Don Quixote his lord had won in battle: but, the others, who did not understand raillery, nor know any thing of spoils and battles, seeing Don Quixote at a good distance, talking with the people in the coach, went to loggerheads with Sancho, whom they soon overthrew, and without leaving one hair of his beard, mauled him so unmercifully, that he lay stretched upon the ground, without sense or motion. Then, with the utmost dispatch, mounted the fryar, who was pale as a sheet, and almost frightened to death, and who no sooner found himself on horseback, than he galloped towards his companion, who tarried at a good distance, to see the issue of this strange adventure. However, being joined again, without waiting for the

conclusion of it, they pursued their journey, making as many crosses as if the devil had been at their backs.

Don Quixote, in the mean time, as we have already observed, was engaged in conversation with the lady in the coach, to whom he expressed himself in this manner: "Beautiful lady, you may now dispose of your own person according to your pleasure; for the pride of your ravishers lies level with the ground, being overthrown by this my invincible arm; and that you may be at no difficulty in understanding the name of your deliverer, know that I am Don Quixote de la Mancha, knight-errant, adventurer and captive of the unparalleled and beautiful Donna Dulcinea del Toboso; and the only acknowledgment I expect for the benefit you have received, is, that you return to that place, and presenting yourself before my mistress, tell her what I have performed in behalf of your liberty." This whole address of the knight was overheard by a Biscayan squire, who accompanied the coach, and who, seeing that he would not allow the carriage to pass forward, but insisted upon their immediate returning to Toboso, rode up to Don Quixote, and, laying hold of his lance, spoke to him thus, in bad Castilian, and worse Biscayan: "Get thee gone, cavalier, go to the devil, I say; vor, by the God that made hur, if thou wilt not let the coach alone, che will kill thee dead, as zure as che was a Biscayan." The knight, understanding very well what he said, replied with great composure; "If thou wast a gentleman, as thou art not, I would chastise thy insolence and rashness, wretched creature." "I not a gentleman!" replied the Biscayan in great choler; "by God in heaven! thou liest, as I am a christian: if thou wilt throw away thy lance, and draw thy sword, che will soon see which be the better man\*." Biscayan by land, gentleman by sea, gentleman by devil; and thou liest, look ye, in thy throat, if thou sayest otherwise." "Thou shalt see that presently, as Agragis said," replied Don Quixote, who, throwing his lance upon the ground, unsheathing his sword, and bracing on his target, attacked the Biscayan with full resolution to put him to death †.

His antagonist, who saw him approach, fain would have alighted from his mule (which, being one of the worst that ever was let out for hire, could not much be depended upon;) but, he scarce had time to draw his sword; however, being luckily near the coach, he snatched out of it a cushion, which served him as a shield, and then they flew upon each other as two mortal enemies. The rest of the people who were present endeavoured, but in vain, to appease them; for, the Biscayan swore, in his uncouth ex-

\* The literal meaning of the Spanish is, Thou shalt soon see who is to carry the cat to the water; or rather, in the corrupted Biscayan phrase, The water how soon thou wilt see, that thou carriest to the cat.

† This behaviour of Don Quixote was exactly conformable to the rules of chivalry; which, tho' they hindered a knight from fighting in armour with a squire, did not prevent him from giving satisfaction to an inferior, at sword and target; and every squire who was aggrieved had a right to demand it.

pressions, that if they did not leave him to fight the battle, he would certainly murder his mistress, and every body who should pretend to oppose it. The lady in the coach, surprized and frightened at what she saw, ordered the coachman to drive a little out of the road, to a place from whence she could see at a distance this rigorous engagement. In the course of which, the Biscayan bestowed such a huge stroke upon the shoulder of Don Quixote, that if it had not been for the defence of his buckler, he would have been cleft down to his girdle. The knight feeling the shock of such an unconscionable blow, exclaimed aloud: "O Dulcinea! lady of my soul, thou rose of beauty, succour thy knight, who, for the satisfaction of thy excessive goodness, is now involved in this dreadful emergency." To pronounce these words, to raise his sword, to secure himself with his target, and attack the Biscayan, was the work of one instant; for, he was determined to risk his all upon a single stroke. His antagonist, who saw him advance, and by this time, was convinced of his courage by his resolution, determined to follow his example; and covering himself with his cushion, waited his assault, without being able to turn his mule either on one side or the other: for, she was already so jaded, and so little accustomed to such pastime, that she would not move one step out of the way.

Don Quixote then, as we have said, advanced against the cautious Biscayan, his sword lifted up with an intention to cleave him through the middle: the Biscayan waited his attack in the same posture, being shielded with his cushion. The frightened by-standers stood aloof, intent upon the success of those mighty strokes that threatened each of the combatants; and the lady in the coach, with the rest of her attendants, put up a thousand prayers to heaven, and vowed an offering to every image, and house of devotion in Spain, provided God would deliver the squire and them from the imminent danger in which they were: but the misfortune is, that in this very critical instant, the author of the history has left this battle in suspense, excusing himself, that he could find no other account of Don Quixote's exploits, but what has already been related. True it is, that the second author of this work, could not believe that such a curious history was consigned to oblivion; nor, that there could be such a scarcity of curious virtuosi in La Mancha, but that some papers relating to this famous knight should be found in their archives or cabinets: and therefore, possessed of this opinion, he did not despair of finding the conclusion of this delightful history, which indeed he very providentially lighted upon, in the manner which will be related in the second book.

---

---

THE  
LIFE and ATCHIEVEMENTS

Of the Sagacious HIDALGO

DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

PART I. BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

The conclusion and consequence of the stupendous combat between the gallant Biscayan, and the valiant knight of La Mancha.

**I**N the first book of this history, we left the valiant Biscayan and renowned Don Quixote with their gleaming swords brandished aloft, about to discharge two such furious strokes, as must (if they had cut sheer) have cleft them both asunder, from top to toe, like a couple of pomegranates; and in this dubious and critical conjuncture, the delicious history abruptly breaks off, without our being informed by the author, where or how that which is wanting may be found.

I was not a little concerned at this disappointment; for, the pleasure I enjoyed in the little I had read, was changed into disgust, when I reflected on the small prospect I had of finding the greater part of this relishing story, which, in my opinion, was lost: and yet it seemed impossible, and contrary to every laudable custom, that such an excellent knight should be unprovided with some sage to undertake the history of his unheard-of exploits; a convenience which none of those knights-errant who went in quest of adventures ever wanted, each of them having been accommodated with one or two negromancers, on purpose to record not only his achievements, but even his most hidden thoughts and amusements. Surely then such a compleat errant could not be so unlucky as to want that, which even Platil, and other such second rate-warriors enjoyed.

I could



I could not therefore prevail upon myself to believe that such a spirited history was left so lame and unfinished, but laid the whole blame on the malignity of time, which wastes and devours all things, and by which, no doubt, this was either consumed or concealed: on the other hand, I considered, that as some books had been found in his library, so modern as the Undeceptions of jealousy, together with the Nymphs and Shepherds of Hena- res; his own history must also be of a modern date, and the circumstances, tho' not committed to writing, still fresh in the memory of his neighbours and townsmen. This consideration perplexed and inflamed me with the desire of knowing the true and genuine account of the life and wonderful exploits of our Spanish worthy Don Quixote de la Mancha, the sun and mirror of Manchegan chivalry, the first who in this our age, and these degenerate times, undertook the toil and exercise of errantry and arms, to redress grievances, support the widow, and protect those damsels who stroll about with whip and palfrey, from hill to hill, and from dale to dale, on the strength of their virginity alone: for, in times past, unless some libidinous clown with hachet and morrion, or monstrous giant, forced her to his brutal wishes, a damsel might have lived fourscore years, without ever lying under any other cover than that of heaven, and then gone to her grave as good a maiden as the mother that bore her. I say, therefore, that for these and many other considerations, our gallant Don Quixote merits incessant and immortal praise; and even I myself may claim some share, for my labour and diligence in finding the conclusion of this agreeable history; tho' I am well aware, that if I had not been favoured by fortune, chance or providence, the world would have been deprived of that pleasure and satisfaction which the attentive reader may enjoy for an hour or two, in perusing what follows:

While I was walking, one day, on the exchange of Toledo, a boy coming up to a certain mercer, offered to sell him a bundle of old papers he had in his hand: now, as I have always a strong propensity to read even those scraps that sometimes fly about the streets, I was led by this my natural curiosity, to turn over some of the leaves: I found them written in Arabic, which not being able to read, tho' I knew the characters, I looked about for some Portugueze Moor who should understand it; and indeed, tho' the language had been both more elegant and ancient, I might easily have found an interpreter. In short, I lighted upon one, to whom expressing my desire, and putting the pamphlet into his hands, he opened it in the middle, and after having read a few lines, began to laugh; when I asked the cause of his laughter, he said it was occasioned by a whimsical annotation in the margin of the book. I begged he would tell me what it was, and he answered, still laughing, "What I find written in the margin, is to this purpose: This same Dulcinea, so often mentioned in the history, is  
said

ſaid to have had the beſt hand at falting pork of any woman in la Mancha.”

Not a little ſurprized at hearing Dulcinea del Toboſo mentioned, I immediately conjectured that the bundle actually contained the hiſtory of Don Quixote: poſſeſſed with this notion, I bad him, with great eagernels, read the title page, which having peruſed, he translated it extempore from Arabic to Spaniſh, in theſe words: “ The hiſtory of Don Quixote de la Mancha, written by Cid Hamet Benengeli, an Arabian author.” No ſmall diſcretion was requiſite to diſſemble the ſatisfaction I felt, when my ears were ſaluted with the title of theſe papers, which ſnatching from the mercer, I immediately bought in the lump, for half a rial; tho’, if the owner had been cunning enough to diſcover my eagernels to poſſeſs them, he might have laid his account with getting twelve times the ſum by the bargain.

I then retired with my Moor, thro’ the cloyſters of the cathedral, and deſired him to tranſlate all thoſe papers that related to Don Quixote into the Caſtilian tongue, without addition or diminution, offering to pay any thing he ſhould charge for his labour: his demand was limited to two quarters of rafins, and as many buſhels of wheat, for which he promiſed to tranſlate them with great care, concifenefs and fidelity: but I, the more to facilitate the buſineſs, without parting with ſuch a rich prize, conducted him to my own houſe, where, in little leſs than ſix weeks, he translated the whole, in the ſame manner as ſhall here be related.

In the firſt ſheet, was painted to the life, the battle betwixt Don Quixote and the Biſcayan, who were repreſented in the ſame poſture as the hiſtory has already deſcribed, their ſwords brandiſhed aloft, one of the antagoniſts covered with his ſhield, the other with his cuſhion, and the Biſcayan’s mule ſo naturally ſet forth, that you might have known her to have been an hireling, at the diſtance of a bow-ſhot. Under the feet of her rider was a label, containing theſe words, Don Sancho de Azpetia, which was doubtleſs his name; and beneath our knight was another, with the title of Don Quixote. Rozinate was moſt wonderfully delineated, ſo long and raw-boned, ſo lank and meagre, ſo ſharp in the back, and conſumptive, that one might eaſily perceive, with what propriety and penetration the name of Rozinante had been beſtowed upon him. Hard by the ſteed was Sancho Panza, holding his aſs by the halter, at whoſe feet was a third label, inſcribed Sancho Zancas, who, in the picture, was repreſented as a perſon of a ſhort ſtature, ſwag belly, and long ſpindle ſhanks: for this reaſon, he ought to be called indiſcriminately by the names of \* Panza and Zancas; for by both theſe ſurnames is he ſometimes mentioned in hiſtory.

\* Panza, in Caſtilian, ſignifies Paunch; and Zancas, ſpindleſhanks.

There were divers other minute circumstances to be observed, but, all of them of small importance and concern to the truth of the history, tho' indeed nothing that is true can be impertinent: however, if any objection can be started to the truth of this, it can be no other, but that the author was an Arabian, of a nation but too much addicted to falsehood, tho' as they are at present our enemies, it may be supposed, that he has rather failed than exceeded in the representation of our hero's exploits: for, in my opinion, when he had frequently opportunities, and calls to exercise his pen in the praise of such an illustrious knight, he seems to be industriously silent on the subject; a circumstance very little to his commendation, for, all historians ought to be punctual, candid and dispassionate, that neither interest, rancour, fear, or affection may mislead them from the road of truth, whose mother is history, that rival of time, that repository of great actions, witness of the past, example and pattern of the present, and oracle of future ages. In this, I know, will be found whatsoever can be expected in the most pleasant performance; and if any thing seems imperfect, I affirm it must be owing to the fault of the infidel its author, rather than to any failure of the subject itself: in short, the second book in the translation begins thus:

The flaming swords of the two valiant and incensed combatants, brandished in the air, seemed to threaten heaven, earth, and hell, such was the rage and resolution of those that wielded them: but, the first blow was discharged by the choleric Biscayan, who struck with such force and fury, that if the blade had not turned by the way, that single stroke would have been sufficient to have put an end to this dreadful conflict, and all the other adventures of our knight; but, his good genius, which preserved him for raughtier things, turned the sword of his antagonist aside, so, that tho' it fell upon his left shoulder, it did no other damage than disarm that whole side, slicing off in its passage the greatest part of his helmet, with half of his ear, which fell to the ground, with hideous ruin, leaving him in a very uncomfortable situation. Good heavens! where is the man, who can worthily express the rage and indignation which entered into the heart of our Manchegan, when he saw himself handled in this manner? I shall only say, his fury was such, that raising himself again in his stirrups, and grasping his sword with both hands, he discharged it so full upon the cushion, and head of the Biscayan, which it but ill-defended, that, as if a mountain had fallen upon him, he began to spout blood from his nostrils, mouth and ears, and seemed ready to fall from his mule, which would certainly have been the case, if he had not laid hold of the mane: yet, notwithstanding this effort, his feet falling out of the stirrups, and his arms quitting their hold, the mule, which was frightened at the terrible stroke, began to run across the field, and after a few plunges, came with her master to the ground. Don Quixote,  
who

who sat observing him, with great tranquillity, no sooner perceived him fall, than leaping from his horse, he ran up to him with great agility, and setting the point of his sword to his throat, bad him surrender, on pain of having his head cut off. The Biscayan was so confounded by the blow and fall he had sustained, that he could not answer one syllable; and as Don Quixote was blinded by his rage, he would have fared very ill, if the ladies of the coach, who had hitherto, in great consternation, been spectators of the battle, had not run to the place where he was, and requested, with the most fervent intreaties, that his worship would grant them the favour to spare the life of their squire.

To this petition, the knight replied, with great stateliness and gravity, "Assuredly, most beautiful ladies, I am very ready to do what you desire, but, it shall be upon condition and proviso, that this cavalier promise to go strait to Toboso, and present himself, in my behalf, before the unparalleled Donna Dulcinea, that she may use him according to her good pleasure." The timorous and disconsolate ladies, without entering into the detail of what Don Quixote desired, or enquiring who this Dulcinea was, promised that the squire should obey the knight's commands in every thing. "Upon the faith of your word, then, said Don Quixote, I will do him no farther damage, tho' he has richly deserved it at my hand."

## C H A P. II.

Of what further happened between Don Quixote and the Biscayan.

ALL this time, Sancho Panza having got up, tho' very roughly handled by the lacquies of the fryars, stood very attentively beholding the battle of his master Don Quixote, and put up ejaculatory petitions to heaven, that it would please to grant him the victory, and that he might gain by it some island, of which he himself might be made governor, in consequence of the knight's promise. Seeing therefore the battle ended, and his master returning to mount Rozinante, he went to hold his stirrup, and before he got up, fell on his knees before him; then laying hold of his hand, and kissing it, pronounced with great fervency, "Sir Don Quixote, will your worship be pleased to bestow on me the government of that island which you have won in this dreadful combat; for, let it be ever so great, I find I have strength enough to govern it, as well as any he who governed an island in this world." To this request, Don Quixote replied; "You must know, brother Sancho, that such as these are not adventures,

ventures of islands, but frays that happen on the high road, in which there is nothing to be got but a broken head, with the loss of an ear: have a little patience, and we shall meet with adventures, which will enable me to make you not only a governor, but something more." Sancho made him many hearty acknowledgments for his promise, then kissing his hand again, and his coat of mail, helped him to mount Rozinante; and he himself getting upon his ass, followed his master, who set off at a round pace, and without bidding adieu, or speaking one syllable to those in the coach, entered a wood that was in the neighbourhood.

Sancho followed him as hard as his beast would trot; but Rozinante exerted such speed, that seeing himself left behind, he was obliged to call to his master to wait for him. The knight complied with his request, and checked his horse until he was overtaken by his weary squire; who, when he approached him: "Sir, said he, methinks it would be the wisest course for us to retreat to some church; for, as he with whom you fought remains but in a sorry condition, 'tis odds, but they inform the \* holy brotherhood of the affair, and have us apprehended: and verily, if they do, before we get out of prison we may chance to sweat for it." "Peace, Sancho, said Don Quixote, where didst thou ever see or hear, that a knight-errant was brought to justice for the greatest homicides he had committed?" "I know nothing of your honey-seeds, answered Sancho, nor in my life did I ever see one of them: this only, I know, that the holy brotherhood commonly looks after those who quarrel and fight up and down the country; and as to the other affair, I have no business to intermeddle in it."

"Set your heart at ease then, friend Sancho, replied Don Quixote, for, I will deliver you from the hands of the Philistines, much more from the clutches of the brotherhood: but, tell me, on thy life, hast thou ever seen a more valiant knight than me, in any country of the known world? Hast thou ever read in story of any other who possesses, or has possessed, more courage in attacking, more breath in persevering, more dexterity in wounding, and more agility in overthrowing his antagonist?" "The truth is, answered Sancho, I never read a history since I was born; for, indeed I can neither read nor write; but what I will make bold to wager upon, is, that a more daring master than your worship I never served in the days of my life; and I wish to God, that your courage may not meet with that reward I have already mentioned. What I beg of your worship at present, is, that you would allow me to dress that ear, which bleeds very much; for, I have got some lint, and a little white ointment in my wallet." "These would

\* Santa Hermandad was a brotherhood or society instituted in Spain in times of confusion, to suppress robbery, and render travelling safe.

have been altogether needless, answered the knight, if I had remembered to make a vial of the balsam of Fierabras, one single drop of which would save abundance of time and trouble." "What sort of a vial and balsam is that?" said Sancho Panza. "It is a balsam, replied Don Quixote, the receipt of which I retain in my memory, and he that possesses the valuable composition needs be in no fear of death, nor think of perishing by any wound whatsoever: and therefore, when I shall have made it, and delivered it into thy keeping, thou hast no more to do, when thou seest me in any combat, cut thro' the middle, a circumstance that very often happens, but to snatch up that part of the body which falls to the ground, and before the blood shall congeal, set it upon the other half that remains in the saddle, taking care to join them with the utmost nicety and exactness: then making me swallow a couple of draughts of the aforesaid balsam, thou wilt see me, in a twinkling, as whole and as sound as an apple."

"If that be the case, said Sancho Panza, I henceforth renounce the government of that island you promised me, and desire no other reward for my long and faithful service, but that your worship will give me the receipt of that same most exceeding liquor; for, I imagine, that it will sell for two rials an ounce at least, and that will be sufficient to make me spend the rest of my days in credit and ease: but, it will be necessary to know, if the composition be costly." "I can make a gallon of it for less than three rials," replied the knight. "Sinner that I am! cried Sancho, what hinders your worship from teaching me to make it, this moment?" "Hold thy tongue, friend, said the knight, I intend to teach thee greater secrets, and bestow upon thee more considerable rewards than that: but, in the mean time, let us dress my ear, which pains me more than I could wish."

The squire accordingly took out his lint and ointment; but when his master found, that his helmet was quite demolished, he had almost run stark mad: he laid his hand upon his sword, and lifting up his hands to heaven, pronounced aloud, "I swear by the creator of all things, and by all that is written in the four holy evangelists! to lead the life which the great marquis of Mantua led, when he swore to revenge the death of his cousin Valdovinos: neither to eat food upon a table, nor enjoy his wife, with many other things, which, tho' I do not remember, I here consider as expressed, until I shall have taken full vengeance upon him who has done me this injury\*." Sancho hearing this invocation, "Sir Don Quixote,

\* These ridiculous oaths or vows are not confined to romances. Philip the good duke of Burgundy, at a public banquet, vowed to God, the holy virgin, the peacock and the ladies, that he would declare war against the infidels; and a great number of persons who were present listed themselves under the same vow, and incurred voluntarily penance until it should be accomplished. Some swore they would never lie upon a bed, others renounced the use of a table cloth, a third set obliged themselves to fast one particular day in the week, a fourth went without one particular piece of armour, a fifth wore his armour night and day, and many confined themselves to shirts of sackcloth and hair.

said

said he, I hope your worship will consider, that if the knight shall accomplish what he was ordered to do; namely, to present himself before my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, he will have done his duty, and certainly deserves no other punishment, unless he commits a new crime." "Thou hast spoke very much to the purpose, and hit the nail on the head, replied Don Quixote, therefore I annul my oath, so far as it regards my revenge, but I make and confirm it anew, to lead the life I have mentioned, until such time as I can take by force as good a helmet as this from some other knight; and thou must not think, Sancho, that I am now making a smoke of straw; for, I know very well whom I imitate in this affair; the same thing having literally happened about the helmet of Mambrino, which cost Sacripante so dear \*."

"Sir, Sir, replied Sancho with some heat, I wish your worship would send to the devil all such oaths, which are so mischievous to the health, and prejudicial to the conscience; for, tell me now, if we should not find in many days, a man armed with a helmet, what must we do? must we perform this vow, in spite of all the rubs and inconveniencies in the way: such as to lye in one's cloaths, and not to sleep in an inhabited place, with a thousand other penances contained in the oath of that old mad marquis of Mantua, which your worship now wants to renew? Pray, Sir, consider that there are no armed people in these roads, none but carriers and carters, which, far from wearing helmets themselves, perhaps never heard of any such thing during the whole course of their lives." "There thou art egregiously mistaken, replied Don Quixote, for, before we are two hours in these cross-ways, we shall see armed men more numerous than those that came to Albraca, in order to win Angelica the fair." "On then, and be it so, said Sancho, and pray God we may succeed, and that the time may come, when we shall gain that island which has cost me so dear, and then I care not how soon I die." "I have already advised thee, Sancho, said the knight, to give thyself no trouble about that affair; for, should we be disappointed in the expectation of an island, there is the kingdom of Denmark, or that of Sobrediza, which will suit thee as well as ever a ring fitted a finger, and ought to give thee more joy, because it is situated on terra firma; but, let us leave these things to the determination of time; and see if thou hast got any thing in thy wallet; for, we must go presently in quest of some castle, where we

\* Geoffroi de Rançon having been injured by the count de la Marche, swore by the saints that he would wear his buskin like a woman, and never suffer himself to be shaved, in the manner of chivalry, until he should be revenged. This oath he scrupulously observed, until he saw his adversary with his wife and children kneeling in distress before the king, and imploring his forgiveness; then he called for a stool, adjusted his buskin, and was shaved in presence of his majesty and all the court.

The knight's forehead was commonly shaved, that in case he should lose his helmet in combat, his antagonist should have no hold by which he might be pulled off his horse.

may procure a night's lodging, and ingredients to make that same balsam I mentioned; for, I vow to God! my ear gives me infinite pain."

"I have got here in my bags, said Sancho, an onion, a slice of cheese, and a few crusts of bread; but, these are eatables which do not suit the palate of such a valiant knight-errant as your worship." "How little you understand of the matter? answered Don Quixote. Thou must know, Sancho, that it is for the honour of knights-errant, to abstain whole months together from food, and when they do eat, to be contented with what is next at hand; this thou wouldst not have been ignorant of, hadst thou read so many histories as I have perused, in which, numerous as they are, I have never found any account of knights-errant eating, except occasionally, at some sumptuous banquet made on purpose for them; at other times, living upon air: and tho' it must be taken for granted, that they could not altogether live without eating, or complying with the other necessities of nature, being in effect men as we are; yet we are likewise to consider, that as the greatest part of their lives was spent in travelling thro' woods and deserts, without any cook or caterer, their ordinary diet was no other than such rustic food as thou hast now got for our present occasions\*: therefore, friend Sancho, give thyself no uneasiness, because thou hast got nothing to gratify the palate, nor seek to unhinge or alter the constitution of things." "I beg your worship's pardon, said Sancho, for, as I can neither read nor write, as I have already observed, I may have mistaken the rules of your knightly profession; but, from henceforward, I will store my budget with all sorts of dry fruits for your worship, who are a knight, and for myself who am none, I will provide other more volatile and substantial food." "I do not say, Sancho, that knights-errant are obliged to eat nothing except these fruits, but only that their most ordinary sustenance is composed of them and some certain herbs, which they know how to gather in the fields; a species of knowledge which I myself am no stranger to." "Surely, answered Sancho, it is a great comfort to know those same herbs; for, it comes into my head, we shall one day or another, have occasion to make use of the knowledge;" and taking out the contents of his wallet, they ate together with great harmony and satisfaction; but, being desirous of finding some place for their night's lodging, they finished their humble repast in a hurry, and mounting their beasts, put on at a good rate, in order to reach some village before it should be dark: but the hope of gratifying that desire failed them with day-light, just when they happened to be near a goat-

\* We read in Perceforest, that there were flat stones placed at certain distances in uninhabited parts of the country, for the use of knights errant, who having killed a roe-buck, pressed the blood out of it upon one of these tables, by the help of another smooth stone, and then ate it with some salt and spices which they carried along with them for that purpose. This diet is called in the French romances, *Chevaux de presse, nourriture des Héraux.*



herd's hut, in which they resolved to pass the night, and in the same proportion that Sancho was disgusted at not being able to reach some village, his master was rejoiced at an opportunity of sleeping under the cope of heaven, because he looked upon every occasion of this kind as an act of possession, that strengthened the proof of his knight-errantry.

## C H A P. III.

Of what happened to Don Quixote, while he remained with the goat-herds.

**H**E received a very hearty welcome from the goatherds, and Sancho having, as well as he could, accommodated Rozinante and his ass, was attracted by the odour that issued from some pieces of goat's flesh, that were boiling in a kettle; but though he longed very much, at that instant, to see if it was time to transfer them from the kettle to the belly, he checked his curiosity, because the landlord took them from the fire, and spreading some sheep-skins upon the ground, set out their rustic table without loss of time; inviting their two guests to a share of their meals, with many expressions of good will and hospitality. Then those who belonged to the cot, being six in number, seated themselves round the skins, having first, with their boorish ceremony, desired Don Quixote to sit down on a trough, which they had overturned for that purpose.

The knight accepted their offer, and Sancho remained standing, to administer the cup, which was made of horn: but, his master perceiving him in this attitude, "That thou mayst see, Sancho, said he, the benefit which is concentrated in knight-errantry; and how near all those, who exercise themselves in any sort of ministry belonging to it, are to preferment and esteem of the world, I desire thee to sit down here by my side, in company with these worthy people: and that thou mayst be on an equal footing with me, thy natural lord and master, eating in the same dish, and drinking out of the same cup that I use; for what is said of love may be observed of knight-errantry, that it puts all things upon a level."

"I give you a thousand thanks, said Sancho; but, I must tell your worship that, provided I have plenty, I can eat as much, nay, more to my satisfaction, standing on my legs, and in my own company, than if I was to sit by the side of an emperor: and, if all the truth must be told, I had much rather dine by myself in a corner, though it should be upon a bit of bread and an onion, without all your niceties and ceremonies, than eat turkey-cocks at another man's table, where I am obliged to chew softly, to drink sparingly, to wipe my mouth every minute, to abstain  
from

from sneezing or coughing, though I should be never so much inclined to either, and from a great many other things, which I can freely do, when alone: therefore, sir master of mine, I hope these honours which your worship would put upon me, as being the servant and abettor of knight-errantry, which to be sure I am, while I remain in quality of your squire, may be converted into other things of more ease and advantage to me, than those which, though I hold them as received in full, I renounce from henceforth for ever, amen." "Thou must nevertheless, sit thee down, said his master; for, him that is humble God will exalt;" and, seizing him by the arm, he pulled him down to the seat on which he himself sat.

The goatherds, who understood not a word of all this jargon of squire and knights-errant, did nothing but eat in silence, and gaze upon their guests, who with keen appetite, and infinite relish, solaced their stomachs, by swallowing pieces as large as their fists. This service of meat being finished, they spread upon their skins great quantities of acorns, and half a cheese, harder than plaister of Paris: all this time, the horn was not idle, but went round so fast, sometimes full, sometimes empty, like the buckets of a well, that they soon voided one of the two skins of wine that hung in view.

Don Quixote having satisfied his appetite, took up an handful of the acorns, and after looking at them attentively, delivered himself to this purpose: "Happy age, and happy days were those, to which the antients gave the name of golden; not, that gold, which in these our iron-times is so much esteemed, was to be acquired without trouble, in that fortunate period; but, because people then were ignorant of those two words MINE and THINE: in that sacred age, all things were in common; no man was necessitated, in search of his daily food, to undergo any other trouble than that of reaching out his hand, and receiving it from the sturdy oak, that liberally invited him to pull his sweet and salutary fruit. The limpid fountains and murmuring rills afforded him their savoury and transparent waters in magnificent abundance. In clefts of rocks and hollow trees, the prudent and industrious bees formed their commonwealths, offering without interest, to every hand the fruitful harvest of their delicious toil. The stately cork-trees voluntarily stripped themselves of their light extended bark, with which men began to cover their rural cottages, supported upon rustic poles, with a view only to defend themselves from the inclemencies of the weather. All was then peace, all was harmony, and all was friendship. As yet, the ponderous coulter of the crooked plough had not presumed to open, or visit the pious entrails of our first mother, who, without compulsion, presented, on every part of her wide and fertile bosom, every thing that could satisfy, sustain and delight her sons, who then possessed

possessed her. Then did the simple and beautiful shepherdesses rove from hill to hill, and dale to dale, without any other cloaths than what were necessary to cover modestly that which modesty commands, and always has commanded, to be covered. Neither were their ornaments such as are used now-a-days, enhanced in value by the Tyrian purple, and the many ways martyred silk, but composed of verdant dock-leaves and ivy interwove together; with which they appeared, perhaps with as great pomp and contrivance, as the courtiers of our days, dressed in all the rare and foreign fashions which idle curiosity has invented. Then were the amorous dictates of the soul expressed in sensible simplicity, just as they were conceived, undisguised by the artificial cloak of specious words. There was no fraud, no deceit, no malice intermixed with plain-dealing truth: justice then kept within her proper bounds, undisturbed and unbiassed by interest and favour, which now impair, confound, and persecute her so much: law was not then centered in the arbitrary bosom of the judge, for, at that time, there was neither cause nor contest. Damsels and decency, as I have already said, went about single, and without fear of being injured by insolence or lust; and their ruin, when it happened, was the fruit of their own will and pleasure. But, now-a-days, in this detestable age, no maid is secure, though she was concealed, and shut up in such another labyrinth as was that of Crete; for, even there, the amorous pestilence, with the zeal of mischievous importunity, would enter, either by the help of wings, or by gliding through some chink or other, and all her barricaded chastity would go to wreck. For the security of this virtue, in process of time, when mischief grew to a greater head, the order of knight-errantry was first instituted to defend damsels, protect widows, and succour the needy and the fatherless. This order, brother goatherds, I profess, and thank you for this kind entertainment and reception, which I and my squire have received at your hands: for though, by the law of nature, all mankind are obliged to favour and assist knights-errant, during the whole course of their lives; yet, as you have received and regaled me, before you knew yourselves to be under that obligation, I think it my duty to return my most sincere acknowledgment for your hospitality."

The whole of this tedious harrangue, which might very well have been spared, was pronounced by our knight, because the acorns they presented recalled to his memory the golden age: therefore he took it in his head to make these useless reflections to the goatherds, who without answering one syllable, listened with suspense and astonishment. Sancho was also silent, but, kept his teeth employed upon the acorns, and paid many a visit to the second wine-bag, which that the contents might be the cooler, was hung upon a

cork-

cork-tree. Don Quixote was less tedious in his discourse than at his meal, which being ended, one of the goatherds said, "That your worship knight-errant, may be convinced of our readiness and good will to give you all the entertainment in our power, you shall have the pleasure and satisfaction of hearing a song from one of our companions, who will soon be here. He is an understanding young fellow, very much in love, who moreover, can read and write, and play upon the rebec\*, that it will delight you to hear him." Scarce had the goatherd pronounced these words, when their ears were saluted with the sound of this instrument, and presently after appeared the musician, who was a young fellow of about twenty, or twenty two years of age, and of a very graceful appearance. His companions asked him if he had supped, and he answering in the affirmative, one of them, who made the offer to the knight, said to him, "If that be the case, Antonio, you will do us the pleasure to sing a song, that this gentleman our guest may see, there are some even among these woods and mountains who understand music. We have already informed him of thy uncommon talents, and we desire thou wouldst shew them, in order to justify what we have said in thy praise; I therefore, earnestly beseech thee to sit down, and sing the ballad of thy love, composed by thy uncle the curate, which is so much commended in our village." "With all my heart," replied the young man, who without farther intreaty sat down upon the trunk of an ancient oak, and tuning his instrument, began in a very graceful manner to sing and accompany the following song.

## I.

YOU love, Olalla, nay adore me ;  
 In spite of all your art I know it,  
 Although you never smile before me,  
 And neither tongue nor eyes avow it.

## II.

For, sure to slight a lover's passion,  
 So try'd as that which lives this heart in,  
 Were but small proof of penetration ;  
 And that you are no fool is certain.

## III.

Sometimes, indeed, and 'tis amazing,  
 Though prov'd by evidence of twenty,  
 You've plainly shewn your soul was brazen,  
 And eke your snowy bosom flinty.

\* A sort of small fiddle of one piece, with three strings, used by shepherds.

## IV.

Yet, in the midst of maiden shyness,  
 Affected scorn and decent scolding,  
 Kind Hope appear'd with proffer'd spy-glass,  
 The border of her robe unfolding.

## V.

Then balance in the scales of reason,  
 My love unshaken and untainted,  
 Unapt to change from truth to treason,  
 By frowns impair'd, by smiles augmented.

## VI.

If love be courtesy refin'd,  
 And you be civil to profusion,  
 That you will to my hopes prove kind,  
 Is but a natural conclusion.

## VII.

If gratitude that breast can soften,  
 Which bids to other arts defiance,  
 The services I've render'd often,  
 Must melt your soul to kind compliance.

## VIII.

For, more than once, had you attended,  
 You might have seen me wear on Monday,  
 My best apparel scour'd and mended,  
 With which I went to honour Sunday.

## IX.

As love delights in finery,  
 And women oft are won by tightness,  
 I've still endeavour'd in your eye,  
 To shine the mirror of politeness.

## X.

That I have danc'd the swains among,  
 To please your pride what need I mention,  
 Or with the cock begun my song,  
 To wake my sleeping fair's attention.

## XI.

Or that, enamour'd of your beauty,  
 I've loudly sounded forth it's praises;  
 A task which though a lover's duty,  
 The spite of other women raises.

## XII.

For, once, Terefa of the hill,  
 Beneath all notice would have funk ye,  
 “ You think Olalla angel fill,  
 (Said she) but others scorn the monkey.

## XIII.

Thanks to her beads of glittering glafs,  
 And her falſe locks in ringlets curling,  
 And the falſe colour of her face,  
 Which Love himſelf might take for ſterling.”

## XIV.

She ly'd, I told her in her throat ;  
 And when her kinsman kept a racket,  
 You know, I made him change his note,  
 And ſoundly threſh'd the booby's jacket.

## XV.

Your lovely perſon, not your wealth,  
 At firſt engag'd my inclination ;  
 Nor would I now poſſeſs by ſtealth,  
 The guilty joys of fornication.

## XVI.

The church has filken ties in ſtore,  
 Then yield thy neck to Hymen's fetters ;  
 Behold, I put my own before,  
 And truſt the nooſe that binds our betters.

## XVII.

Elſe, by each bleſſed faint I ſwear,  
 And Heav'n forbid I prove a lyar !  
 Never to quit this deſart drear,  
 Except in form of hooded fryar.

The reader will perceive that I have endeavoured to adapt the verification to the plainneſs and ruſticity of the ſentiment, which are preſerved through the whole of this ballad ; though all the other tranſlators ſeem to have been bent upon ſetting the poetry at variance with the paſtoral ſimplicity of the thoughts. For example, who would ever dream of a goatherd's addreſſing his miſtreſs in theſe terms :

With rapture on each charm I dwell,  
 And daily ſpread thy beauty's fame ;  
 And ſtill my tongue thy praiſe ſhall tell,  
 Though envy ſwell, or malice blame.

The original ſentiments which this courtly ſtanza is deſigned to tranſlate, are literally theſe.

“ I do not mention the praiſes I have ſpoke of your beauty, which, though true in fact, are the occaſion of my being hated by ſome other women.”

Thus

Thus ended the goatherd's ditty, and though Don Quixote desired him to sing another, yet Sancho Panza would by no means give his consent, being more inclined to take his natural rest, than to hear ballads; and therefore, he said to his master, "Your worship had better consider where you are to lodge this night; for, the labour that these honest men undergo in the day, will not suffer them to pass the night in singing." "I understand thee, Sancho, replied the knight, it plainly appears that the visits thou hast made to the wine-bag, demand the consolation of sleep, rather than that of music." "They agreed with us all very well, blessed be God;" replied Sancho. "I do not deny it, said the knight, and thou mayst bestow thyself in the best manner thou canst; but it is more seemly for those of my profession to watch than to sleep: it would not be amiss, however, Sancho, to dress my ear again; for, it gives me more pain than I could wish." Sancho did as he desired: when one of the goatherds perceiving the wound, bad him give himself no trouble about it, for, he would apply a remedy that would heal it in a trice; so saying, he took some leaves of rosemary, which grew in great plenty round the hut, and having chewed, and mixed them with a little salt, applied the poultice to his ear, and binding it up carefully, assured him, as it actually happened, that it would need no other plaster.

## C H A P. IV.

What was related by a goatherd, who chanced to come into the hut.

**I**N the mean time, one of the lads who brought them victuals from the village, entering the hut, said, "Do you know what has happened in our town, comrades?" When one of them answered, "How should we." "Know then, continued he, that the famous student Chrysofom died this morning; and it is murmured about, that his death was occasioned by his love for that devilish girl Marcella, daughter of William the Rich. She that roves about these plains in the habit of a shepherdess." "For Marcella, said you?" cried one, "The same, answered the goatherd, and it is certain, that in his last will, he ordered himself to be buried in the field, like a Moor, (God bless us!) at the foot of the rock hard by the cork-tree-spring; for, the report goes, and they say, he said so himself, as how the first time he saw her, was in that place; and he has also ordained many other such things, as the clergy say, must not be accomplished, nor is it right they should be accomplished; for truly, they seem quite heathenish: to all which objections his dear friend, Ambrosio the student,

who also dressed himself like a shepherd, to keep him company, replies that he will perform every thing without fail, that Crysoftom has ordered; and the whole village is in an uproar about it. But, it is believed, that every thing at last, will be done according to the desire of Ambrosio, and all the rest of the shepherds, his friends; and that to-morrow, he will be interred with great pomp in the very spot I have mentioned. I am resolved therefore, as it will be a thing well worth seeing, to go thither without fail, even though I thought, I should not be able to return to the village that night." "We will do so too, replied the goatherds, and cast lots to see which of us must stay and take care of our flocks." "You are in the right, Pedro, said one, but, there will be no occasion to use that shift; for, I myself will stay, and take care of the whole, and you must not impute my tarrying to virtue, or the want of curiosity, but, to the plaguy thorn that ran into my foot the other day, and hinders me from walking." "We are obliged to thee, however," answered Pedro, whom Don Quixote desired to tell him, who that same dead shepherd, and living shepherdes were.

To this question the goatherd replied, all that he knew of the matter, was, that the deceased was the son of a rich farmer, who lived in the neighbourhood of a village, in these mountains; that he had studied in Salamanca many years, at the end of which he had returned to his family with the character of a great scholar: in particular, they said, he was very knowing in the science of the stars, and what passed betwixt the sun and moon, and the heavens; for, he had punctually foretold the eclipse of them both! "The obscuration of those two great luminaries, said the knight, is called the eclipse, and not theclipse, friend." But, Pedro without troubling his head with these trifles, proceeded, saying, "he likewise, foresaw when the year would be plentiful or staril": "You mean sterile," said Don Quixote. "Sterile, or staril, replied Pedro, comes all to the same purpose; and I say, that his father and his friends taking his advice, became very rich; for, they gave credit to his words, and followed his counsel in all things. When he would say, this year you must sow barley, and no wheat; here you must sow carabances, but no barley: next year there will be a good harvest of oil; but, for three years to come there will not be a drop." "That science, replied Don Quixote, is called astrology." "I know not how it is called, replied Pedro; but, this I know, that he knew all this; and much more. In short, not many months after he came from Salamanca, he appeared all of a sudden, in shepherd-weeds, with his woolly jacket, and a flock of sheep, having laid aside the long dress of a student. And he was accompanied by a friend of his in the same habit, whose name was Ambrosio, and who had been his



his fellow-student at college. I forgot to tell you, that Chrysofom the defunct, was such a great man at composing couplets, that he made carols for Christmaseve, and plays for the Lord's-day, which were represented by the young men in our village; and every body said, that they were tip-top. When the people of the village saw the two scholars, so suddenly clothed like shepherds, they were surprized, and could not guess their reason for such an odd chance. About that time, the father of this Chrysofom dying, he inherited great riches, that were in moveables and in lands, with no small number of sheep more or less, and a great deal of money: of all which, this young man remained desolate lord and master; and truly he deserved it all; for, he was an excellent companion, very charitable, a great friend to good folks, and had a most blessed countenance. Afterwards, it came to be known, that his reason for changing his garb, was no other, than with a view of strolling through the woods, and desarts after that same shepherdes Marcella, whose name my friend mentioned just now, and with whom the poor defunct Chrysofom was woundily in love: and I will now tell you, for, it is necessary, that you should know, who this wench is: for, mayhap, nay even without a mayhap you never heard of such a thing in all the days of your life, though you be older than \* St. Paul." " Say Paul's," replied Don Quixote, offended at the goatherd's perverting of words. " St. Paul was no chicken, replied Pedro, and if your worship be resolved to correct my words every moment, we shall not have done in a twelvemonth." " I ask your pardon, friend, said the knight; I only mention this, because there is a wide difference between the person of St. Paul, and a church that goes by his name: but, however, you made a very sensible reply; for, to be sure, the faint lived long before the church was built; therefore go on with your story, and I promise not to interrupt you agen."

" Well then, my good master, said the goatherd, there lived in our village a farmer, still richer than Chrysofom's father; his name was William, and God gave him, over and above great wealth, a daughter, who at her birth was the death of her mother, the most worthy dame in all the country. Methinks I see her now with that face of hers, which seemed to have the sun on one side, and the moon on the other; she was an excellent houswife, and a great friend to the poor, for which reason I believe her soul is enjoying the presence of God in paradise. Her husband died of grief for the loss of so good a wife, leaving his daughter Marcella, young and rich, to the care of an uncle, who has got a living in our

\* In the original Spanish, the goatherd, instead of saying as old as Sarah, says as old as Sarna, which in that language signifies the itch; but as it impossible to preserve these mistakes in the Translation, I have substituted another in its room, which I apprehended is equally natural and expressive.

village.

village. The girl grew up with so much beauty, that she put us in mind of her mother, who had a great share, and yet it was thought, it would be surpassed by the daughter's. It happened accordingly, for when she came to the age of fourteen or fifteen, nobody could behold her without blessing God, for having made so beautiful a creature; and every body almost grew desperately in love with her. Her uncle kept her up with great care; but, for all that, the fame of her exceeding beauty spread in such a manner, that both for her person and her fortune, not only the richest people in our town, but likewise in many leagues about, came to ask her in marriage of her uncle, with much importunity and sollicitation. But, he, who to give him his due, was a good christian, although he wanted to dispose of her as soon as she came to an age fit for matrimony, would not give her away without her own consent; neither had he a view in deferring her marriage, to the gain and advantage which he might enjoy in managing the girl's fortune. And truly I have heard this spoken in more companies than one, very much to the praise of the honest priest. For, I would have you know, sir traveller, that in these small towns, people intermeddle and grumble about every thing. And this you may take for certain, as I know it to be so, that a clergyman must be excessively good indeed, if he can oblige his flock to speak well of him, especially in country villages." "You are certainly in the right, said Don Quixote, and pray go on, for your story is very entertaining, and you, honest Pedro, relate it with a good grace." "May I never want God's grace, said the shepherd; for, that is the main chance: and you must know, moreover, that though the uncle proposed to his niece, and described the good qualities of each in particular who asked her in marriage, desiring her to give her hand to some one, or other, and chuse for herself; she never would give him any other answer, but that she did not chuse to marry, for, she was too young to bear the burden of matrimony. On account of these excuses, which seemed to have some reason in them, her uncle forbore to importune her, and waited till she should have more years, and discernment to make choice of her own company; for, he said, and to be sure, it was well said, that parents should never dispose of their children against their own inclinations. But, behold, when we least thought of it, the timorous Marcella, one day, appeared in the habit of a shepherdess; and without imparting her design to her uncle, or any body in the village, for fear they might have dissuaded her from it, she took to the field with her own flock, in company of the other damsels of the village. As she now appeared in public, and her beauty was exposed to the eyes of every body, you cannot conceive what a number of rich youths, gentlemen, and farmers immediately took the garb of Chrysofom, and went wooing

wooing her through the fields. One of these suitors, as you have heard, was the deceased, who they say, left off loving to adore her; and you must not think, that because Marcella took to this free and unconfined way of living, she brought the least disparagement upon her chastity and good name; on the contrary, such is the vigilance with which she guards her honour, that of all those who serve and solicit her, not one has boasted, nor indeed can boast with any truth, that she has given him the smallest hope of accomplishing his desire; for, though she neither flies, or avoids the company and conversation of the shepherds, but, treats them in a courteous and friendly manner; whenever any one of them comes to disclose his intention, let it be ever so just and holy, even marriage itself, she throws him from her, like a stone from a sling: and being of this disposition, does more damage in this country, than if a pestilence had seized it; for, her affability and beauty allures all the hearts of those that converse with her to serve and love her; but, her coyness and plain-dealing drives them even to the borders of despair; therefore, they know not what to say, but, upbraid her with cruelty and ingratitude, and give her a great many such titles, as plainly shew the nature of her disposition: and if your worship was but to stay here one day, you would hear these hills and dales resound with the lamentations of her rejected followers. Not far from this place, there is a tuft of about a dozen of tall beeches, upon every one of which, you may read engraved the name of Marcella, and over some a crown cut out in the bark, as if her lover would have declared, that Marcella wears, and deserves to wear, the crown of all earthly beauty. Here one shepherd sighs, there another complains; in one place you may hear amorous ditties; in another the dirges of despair; one lover sits musing through all the hours of the night, at the foot of some tall ash, or rugged rock, and there, without having closed his weeping eyes, shrunk up as it were, and entranced in his own reflections, he is found by the rising sun; a second, without giving respite, or truce to his sighs, exposed to the heat of the most sultry summer's sun, lies stretched upon the burning sand, breathing his complaints to pitying Heaven; and over this and that, and these and those, the free, the unconcerned, the fair Marcella triumphs. We who are acquainted with her disposition, wait with impatience to see the end of all this disdain, and long to know what happy man will tame such an unsociable humour, and enjoy such exceeding beauty. As every thing that I have recounted is true to a tittle, I have no reason to doubt the truth of what our comrades said concerning the cause of Chrysofom's death; and therefore, I advise you, sir, not to fail being to-morrow at his burial, which will be well worth seeing; for, Chrysofom had a great many  
friends,

friends, and the spot in which he ordered himself to be buried is not more than half a league from hence."

"I will take care to be present, said the knight, and thank you heartily for the pleasure you have given me in relating such an interesting story." "Oh! as for that, cried the goatherd, I do not know one half of what has happened to the lovers of Marcella; but, to-morrow perhaps, we may light upon some shepherd on the road, who is better acquainted with them. In the mean time you will do well to go to sleep under some cover, though the remedy I have applied is such, that you have nothing else to fear."

Sancho Panza, who wished the goatherd's loquacity at the devil, earnestly intreated his master to go to sleep in Pedro's hut. This request the knight complied with, and spent the greatest part of the night in thinking of his lady Dulcinea, in imitation of Marcella's lovers. While Sancho Panza taking up his lodging betwixt Rozinante and his ass, slept soundly, not like a discarded lover, but, like one who had been battered and bruised the day before.

#### C H A P. V.

The conclusion of the story of the shepherdes Marcella, and other incidents.

SCARCE had Aurora disclosed herself through the balconies of the east, when five of the six goatherds, arising, went to waken Don Quixote, and told him, that if he continued in his resolution of going to see the famous funeral of Chrysofom, they would keep him company. The knight, who desired nothing better, arose, and commanded Sancho to saddle his horse and pannel his ass immediately. This order was executed with great dispatch, and they set out without loss of time. They had not travelled more than a quarter of a league, when, upon crossing a path, they saw coming towards them six shepherds, clothed in jackets of black sheep-skin, and crowned with garlands of cypress, and bitter-bay, each having a club of holly in his hand. Along with them, came also two gentlemen on horseback very well equipped for travel, accompanied by three young men on foot.

When they advanced, they saluted one another, and understanding, upon enquiry, that they were all bound to the place of interment, they joined company, and travelled together. One of the horsemen said to his companion, "Signor Vivaldo, we shall not have reason to grudge our tarrying to see this famous funeral, which must certainly be very extraordinary,

dinary, by the strange account we have received from these people, of the dead shepherd, and the murderous shepherdes." "I am of the same opinion, answered Vivaldo, and would not only tarry one day, but even four or five, on purpose to see it." Don Quixote asking what they had heard of Marcella and Chrysofom, the traveller replied, that, early in the morning, they had met with these shepherds, of whom enquiring the cause of their being clothed in such melancholy weeds, they had been informed of the coyness and beauty of a certain shepherdes called Marcella, and the hapless love of many who courted her, together with the death of that same Chrysofom to whose funeral they were going. In short, he recounted every circumstance of what Pedro had told Don Quixote before.

This conversation being ended, another began by Vivaldo's asking Don Quixote, why he travelled thus in armour, in a peaceable country? To this question the knight replied, "The exercise of my profession will not permit or allow me to go in any other manner. Revels, feasting, and repose were invented by effeminate courtiers; but, toil, anxiety, and arms are peculiar to those whom the world calls knights-errant, of which order I, though unworthy, and the least, am one." He had no sooner pronounced these words, than all present took him for a madman: but, in order to confirm their opinion, and discover what species of madness it was, Vivaldo desired to know what he meant by knights-errant." "What! said Don Quixote, have you never read the annals and history of England, which treat of the famous exploits of Arthur, who, at present, in our Castilian language, is called King Artus, and of whom, there is an ancient tradition, generally believed all over Great-Britain, that he did not die, but was, by the art of enchantment, metamorphosed into a raven: and, that the time will come, when he shall return, and recover his scepter and throne: For which reason, it cannot be proved, that from that period to this, any Englishman has killed a raven. In the reign of that excellent king was instituted that famous order of chivalry, called the Knights of the Round-Table; and those amours punctually happened, which are recounted of Don Lancelot of the Lake, with queen Ginebra, by the help and mediation of that sage and venerable duenna Quitaniona; from whence that delightful ballad, so much sung in Spain, took its rise:

For never sure was any knight  
 So serv'd by damsel, or by dame,  
 As Lancelot, that man of might,  
 When he at first from Britain came:

With the rest of that most relishing and delicious account of his amours, and valiant exploits. From that time, the order of knight-errantry was

extended, as it were, from hand to hand, and spread thro' divers and sundry parts of the world, producing, among many other worthies celebrated for their atchievements, the valiant Amadis de Gaul, with all his sons and nephew even to the fifth generation; the courageous Fleximarte of Hircania, the never-enough to be commended Tirante the white, and he whom, in this our age, we have as it were seen, heard, and conversed with, the invincible and valorous knight Don Belianis of Greece. This, gentlemen, is what I meant by knight-errant; and such as I have described, is the order of chivalry, which, as I have already told you, I, tho' a sinner, have professed, and the very same which those knights I mentioned, professed, I profess also. On which account, I am found in these desarts and solitudes, in quest of adventures, fully determined to lift my arm, and expose my person to the greatest danger that my destiny shall decree, in behalf of the needy and oppressed."

By this declaration, the travellers were convinced that the knight had lost his wits, and easily perceived the species of folly which had taken possession of his brain, and which struck them with the same surprize that always seized those who became acquainted with our knight. Vivaldo, who was a person of discretion, and a great deal of archness, in order to travel agreeably the rest of the road which they had to go, till they should come to the place of interment, wanted to give him an opportunity of proceeding in his extravagance, and in that view, said to him: "Sir knight-errant, methinks your worship professes one of the strictest orders upon earth, nay, I will affirm more strict than that of the Carthusian friars."

"The order of the Carthusians, answered Don Quixote, may be as strict, but, that it is as beneficial to mankind, I am within a hair's breadth of doubting; for, to be plain with you, the soldier who executes his captain's command, is no less valuable than the captain who gave the order: I mean, that the monks pray to God for their fellow-creatures in peace and safety; but, we soldiers and knights put in execution that for which they pray by the valour of our arms, and the edge of our swords; living under no other cover than the cope of heaven, set up in a manner as marks for the intolerable heat of the sun in summer, and the chilling breath of frosty winter: we are therefore God's ministers, and the arms by which he executes his justice upon earth; and as the circumstances of war, and what has the least affinity and concern with it, cannot be accomplished without sweat, anxiety and fatigue; it follows, that those who profess it, are doubtless more subject to toil than those who in rest and security implore the favour of God for persons who can do nothing for themselves: not, that I would be thought to say, or imagine, the condition of a knight-errant is equal to that of a recluse monk; I would only infer from what we suffer, that it

is without doubt more troublesome, more battered, more famished, more miserable, ragged and lousy; for, the knights-errant of past times, certainly underwent numberless misfortunes in the course of their lives: and if some of them came to be emperors by the valour of their arms, considering the blood and sweat it cost them; in faith, it was a dear purchase: and if those who attained such a supreme station, had been without their sage enchanters to assist them, they might have been defrauded by their desires, and grievously balked of their expectations."

"I am very much of your opinion, answered the traveller; but, there is one thing among you knights-errant, that I cannot approve of, and that is, when any great and dangerous adventure occurs, in which you run a manifest risk of losing your lives, in the instant of engagement, you never think of recommending your souls to God, as every christian ought to do on such occasions; but, on the contrary, put up your petitions to your mistresses, with as much fervour and devotion as if they were your deities; a circumstance which in my opinion smells strong of paganism." "Sir, replied Don Quixote, that practice must in no degree be altered; and woe be to that knight-errant who should do otherwise; for, according to the practice and custom of chivalry, every knight, when he is upon the point of achieving some great feat, must call up the idea of his mistress, and turning his eyes upon her with all the gentleness of love, implore, as it were, by his looks, her favour and protection in the doubtful dilemma in which he is about to involve himself: nay, even tho' no body should hear him, he is obliged to mutter between his teeth, an ejaculation, by which he heartily and confidently recommends himself to her good wishes: and of this practice we have innumerable examples in history; but, I would not have you think, that we are to forbear recommending ourselves to God also; there will be time and opportunity enough for that duty, in the course of action."

"But, nevertheless, said the traveller, I have still one scruple remaining, which is, that I have often read of a dispute between two knights, which proceeding to rage, from one word to another, they have turned about their steeds, to gain ground for a good career, and then, without any more ceremony, returned to the encounter at full gallop, recommending themselves to their mistresses by the way; and the common issue of such an engagement is, that one of them is thrown down by his horse's crupper, stuck thro' and thro' with his adversary's lance, while the other, with difficulty, avoids a fall by laying hold of his horse's main: now, I cannot comprehend how the dead man could have time to recommend himself to God, in the course of so sudden an attack; surely, it would have been better for his soul, if, instead of the words he uttered in his career, he had put up

a petition to heaven, according to the duty and obligation of every Christian; especially, as I take it for granted, that every knight-errant has not a mistress, for, all of them cannot be in love." "That's impossible, answered Don Quixote. I affirm, that there never could be a knight-errant without a mistress; for, to be in love is as natural and peculiar to them, as the stars are to the heavens. I am very certain that you never read an history that gives an account of a knight-errant without an amour; for, he that has never been in love, would not be held as a legitimate member, but some adulterate brood, who had got into the fortress of chivalry, not thro' the gate, but over the walls, like a thief in the night."

"Yet, notwithstanding, said the traveller, I have read that Don Galaor, brother of the valiant Amadis de Gaul, never had any known mistress to whom he could recommend himself: and he was not disregarded, but looked upon as a very valiant and famous knight." "Signor, answered our hero Don Quixote, one swallow makes not a spring: besides, to my certain knowledge, that knight was privately very much in love; indeed he made love to every handsome woman who came in his way; for, that was his natural disposition, which he by no means could resist: in short, it is very well attested, that he had one mistress, whom he enthroned, as sovereign of his heart, and to whom he recommended himself with great caution and privacy, because he piqued himself upon being a secret knight."

"Since then it is essential to every knight to be in love, we may conclude that your worship being of that profession, is no stranger to that passion; and if you do not value yourself upon being as secret a knight as Don Galaor, I earnestly entreat you, in behalf of myself, and the rest of the company, to tell us the name, country, station and qualities of your mistress, who must think herself extremely happy in reflecting that all the world knows, how much she is beloved and adored by so valiant a knight as your worship appears to be."

Here, Don Quixote uttered a grievous sigh, saying: "I am not positively certain, whether or not that beautiful enemy of mine takes pleasure in the world's knowing I am her slave; this only I can say, in answer to the question you asked, with so much civility, that her name is Dulcinea; her native country a certain part of Valencia called Toboso; her station must at least be that of a princess, since she is queen and lady of my soul; her beauty supernatural, in that it justifies all those impossible and chimerical attributes of excellence, which the poets bestow upon their nymphs; her hair is of gold, her forehead the Elysian fields, her eyebrows heavenly arches, her eyes themselves suns, her cheeks roses, her lips of coral, her teeth of pearl, her neck alabaster, her breast marble, her hands ivory, her skin whiter than snow, and those parts which decency conceals from human view,



view, are such, according to my belief and apprehension, as discretion ought to inhanche above all comparifon."

"I wish we knew her lineage, race, and family," replied Vivaldo. To this hint the knight answered, "She is not descended of the antient Caii, Curtii, and Scipios of Rome, nor of the modern Colonas and Urfini, nor of the Moncadas and Requesenes of Catalonia, much less of the Rebellas and Villanovas of Valencia; or the Palafaxes, Nucas, Rocabertis, Corellas, Lunas, Alagones, Urreas, Fozes and Gurreas of Arragon, or the Cerdas, Manriquez, Mendozas and Gufmans of Castile, or the Alencastros, Pallas and Menefis of Portugal: but, she sprung from the family of Toboso de La Mancha, a lineage, which tho' modern, may give a noble rise to the most illustrious families of future ages; and let no man contradict what I say, except upon the conditions expressed in that inscription placed by Cerbino under the trophy of Orlando's arms.

That knight alone these arms shall move,  
Who dares Orlando's prowess prove\*.

"Altho' I myself am descended from the † Cachopines of Laredo, said the traveller, I won't presume to compare with that of Toboso de La Mancha; tho', to be plain with you, I never before heard of any such generation." "How, not heard!" replied Don Quixote. The rest of the company jogged on, listening with great attention to this discourse, and all of them, even the very goatherds, by this time, were convinced, that our knight's judgment was grievously impaired. Sancho alone believed that every thing his master said was true; because he knew his family, and had been acquainted with himself from his cradle. The only doubt that he entertained, was of this same beautiful Dulcinea del Toboso; for, never had such a name or such a princess come within the sphere of his observation, altho' he lived in the neighbourhood of that place.

\* When a knight challenged the whole world, he wore an emprise, consisting of a gold chain, or some other badge of love and chivalry; and sometimes this emprise was fixed in a public place, to attract the attention of strangers; when any person accepted the challenge for a trial of chivalry, called the combat of courtesy, he touched this emprise; but, if he tore it away, it was considered as a resolution to fight the owner to extremity or outrage. The combat of courtesy is still practised by our prize-fighters and boxers, who shake hands before the engagement, in token of love.

But no defiance of this kind could be either published or accepted without the permission of the prince, at whose court the combatants chanced to be. Accordingly we are told by Oliver de La Marche, that the lord of Ternant having published a defiance at the court of Burgundy, in the year 1445, Galiot asked the duke's permission to touch the challenger's emprise; which being granted, he advanced and touched it, saying to the bearer, while he bowed very low, "Noble knight, I touch your emprise, and, with God's permission, will do my utmost to fulfil your desire either on horseback or on foot." The lord of Ternant humbly thanked him for his condescension, said he was extremely welcome, and promised to send him that same day a cartel, mentioning the arms they should use.

† Cachopines is the name given to the Europeans by the Indians of Mexico.

While they travelled along, conversing in this manner, they perceived about twenty shepherds descending thro' a cleft made by two high mountains. They were all clad in jackets of sheep-skin, covered with black wool, and each of them crowned with a garland, which was composed, as we afterwards learned, partly of cypress, and partly of yew: six of the foremost carried a bier; upon which they had strewed a variety of branches and flowers. And this was no sooner perceived by one of the goatherds, than he said, "These are the people who carry the corps of Chrysofom, and the foot of that mountain is the place where he ordered himself to be interred."

Upon this information, they made haste, and came up just at the time that the bearers having laid down the body, began to dig the grave with pick-axes on one side of a flinty rock. They received our travellers with great courtesy, and Don Quixote, with his company, went towards the bier, to look at the dead body, which was covered with flowers, clad in shepherds weeds, and seemingly thirty years old. Notwithstanding he was dead, they could plainly perceive, that he had been a man of an engaging aspect, and genteel stature; and could not help wondering at the sight of a great many papers both sealed and loose, that lay round him in the coffin.

While the new-comers were observing this phenomenon, and the shepherds busied in digging a grave, a wonderful and universal silence prevailed, till such time as one of the bearers said to another: "Consider, Ambrosio, if this be the very spot which Chrysofom mentioned, that his last will may be punctually fulfilled." "This, answered Ambrosio, is the very place in which my unhappy friend has often recounted to me the story of his misfortunes. Here it was, he first beheld that mortal enemy of human race; here also did he first declare his amorous and honourable intention; and here, at last, did Marcella signify her disgust and disdain, which put an end to the tragedy of his wretched life: and in this place, as a monument of his mishap, did he desire to be deposited in the bowels of eternal oblivion."

Then addressing himself to Don Quixote, and the travellers, he thus proceeded: "This corse, gentlemen, which you behold with compassionate eyes, was the habitation of a soul, which possessed an infinite share of the riches of heaven: this is the body of Chrysofom, who was a man of unparalleled genius, the pink of courtesy and kindness; in friendship, a very phoenix, liberal without bounds, grave without arrogance, gay without meanness; and, in short, second to none in every thing that was good, and without second in all that was unfortunate. He loved, and was abhorred; he adored, and was disdained; he implored a savage; he importuned a statue; he hunted the wind; cried aloud to the desert; he was a slave to the most ungrateful of women; and the fruit of his servitude was death, which over-

took

took him in the middle of his career: in short, he perished by the cruelty of a shepherdes, whom he has eternised in the memory of all the people in this country; as these papers, which you gaze at would shew, if he had not ordered me to commit them to the flames as soon as his body shall be deposited in the earth."

" You will use them then with more cruelty and rigour, said Vivaldo, than that of the author himself: seeing it is neither just nor convenient to fulfil the will of any man, provided it be unreasonable. Augustus Cæsar would have been in the wrong, had he consented to the execution of what the divine Mantuan ordered on his death-bed. Wherefore, signor Ambrosio, while you commit the body of your friend to the earth, you ought not likewise to consign his writings to oblivion; nor perform indiscreetly, what he in his affliction ordained: on the contrary, by publishing these papers, you ought to immortalize the cruelty of Marcella, that it may serve as an example in time to come, and warn young men to shun and avoid such dangerous precipices: for, I, and the rest of this company, already know the history of that enamoured and unhappy friend, the nature of your friendship, the occasion of his death, together with the orders that he left upon his death-bed: from which lamentable story, it is easy to conclude, how excessive must have been the cruelty of Marcella, the love of Chrysofom, the faith of your friendship, and the check which those receive, who precipitately run thro' the path exhibited to them by idle and mischievous love. Last night, we understood the death of Chrysofom, who, we were informed, was to be buried in this place; and therefore, out of curiosity and concern, have turned out of our way, resolving to come, and see with our eyes, what had affected us so much in the hearing: and in return for that concern, and the desire we felt in remedying it, if it had been in our power, we intreat thee, O discreet Ambrosio! at least, for my own part, I beg of thee not to burn these papers, but, allow me to preserve some of them."

Accordingly, without staying for an answer, he reached out his hand, and took some of those that were nearest him: which Ambrosio perceiving, said, " Out of civility, signor, I will consent to your keeping what you have taken up; but to think that I will fail to burn the rest, is a vain supposition." Vivaldo being desirous of seeing the contents, immediately opened one, intitled, A song of despair: which Ambrosio hearing, said, " That is the last poem my unhappy friend composed; and that you may see, signor, to what a pass his misfortunes had reduced him, read it aloud, and you'll have time enough to finish it before the grave be made!" " That I will do with all my heart," said Vivaldo, and every body present being seized with the same desire, they stood around him in a circle, and he read what follows, with an audible voice.

A SONG

## A S O N G of Despair.

## I.

SINCE then, thy pleasure, cruel maid !  
 Is, that thy rigour and disdain  
 Should be from clime to clime convey'd ;  
 All hell shall aid me to complain !  
 The torments of my heart to tell,  
 And thy atchievements to record,  
 My voice shall raise a dreadful yell,  
 My bowels burst at every word :  
 Then listen to the baleful sound  
 That issues from my throbbing breast,  
 Thy pride, perhaps, it may confound,  
 And yield my madd'ning soul some rest.

## II.

Let the snake's hiss and wolf's dire howl,  
 The bull's harsh note, the lyon's roar,  
 The boding crow and screeching owl,  
 The tempest rattling on the shore,  
 The monster's scream, the turtle's moan,  
 The shrieks of the infernal crew,  
 Be mingled with my dying groan,  
 A concert terrible and new !  
 The hearer's senses to appall,  
 And reason from her throne depose ;  
 Such melody will suit the gall  
 That from my burning liver flows !

## III.

Old Tagus with his yellow hair,  
 And Betis with her olive wreath,  
 Shall never echo such despair,  
 Or listen to such notes of death,  
 As here I'll utter and repeat,  
 From hill to dale, from rock to cave,  
 In wilds untrod by human feet,  
 In dungeons dreary as the grave.  
 The beasts of prey that scour the plain,  
 Shall thy more savage nature know,  
 The spacious earth resound my strain ;  
 Such is the privilege of woe !

## IV.

## IV.

Disdain is death, and doubt o'erturns  
 The patience of the firmest mind ;  
 But, jealousy still fiercer burns,  
 Like all the flames of hell combin'd !  
 The horrors of that cursed fiend,  
 In absence to distraction rage,  
 And all the succour hope can lend,  
 The direful pangs will not assuage.  
 Such agonies will surely kill ;  
 Yet, 'spite of absence, doubts and scorn,  
 I live a miracle, and still  
 Those deadly flames within me burn !

## V.

Hope's shadow ne'er refresh'd my view,  
 Despair attends with wakeful strife ;  
 The first let happier swains pursue,  
 The last my comfort is for life.  
 Can hope and fear at once prevail,  
 When fear on certainty is fed ?  
 To shut mine eyes will nought avail,  
 When thunder bursts around my head.  
 When cold disdain in native dye,  
 Appears, and falsehood's cunning lore  
 Perverts the tale of truth, shall I  
 Against despondence shut the door ?

## VI.

O jealousy ! love's tyrant lord,  
 And thou soul-chilling, dire disdain !  
 Lend me the dagger and the cord,  
 To stab remembrance, strangle pain.  
 I die bereft of hope in death,  
 Yet still those are the freest souls,  
 (I'll vouch it with my latest breath)  
 Whom love's old tyranny controuls.  
 My fatal enemy is fair,  
 In body and in mind, I'll say,  
 And I have earn'd the woes I bear :  
 By rigour love maintains the sway.

## VII.

With this opinion let me fall  
 A prey to unrelenting scorn;  
 No fun'ral pomp shall grace my pall,  
 No laurel my pale coarſe adorn.  
 O thou! whoſe cruelty and hate  
 The tortures of my breaſt proclaim,  
 Behold how willingly to fate  
 I offer this devoted frame.  
 If thou, when I am paſt all pain,  
 Should'ſt think my fall deſerves a tear,  
 Let not one ſingle drop diſtain  
 Thoſe eyes ſo killing and ſo clear.

## VIII.

No! rather let thy mirth diſplay  
 The joys that in thy boſom flow;  
 Ah! need I bid that heart be gay  
 Which always triumph'd in my woe.  
 Come then, for ever barr'd of bliſs,  
 Ye, who with ceafeleſs torment dwell,  
 And agonizing, howl and hiſs  
 In the profoundeſt ſhades of hell;  
 Come, Tantalus, with raging thirſt,  
 Bring, Syſiphus, thy rolling ſtone,  
 Come, Titius, with thy vulture curſt,  
 Nor leave Ixion rack'd, alone:

## IX.

The toiling ſiſters too, ſhall join,  
 And my ſad, ſolemn dirge repeat,  
 When to the grave my friends conſign  
 Theſe limbs deny'd a winding ſheet;  
 Fierce Cerberus ſhall clank his chain,  
 In chorus with chimæras dire:  
 What other pomp, what other ſtrain  
 Should he who dies of love, require?  
 Be huſh'd my ſong, complain no more  
 Of her whoſe pleaſure gave thee birth;  
 But let the forrows I deplore  
 Sleep with me in the ſilent earth.





*J. Hayman inv. et delin.*

*G. Scottin Sculp.*



This ditty of Chrysofom was approved by all the hearers ; but, he who read it, observed, that it did not seem to agree with the report he had heard of Marcella's virtue and circumspection ; inasmuch as the author complained of jealousy, absence and suspicion, which tended to the prejudice of her morals and reputation. To this objection, Ambrosio, as one that was acquainted with the most secret sentiments of his friend, answered, " Signor, for your satisfaction in this point, it is necessary you should know, that the forlorn shepherd composed this song in the absence of Marcella, from whose presence he had gone into voluntary exile, in order to try if he could reap the usual fruits of absence, and forget the cause of his despair ; and as one in that situation, is apt to be fretted by every circumstance, and invaded by every apprehension ; poor Chrysofom was harassed by groundless jealousy and imaginary fears, which tormented him as much as if they had been real ; for which reason, this circumstance ought not to invalidate the fame of Marcella's virtue, against which, exclusive of her cruelty, arrogance and disdain, envy itself hath not been able to lay the least imputation."

" That may be very true," replied Vivaldo, who being about to read another of the papers he had saved from the flames, was diverted from his purpose by a wonderful vision, for such it seemed, that all of a sudden, presented itself to their eyes. This was no other than the shepherdess Marcella, who appeared upon the top of the rock, just above the grave they were digging, so beautiful that she surpassed all report. Those who had never seen her before, gazed with silent admiration ; nor were the rest who had been accustomed to see her, less astonished at her appearance. But, no sooner did Ambrosio perceive her, than with indignation in his looks, he cried :

" Comest thou hither, fierce basilisk of these mountains ! to see if the wounds of this unhappy youth whom thy cruelty hath slain, will bleed at thy approach ? or art thou come to rejoice in the exploits of thy barbarity, and from the top of that mountain, behold, like another Nero, the flames which thy impiety hath kindled ? or inhumanely to trample upon this unfortunate corpse, as the unnatural daughter insulted the dead body of her father Tarquin ? Tell us at once, the cause of thy approach, and deign to signify thy pleasure, that I who know how devoutly Chrysofom obeyed thee, when alive, may, now that he is dead, dispose his friends to yield the same obedience."

" I come not, answered Marcella, for any of the purposes you have mentioned, Ambrosio ; but, rather personally to demonstrate how unreasonably I am blamed for the death and sufferings of Chrysofom. I beg therefore, that all present will give me the hearing, as it will be unnecessary

cessary to spend much time, or waste many words, to convince those that are unprejudiced, of the truth. " Heaven, you say, hath given me beauty, nay such a share of it, as compels you to love me, in spite of your resolutions to the contrary; from whence you draw this inference, and insist upon it, that it is my duty to return your passion. By the help of that small capacity which nature has bestowed upon me, I know that which is beautiful is lovely; but, I can by no means conceive, why the object which is beloved for being beautiful, is bound to be enamoured of its admirer: more especially, as it may happen that this same admirer is an object of disgust and abhorrence; in which case, would it be reasonable in him to say, " I love thee because thou art beautiful, and thou must favour my passion, although I am deformed? But, granting the beauty equal on both sides, it does not follow, that the desires ought to be mutual; for, all sorts of beauty do not equally affect the spectator; some, for example, delighting the eye only, without captivating the heart. And well it is for mankind, that things are thus disposed; otherwise, there would be a strange perplexity and confusion of desires, without power of distinguishing and choosing particular objects; for, beauty being infinitely diversified, the inclination would be infinitely divided: and I have heard, that true love must be undivided and unconstrained: if this be the case, as I believe it is, why should I constrain my inclination, when I am under no other obligation so to do, but your saying that you are in love with me? Otherwise, tell me, if heaven that made me handsome, had created me a monster of deformity, should I have had cause to complain of you for not loving me? Besides, you are to consider, that I did not choose the beauty I possess; such as it is, God was pleased of his own free will and favour to bestow it upon me, without any solicitation on my part. Therefore, as the viper deserves no blame for its sting, although it be mortal, because it is the gift of nature; neither ought I to be reviled for being beautiful: for, beauty in a virtuous woman, is like a distant flame, and a sharp sword afar off, which prove fatal to none but those who approach too near them. Honour and virtue are the ornaments of the soul; without which the body, though never so handsome, ought to seem ugly: if chastity then be one of the virtues which chiefly adorns and beautifies both body and soul, why should she that is beloved, lose that jewel for which she is chiefly beloved, merely to satisfy the appetite of one who, for his own selfish enjoyment, employs his whole care and industry to destroy it? I was born free, and to enjoy that freedom, have I chosen the solitude of these fields. The trees on these mountains are my companions; and I have no other mirror than the limpid streams of these crystal brooks. With the trees and the streams I share my contemplation  
and

and my beauty : I am a distant flame and a sword afar off : those whom my eyes have captivated my tongue has undeceived ; and if hope be the food of desire, as I gave none to Chrysofom or to any other person, so neither can his death nor that of any other of my admirers, be justly imputed to my cruelty, but, rather, to their own obstinate despair. To those who observe that his intentions were honourable ; and that therefore I was bound to comply with them, I answer, when he declared the honesty of his designs in that very spot where now his grave is digging, I told him, my purpose was to live in perpetual solitude, and let the earth alone enjoy the fruits of my retirement, and the spoils of my beauty : Wherefore, if he, notwithstanding this my explanation, persevered without hope, and failed against the wind ; it is no wonder that he was overwhelmed in the gulph of his rashness. Had I cajoled him, I should have been perfidious ; had I gratified his inclination, I should have acted contrary to my own reason and resolution. But, because he persisted after I had explained myself, and despaired before he had cause to think I abhorred him, I leave you to judge whether or not it be reasonable to lay his misfortune at my door. Let him whom I have deceived complain, and let him despair to whom I have broke my promise : if I call upon any man, he may depend upon me, if I admit of his addresses, he may rejoice in his success : but, why should I be stiled a barbarous homicide by him whom I never foothed, deceived, called or admitted ? Hitherto heaven has not thought fit that I should love by destiny ; and the world must excuse me from loving by election. Let this general declaration serve as an answer to all those who solicit me in particular, and henceforward give them to understand, that whosoever dies for me, perishes not by jealousy or disdain, for, she who never gave her love, can never give just cause of jealousy ; neither ought her plain-dealing to be interpreted into disdain. Let him who terms me a fierce basilisk, shun me as an evil-being ; if any man thinks me ungrateful, let him refuse his services when I ask them. If I have disowned any one, let him renounce me in his turn, and let him who has found me cruel, abandon me in my distress : this fierce basilisk, this ungrateful, cruel, supercilious wretch, will neither seek, serve, own, nor follow you in any shape whatever. If Chrysofom perished by the impatience of his own extravagant desire, why should my innocent reserve be inveighed against ? If I have preserved my virginity in these deserts, why should he that loves me, wish to see me lose it among mankind ! I have riches of my own, as you all know, and covet no man's wealth. I am free, and will not be subjected : I neither love nor hate any man : I do not cajole this one, nor teize that, nor do I joke with one or discourse with another ; but, amuse myself with the care of my goats, and the innocent.

nocent conversation of the shepherdesses belonging to the neighbouring villages. My desires are bounded by these mountains; or if my meditation surpasses these bounds, it is only to contemplate the beauty of the heavens, those steps by which the soul ascends to its original mansion." So saying, without waiting for any reply, she turned her back, and vanished into a thicket on a neighbouring mountain, leaving all that were present equally surprized with her beauty and discretion.

Some of the bystanders being wounded by the powerful shafts that were darted from her fair eyes, manifested an inclination to follow her, without availing themselves of the ingenuous declaration they had heard; which being perceived by Don Quixote, who thought this a proper occasion for exercising his chivalry, in defence of distressed damsels; he laid his hand upon the hilt of his sword, and in a lofty and audible voice, pronounced, "Let no person, of whatsoever rank or degree, presume to follow the beautiful Marcella, on pain of incurring my most furious indignation. She has demonstrated, by clear and undeniable arguments, how little, if at all, she is to be blamed for the death of Chrysoptom; and how averse she is to comply with the desires of any of her admirers; for which reason, instead of being pursued and persecuted, she ought to be honoured and esteemed by all virtuous men, as the only person in the universe, who lives in such a chaste and laudable intention." Whether it was owing to these menaces of the knight, or to the advice of Ambrose, who desired them to perform the last office to their deceased friend, not one of the shepherds attempted to stir from the spot, until the grave being finished, and the papers burnt, the body of poor Chrysoptom was interred, not without abundance of tears shed by his surviving companions. The grave was secured by a large fragment of the rock which they rolled upon it, 'till such time as a tomb-stone could be made, under the direction of Ambrose, who was resolved to have the following epitaph engraved upon it.

The body of a wretched swain,  
Kill'd by a cruel maid's disdain,  
In this cold bed neglected lies.  
He liv'd, fond hapless youth! to prove,  
Th'inhuman tyranny of love,  
Exerted in Marcella's Eyes.

Having strewed the place with a profusion of flowers and branches, every body present condoled, and took leave of the afflicted executor; and Don Quixote bad farewell to his kind landlords, as well as to the travellers, who would have persuaded him to accompany them to Sevil, which, they said, was a city so well adapted for adventures, that they  
occurred

occurred in every street, nay at the corner of every blind alley. Our hero thanked them most courteously for their advice, and the inclination they expressed to give him pleasure; but, assured them, he neither could nor would set out for Sevil, until he should have cleared these desarts of the robbers and banditti, of whom they were reported to be full.

The travellers seeing him thus laudably determined, importuned him no further, but, taking leave of him anew, pursued their journey, during which, they did not fail to discuss the story of Marcella and Chrysoptom, as well as the madness of Don Quixote, who on his part, resolved to go in quest of the shepherdes, and offer her all the service in his power: but, this scheme did not turn out according to his expectation; as will be related in the course of this faithful history, the second book of which, is here concluded.

---

---

THE  
LIFE and ATCHIEVEMENTS

Of the Sage and Valiant KNIGHT

DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

B O O K III.

C H A P. I.

Wherein is recounted the unlucky adventure which happened to Don Quixote, in meeting with certain unmerciful Yangueshians.

**T**HE sage Cid Hamet Benengeli relates, that Don Quixote, having bid adieu to his entertainers, and to all who were present at the funeral of the shepherd Chrysoftom, entered, with his squire, the same wood to which Marcella had retreated; where, when they had wandered about upwards of two hours, without seeing her, they chanced to find themselves in a delightful spot, overgrown with verdant grass, and watered by a cool and pleasant stream; which was so inviting as to induce them to stay in it, during the heat of the day, that now began to be very sultry; the knight and squire therefore, dismounting, and leaving the ass and Rozinante at pleasure to regale themselves with the rich pasture, emptied their knapsack, and without any ceremony, attacked the contents, which they ate together like good friends, laying aside all vain distinction of master and man.

Sancho had been at no pains to tether Rozinante, secure as he thought, in knowing him to be so meek and peaceable, that all the mares in the meadows of Cordova, could not provoke his concupiscence. Chance, however, or the devil, who is not often found napping, ordered it so, as that a drove of Gallician fillies belonging to certain Yangueshian carriers, happened at that very instant, to be feeding in the same valley; for, it being

ing the custom of these people to halt and refresh themselves and their beasts in places where there is plenty of water and grass, they could not have lighted on a more convenient spot than that where Don Quixote chanced to be. It was then that Rozinante, seized with an inclination to solace himself with some of those skittish females, no sooner had them in the wind, than deviating from his natural disposition and accustomed deliberation, without asking leave of his lord and master, he went off at a small trot, to communicate his occasions to the objects of his desire. But they, it seems, more fond of their pasture, than of his addressees, received him so uncivilly with their hoofs and teeth, that in a twinkling, his girth was broke, his saddle kicked off, and he himself remained in cuerpo. But, what he chiefly suffered was from the carriers, who seeing violence offered to their mares, ran to their assistance with long staves, which they exercised upon him so unmercifully, that he fell prostrate to the ground, almost battered to death.

The knight and Sancho seeing their steed thus bastinadoed, made all the haste they could to his rescue; the former addressing the latter in this manner, "I perceive, friend Sancho, that these are no knights, but fellows of low degree and infamous descent: this particular I mention, because thou mayest now assist me, in taking just vengeance upon them, for the injury they have done to Rozinante before my face." "What a devil of vengeance can we pretend to take, answered the squire, when they are more than twenty, and we but two? nay, I believe, if it was put to the trial, no better than one and a half." "I myself am worth an hundred of such vagabonds," cried Don Quixote; and, without uttering another syllable, he unsheath'd his sword, and assaulted the Yangueshians, being seconded by Sancho, who suffered himself to be rouzed and encouraged by the example of his master: and indeed the knight lent the first he met with such a hearty stroke, as laid open a leathern jacket he wore, together with a large portion of his shoulder.

The carriers seeing themselves thus maltreated by two men only, took the benefit of their numbers, and ran to sustain one another with their staves, then surrounding the two assailants, began to drum upon their carcases with infinite eagerness and dexterity. True it is, at the second application, Sancho fell to the earth: a misfortune that also happened to his master; who, in spite of all his own address, together with the assistance of his good friend, soon found himself stretched at the feet of Rozinante, who had not as yet been able to rise: from whence we may learn, what furious execution is often done by pack-staves, when managed by the hands of such enraged clowns.

The carriers perceiving the havock they had made, thought proper to load again with all dispatch, and pursue their journey, leaving our adven-

turers in miserable plight and doleful dilemma. The first that recovered the use of his senses, was Sancho Panza, who finding himself laid along by the side of his master, pronounced, with a weak and lamentable voice, "Sir Don Quixote! ah Sir Don Quixote!" What wouldst thou have, brother Sancho?" replied the knight, in the same feeble and complaining tone. "I wish, resumed Sancho, your worship would, if it be possible, comfort me with a couple of gulps of that same balsam made by fairy blas, if you have got any of it about you: perhaps it may be serviceable in bruises and broken bones, as well as in wounds and running sores." "Would to God I had it here, unfortunate wight that I am! cried Don Quixote, but I swear to thee Sancho, on the faith of a knight-errant, that e'er two days pass, if some mischievous accident does not intervene, I will have it my possession, if my hands do not very much misgive me." "In how many days does your worship think we shall be able to move our feet?" said the squire. "With regard to myself, answered the battered knight, I really cannot fix any number of days; but this I know, that I alone am to blame for what has happened, in condescending to use my sword against antagonists, who were not dubbed and knighted like myself. I therefore firmly believe, that as a punishment for having transgressed the laws of chivalry, the God of battles hath permitted me to receive this disgraceful chastisement: for which reason, brother Sancho, it is proper that thou shouldst be apprised of what I am going to say, as it may be of great importance to the safety of us both: whenever thou shalt see us insulted or aggrieved for the future, by such rascally scum, thou shalt not wait for my drawing upon them, for I will in no shape meddle with such unworthy foes; but, lay thy hand upon thy sword, and with thy own arm, chastise them to thy heart's content: but should any knights make up to their defence and assistance, then shall I know how to protect thee, and assault them with all my might; and thou art already convinced, by a thousand amazing proofs, how far extends the valour of this my invincible arm." So arrogant was the poor knight become, by his victory over the valiant Biscayan.

This wholesome advice, however, was not so much relished by Sancho, but that he replied, "Sir, I am a quiet, meek, peaceable man, and can digest any injury, be it never so hard; for, I have a wife and small children to maintain and bring up: wherefore, let me also apprise, (tho' I cannot lay my commands upon your worship) that I will in no shape whatever, use my sword against either knight or knave; and that henceforward, in the fight of God, I forgive all injuries, past, present, or to come, which I have already received, at this present time suffer, or may hereafter undergo, from any person whatsoever, high or low, rich or poor, gentle or simple, without exception to rank or circumstance."

His



His master hearing this declaration, answered, " I wish the grievous pain I feel in this rib, would abate a little, so as that I could speak for a few moments with ease, and convince thee of thy damnable error, Panza. Hark ye me, sinner! suppose the gale of fortune, which hath been hitherto so adverse, should change in our favour, and swelling the sails of our desire, conduct us safely, without the least impediment, into the haven of some one of those islands which I have promised thee: what would become of thy wretched affairs, if, after I had won and given it into thy possession, thou shouldst frustrate my intention, by thy lack of knighthood, ambition, valour and courage to revenge thy wrongs, or defend thy government? for, I would have thee to know, that in all new conquered kingdoms or provinces, the friends of their natural masters are never so quiet or reconciled to their new sovereign, as to dispel all fear of some fresh insurrection, to alter the government again, and as the saying is, Try fortune once more: it is therefore requisite, that the new possessor should have understanding to govern, resolution to punish, and valour to defend himself, in case of any such accident."

" In this last accident which hath befallen us, said Sancho, I wish the Lord had pleased to give me that same understanding and valour your worship mentions: but, I protest, upon the word of a poor sinner, that I am at present more fit for a searcloth than such conversation. See if your worship can make shift to rise, and then we will give some assistance to Rozinante, tho' it be more than he deserves; for, he was the principal cause of all this plaguy ribroasting: never could I believe such a thing of Rozinante, who, I always thought, was as chaste and sober a person as myself: but, this verifies the common remark, that you must keep company along time with a man, before you know him thoroughly; and that there is nothing certain in this life. Who could have thought, that those huge back-strokes your worship dealt so heartily to the unlucky traveller, would be followed, as it were, post haste, by such a mighty tempest of blows, as just now discharged itself upon our shoulders." " Thy carcase, Sancho, said Don Quixote, was formed for enduring such rough weather; but, my limbs were tenderly nursed in soft wool and fine linen; and therefore must feel more sensibly the pain of this discomfiture: and if I did not believe (believe, said I) if I were not certain, that all these inconveniencies are inseparably annexed to the exercise of arms, I would lie still where I am, and die with pure vexation."

To this protestation, the squire replied, " Seeing these misfortunes are the natural crops of chivalry, pray good your worship, do they happen at all times of the year, or only fall at an appointed season; because, in my simple conjecture, two such harvests will leave us altogether incapable of

reaping a third, if God, of his infinite mercy, will not be pleased to send us extraordinary succour." "Thou must know, friend Sancho, answered Don Quixote, that the life of a knight-errant is subject to a thousand dangers and mishaps; but then, he enjoys the self-same chance of being a king or emperor, as experience demonstrates to have been the case of divers and sundry knights, the history of whose lives I am perfectly well acquainted with; and I could now relate, if this pain would give me leave, the fortunes of some, who, by their valour alone, have risen to that supreme degree: and those very persons, both before and after their success, have undergone various calamities and affliction; witness the valiant Amadis de Gaul, who saw himself in the power of his mortal enemy Arcalaus the enchanter, of whom it is positively affirmed, that while the knight was his prisoner, he caused him to be bound to a pillar in his court-yard, and gave him two hundred stripes with the reins of his horse's bridle. There is likewise a certain secret author of no small credit, who relates that the knight of the sun was caught in a trap in a certain castle, and falling, found himself tied hand and foot in a deep dungeon below ground, where was administered unto him, one of those things they call glysters, composed of sand and water, which had well nigh cost him his life; and if he had not been succoured in that perilous conjuncture, by a sage who was his good friend, the poor knight would have fared very ill. Wherefore, what hath happened to me, may easily pass unheeded, among those much greater affronts, that such worthy people have undergone: besides, I would have thee know, Sancho, that it is never reckoned an affront, to be wounded by those instruments which are casually in the hands of our enemies; for, it is expressly mentioned in the laws of duelling, that if a shoemaker beats a man with the last he has by accident in his hand, the man cannot properly be said to be cudgelled, altho' the said last was made of wood. This particular I mention, that thou mayst not suppose us affronted, altho' we have been mauled in this unlucky fray; for, the weapons with which those men threshed us so severely, were no other than their own packstaves; and so far as I can remember, there was neither tuck, poignard nor sword among them."

"They did not give me time, answered Sancho, to make any such observation; for scarce had I laid my fingers upon my \* Toledo, when there rained a shower of cudgels upon my poor shoulders, that banished the light from my eyes, and strength from my feet, and laid me flat upon the spot where I now lie, not so much concerned about thinking whether this drubbing be an affront or not, as about the intolerable pain of the blows, which remain imprinted upon my memory as well as upon my carcase." "Not-

\* Tizona, which is the word in the original, is a romantic name given to the sword that belonged to Roderick Diaz de Bivar, the famous Spanish general against the Moors.

withstanding

withstanding all this complaining, said the knight, I aver, brother Sancho, that there is no remembrance which time does not efface, nor pain that death does not remove." "And pray, what greater misfortune can there be, answered Sancho, than that which nothing but time can remove, or death put a stop to? If this mishap of ours were such a one as might be cured with a couple of snips of cerecloth, it would not be altogether so vexatious; but, so far as I can see, all the plaister of an hospital, will not be sufficient to set us cleverly on our legs again."

"Truce with thy reflections, replied Don Quixote, and collecting strength out of weakness, as I will endeavour to do, let us rise and examine Rozinante's case; for, in all appearance, the poor beast hath not suffered the least part of the misfortune." "That is not to be wondered at, said the squire, he being a knight-errant also; but, what surprises me most is, that my dapple should get off without paying his score, when we are scored all over." "Destiny, when one door is shut, always leaves another open, as a resource in all calamities, said Don Quixote: this I observe, because thy ass will now supply the place of Rozinante, and carry me from hence to some castle, where my wounds may be cured; more especially, as such carriage will be no dishonour to chivalry; for, I remember to have read, that the good old Silenus, tutor and companion of the jolly God of mirth and wine, entered the city of the hundred gates, lolling at his ease upon a most comely ass." "It may be very true, that he rode upon an ass, replied Sancho, but, there is some difference, I apprehend, between riding and lying across the beast like a bag of dirt." To this observation, the knight answered, "Those wounds which are received in battle, may well give, but can never deprive one of honour: therefore, friend Sancho, do as I bid thee, without further reply; get up as well as thou can'st, and lay me upon dapple just as thou shalt find most convenient, that we may be gone before night comes to surprise us in this unfrequented place."

"And yet, said Sancho, I have heard your worship remark, that it is usual for knights-errant to sleep upon commons and heaths, the greatest part of the year; ay, and to be thankful for their good fortune in being able so to do." "Yes, said the knight, when they can do no better, or are in love; and this is so true, that there was a knight who lay upon a bare rock, exposed to the fultry noon and midnight damps, with all the inclemencies of the weather, during two whole years, before his mistress knew any thing of the matter: this was no other than Amadis, who, assuming the name of Beltenebros, took up his quarters upon the naked rock, for the space of either eight years, or eight months, I really do not remember which; only that he remained doing penance in that place, for some disgust shewn to him by his dame Oriana: but, truce with this conversation, Sancho, and make haste,

haste, before such another accident can happen to thy beast, as that which hath already befallen to Rozinante."

"Odds my life! that would be the devil indeed," cried Sancho, who uttering thirty ahs! and sixty oh's! together with a hundred and fifty ola's! and curses upon him who had brought him to that pass, raised himself up, tho' he could not for his soul stand upright, but in spite of all his efforts, remained bent like a Turkish bow, and in that attitude, with infinite labour, made shift to equip his as, which had also gone a little astray, presuming upon the excessive licence of the time; he then lifted up Rozinante, who, could he have found a tongue to complain with, would certainly have surpassed both his master and Sancho, in lamentation: in short, the squire disposed of Don Quixote upon the as, to whose tail Rozinante was tied; then taking his own dapple by the halter, jogged on sometimes faster, sometimes slower, towards the place where he conjectured the high road to lie: and indeed, they had not exceeded a short league, when by good luck, which now seemed to take the management of their affairs, they arrived at the highway, and discovered an inn, which, to Sancho's great grief, was mistaken for a castle by the joyful knight. This difference of opinion, begat an obstinate dispute that lasted until they arrived at the place, into which Sancho immediately conveyed his cargo, without further expostulation.

## C H A P. II.

The adventure that happened to this sagacious knight at the inn, which he mistook for a castle.

THE innkeeper seeing Don Quixote laid athwart the as, asked what was the matter? To which interrogation, Sancho replied, "Nothing but a few bruises which my master has received in a fall from a rock in this neighbourhood." The landlady, who differed in disposition from most of your innkeepers wives, being naturally charitable and sympathizing with the calamities of her fellow-creatures, came running to the relief of the battered knight, and brought her daughter, who was a very handsome girl, to assist in taking care of her guest. There was, in the same house, a servant maid from the Asturias, remarkable for her capacious countenance, beetle-brow'd, flat-nosed, blind of one eye, and bleared in the other; true it is, the gentility of her shape made amends for her other defects: she was something short of seven hands from head to foot, and moreover, encumbered so much by her shoulders, that she was obliged to contemplate the dust beneath her feet, oftner than she could have wished.

This

This comely creature, with the assistance of the other damsel, made up a sort of a sorry bed for our hero in a garret, which gave evident tokens of having been formerly an hay-loft, and in which, at that time, a certain carrier had taken up his quarters, in a bed of his own making, a little on one side of our knight's: and tho' his couch was composed of the pannels and furniture of his mules, it had greatly the advantage over Don Quixote's, which consisted only of four rough boards, supported on two benches of unequal height, covered by a mattress so thin, it might have passed for a quilt, and full of knots, so hard as to be mistaken for pebble-stones, had not the wool appeared thro' divers openings; with a couple of sheets made of bull's hide, and a blanket so bare, that you might have counted every thread, without losing one of the reckoning.

In this wretched bed, Don Quixote having laid himself down, was anointed from head to foot by the good woman and her daughter, while Maritornes (that was the Asturian's name) stood hard by holding a light. The landlady, in the course of her application, perceiving the knight's whole body black and blue, observed that those marks seemed rather the effects of drubbing than of a fall; but, Sancho affirmed she was mistaken; and that the marks in question, were occasioned by the knobs and corners of the rocks, among which he fell: "And now I think of it, said he, pray madam, manage matters so as to leave a little of your ointment, for it will be needed, I'll assure you; my own loins are none of the soundest at present." "What! did you fall too?" said she. "I can't say I did, answered the squire, but, I was so infected, by seeing my master tumble, that my whole body akes as much as if I had been cudgelled without mercy." "That may very easily happen, cried the daughter! I myself have often dreamed that I was falling from a high tower, without ever coming to the ground; and upon waking, have felt myself bruised and battered, as if I had actually got a great fall." "Ah, mistress! replied the squire, here is the point; I, without dreaming at all; but, on the contrary, being as broad awake as I am this precious minute, found almost as many marks upon my own shoulders, as you have observed upon those of my master Don Quixote." "What is the name of that knight?" said the Asturian, "Don Quixote de la Mancha, answered the squire, he is a knight-adventurer; and one of the greatest and most valiant that have been seen in this world for many ages." "And what is a knight-adventurer," resumed the wench. "Are you such a suckling as not to know that? cried Sancho; well, I'll tell you, mistress of mine, a knight-adventurer is a thing, that, before you can count a couple, may be kicked, and be crowned: to-day, he is the most despicable and beggarly wretch upon earth, and to-morrow, he will have a brace of kingdoms to bestow upon his squires." "Methinks, said the landlady, seeing you ap-  
pertain

pertain to such a great man, you ought to be a count at least." "All in good time, replied Sancho, we have not been out a month in search of adventures, and have found none worth naming; besides, people sometimes go in quest of one thing, and meet with another: indeed, if my master Don Quixote gets well of this drubbing--(fall, I mean) and I myself escape without being crippled, I won't barter my hopes for the best lordship in Spain."

The knight, having listened attentively to this whole conversation, sat up in his bed as well as he could, and taking his landlady by the hand, "Believe me, beautiful lady, said he, you may account yourself extremely happy, in having within your castle my person, as your guest, such a guest, that if I praise him not, it is on account of the common saying, that Self-commendation is in effect self-dispraise. My squire, however, will intimate who I am; while I content myself with assuring you, that I will, to all eternity, preserve engraven upon the tables of my memory, the benevolence you this day vouchsafed unto me, that I may be grateful for the favour, as long as life shall remain. And, oh! that it pleased yon Heaven supreme, that love had not so vanquished and enslaved my heart, to the triumphant eyes of that beautiful ingrate, whom I now mention between my teeth, but that the charms of this amiable young lady, could be the authors of my freedom."

The good woman, her daughter, and the gentle Maritornes, were astonished at this rhapsody, which they understood as much as if it had been delivered in Greek; tho' they could easily comprehend, that the whole of it tended to compliment and proffers of service: as they were therefore altogether unaccustomed to such language, they gazed at him with admiration, as a person of a different species from other men, and having thanked him for his courtesy, in their tapster-phrase, left him to his repose; while the Asturian Maritornes administered to Sancho, who had as much need of assistance as his master.

She and the carrier had made an assignation to divert themselves that night; nay, she had given her word, that as soon as the company should be quiet, and her master and mistress asleep, she would visit him in the dark, and give him all the satisfaction he desired; and indeed it is recorded, for the honour of this good creature, that she never failed to perform her promises of that kind punctually, altho' they had been made in the midst of a heath, and out of the hearing of all evidence; for, she valued herself much upon her gentility, and did not look upon it as any affront, to be servant at an inn, because, she observed, disappointments and misfortunes had reduced her to that condition.

The bed of Don Quixote, which we have described so hard, so narrow, crazy and uncomfortable, stood foremost, and exactly in the middle of this ruinous

ruinous hay-loft; hard by, had Sancho taken up his quarters upon a rush-mat, covered with a rug, which seemed to be manufactured of hemp rather than wool; and last of all was the carrier's couch, composed, as we have already said, of the pannels and furniture of his two best mules; for, he had no less than twelve plump, sleek and notable beasts, being one of the richest carriers in Arevalo, according to the report of the author of this history, who makes particular mention of him, and says he knew him perfectly well; nay, some go so far as to affirm, that he was his distant relation: be this as it will, Cid Hamet Benengeli was a most curious historian, and punctual to admiration, as appears from what hath been related, which, tho' in itself mean and trivial, he would by no means pass over in silence. This ought to serve as an example to those important and weighty historians, who recount events so succinctly and superficially, that the reader can scarce get a smack of them; while the most substantial circumstances are left, as it were, in the inkhorn, thro' carelessness, ignorance and malice. A thousand times blest be the authors of *Tablante* and *Ricamonte*, and he that compiled that other book, in which are recounted the achievements of Count *Tomillas*! How punctually have they described the most minute particular! But to return to our story.

The carrier having visited his cattle, and given them their night's allowance, stretched himself upon his pannels, in expectation of the most faithful *Maritornes*; while Sancho, plaistered all over, and huddled up in his kennel, endeavoured with all his might to sleep; but, the aching of his ribs would by no means allow him to enjoy that satisfaction; and *Don Quixote*, for the same uncomfortable reason, lay like a hare with his eyes wide open. A profound silence reigned throughout the whole house, in which there was no other light, than a lamp stuck up in the passage; and this wonderful quiet, together with those reflections which always occurred to our knight, relating to the events continually recorded in the books of chivalry, that first disordered his understanding: I say, those reflections suggested to his fancy, one of the strangest whims that ever entered a man's imagination. This was no other than a full persuasion that he was arrived at some famous castle, for, as we have before observed, all the inns he lodged at seemed castles to him; and that the landlord's daughter was the governor's only child, who, captivated by his genteel appearance, was become deeply enamoured of him, and had actually promised to come, without the knowledge of her parents, and pass the best part of the night in bed with him. Believing therefore, this chimera (which was the work of his own brain) to be a firm and undoubted fact, he began to reflect with extreme anxiety, upon the dangerous dilemma into which his virtue was like to be drawn; and resolved, in his heart, to commit no treason against his mistress *Dul-*

cinea del Toboso; even tho' queen Ginebra herself, and the lady Quintaniona should make him a tender of their favours.

While his mind was engrossed by these extravagant fancies, the hour of assignation arrived, and an unlucky hour it was for him, when the kind Asturian, barefoot and in her smock, having her hair tucked up under a fustian night-cap, entered the apartment in which the three guests were lodged, and with silence and caution, directed her steps towards the nest of her beloved carrier. But, scarce had she got within the door, when her approach was perceived by our knight, who sitting up in his bed, in spite of his plaisters and the aching of his ribs, stretched forth his arms to receive this beautiful young lady, who, on her part holding in her breath, moved softly on her tiptoes, groping her way with her hands before her.

While she thus crept along, in quest of her lover, she chanced to come within arms length of Don Quixote, who laid fast hold of her by the wrist, and without her daring to speak a syllable, pulled her towards him, and made her sit down upon his bed; he then felt her smock, which tho' made of the coarsest canvas, to him seemed a shift of the finest and softest lawn; the string of glass beads she wore about her wrist, in his apprehension, outshone the brightest oriental pearl: her hair, which bore some resemblance to a horse's mane, he mistook for threads of pure Arabian gold, that even eclipsed the splendor of the sun; and her breath, which doubtless smelled strong of broken meat and garlick, his fancy converted into an aromatic flavour, proceeding from her delicate mouth: in short, his imagination represented her in the same form and situation with that of a certain princess, recorded in one of his books, who came to visit a wounded knight of whom she was enamoured; with all the other embellishments there described. Nay, such was the infatuation of this poor gentleman, that he was not to be undeceived, either by the touch, the breath, or any other circumstance of this honest wench, tho' they were powerful enough to discompose the stomach of any body but a rampant carrier.

But, our knight believed he folded in his arms the goddess of beauty, and straining her in his embrace, began to pronounce, in a soft and amorous tone, "Would to heaven! I were so circumstanced, beautiful and high-born lady! as to be able to repay the transcendent favour bestowed upon me, in the contemplation of your amazing charms: but, it hath pleased fortune, that never ceases to persecute the virtuous, to lay me upon this bed, so bruised and battered, that even, if it was my desire to gratify yours, I should find it utterly impossible; how much more so, when that impossibility is linked to another still greater? I mean, the plighted faith I have vowed to the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso, the sole mistress of my most hidden thoughts: did not that consideration interpose, I should not be such a simple



simple knight, as to let slip this happy occasion which your benevolence hath tendered to my choice."

Maritornes, sweating with vexation, to find herself thus pinioned, as it were, by the knight, whose discourse she neither heeded nor understood; endeavoured, without answering a syllable, to disengage herself from his embrace: while the honest carrier, whose lewd desires kept him awake, and made him perceive his doxy from the moment she entered, listened attentively to every thing that Don Quixote said, and being jealous that the Asturian had broke her promise to him, in order to keep it with another, crept nearer the bed of his rival, to wait the issue of this rhapsody, the meaning of which he could not comprehend: observing, however, that the wench struggled to get loose, and that the knight endeavoured to detain her, he could not relish the joke, but, lifting his arm on high, discharged such a terrible blow upon the lanthorn jaws of the enamoured Don, as bathed his whole countenance in blood; and not satisfied with this application, jumped upon his ribs, and travelled over his whole carcase, at a pace, somewhat exceeding that of a brisk trot, until the bed, which was none of the strongest, either in materials or foundation, unable to sustain the additional weight, sunk to the ground with both; and made such a hideous noise in its fall, as waked the innkeeper, who immediately concluded that Maritornes was concerned in the adventure, because she made no answer when he called.

On this supposition he arose, and lighting a candle, went directly to the place where he had heard the scuffle: mean while, the poor wench, confused and affrighted at the approach of her master, who was a fellow of a most savage disposition, retreated to the kennel of Sancho Panza, who slept in spite of all this din, and nestling in beside him, wound herself up like a ball, and lay snug. The landlord now entered the apartment, and crying with a loud voice, "Where have you got, strumpet? to be sure, these must be your jades tricks, with a vengeance!" Sancho started, and feeling a prodigious weight upon him, thought he was labouring under the night-mare; and beginning to lay about him on all sides, chanced, in the course of his efforts, to bestow divers cuffs on Maritornes, who feeling herself thus belaboured, forgot the care of her reputation, and returned the squire's compliments so heartily, that sleep forsook him whether he would or not: without knowing the person who treated him so roughly, he raised himself up, as well as he could, and going to loggerheads with Maritornes, a most furious and diverting skirmish ensued.

By this time, the carrier, perceiving by the light the situation of his mistress, ran to her assistance; and the landlord followed the same course, tho' with a very different intention, namely, to chastise the maid; being fully per-

persuaded, that she was the sole cause of all this uproar : and so, as the saying is, The cat to the rat, the rat to the rope, the rope to the gallows. The carrier drummed upon Sancho, Sancho struck at the maid, the maid pummelled him, the innkeeper disciplined her ; and all of them exerted themselves with such eagerness, that there was not one moment's pause. But to crown the joke, the landlord's candle went out, and the combatants being left in the dark, such a circulation of blows ensued, that wheresoever the fist fell, there the patient was disabled.

There chanced to lodge at the inn, that night, a trooper belonging to the ancient holy brotherhood of Toledo, who also hearing the strange noise of this fray, arose, and seizing his tipstaff, together with the tin-box that contained his commission, entered the apartment in the dark, calling aloud, " Keep the peace, in the king's name. Keep the peace in the name of the holy brotherhood." The first he encountred was the forlorn Don Quixote, who lay insensible on his demolished bed, with his face uppermost ; so that groping about, he happened to lay hold of his beard, and cried, " Assist, I charge you, the officers of justice : but, perceiving that the person he held, neither stirred nor spoke, he concluded that he must be dead, and that the people within were the assassins. In this persuasion, he raised his voice, crying, " Shut the gates of the inn, that none may 'scape, for, here is a man murdered." This exclamation, which astonished them all, was no sooner heard, than every one quitted his share in the battle ; the landlord retreated to his own chamber, the carrier sneaked to his panniers, and the damsel to her straw : while the unfortunate knight and squire were left on the spot, unable to move from the places where they lay. The trooper letting go the beard of Don Quixote, went out for a light to search and apprehend the delinquents ; but, in this design, he was disappointed ; the landlord having purposely extinguished the lamp, when he retired to his apartment : so that he was obliged to have recourse to the embers, at which, with great industry and time, he made shift to light another candle.



Hayman inv. et pinx.

J. Müller sculp.



## C H A P. III.

Containing the sequel of those incredible grievances which the valiant Don Quixote, and his trusty squire Sancho Panza, underwent at the inn, which, for their misfortune, the knight mistook for a castle.

**A**Bout this time, Don Quixote recovering the use of his tongue, began to call in the same feeble tone with which he spoke, the preceding day, when he lay stretched in the pack-staff valley, "Art thou asleep, friend Sancho? friend Sancho, art thou asleep?" "God's my life! replied Sancho, full of peevishness and pain, how should I be asleep, seeing all the devils in hell have been upon me, this whole night?" "That thou mayest assure thyself of, answered the knight, for, either I understand nothing at all, or this castle is enchanted. Thou must know, Sancho, but what I am going to disclose to thee, thou shalt swear to keep secret till after my death." "I do swear," said Sancho. "This secrecy I insist upon, replied his master, because, I would by no means take away the reputation of any person." "Well then, cried the squire, I swear to keep it secret till the days of your worship be past and gone; and God grant that I may be at liberty to reveal it to-morrow." "Have I done you so much mischief, Sancho, said Don Quixote, that you wish to see me dead so soon?" "It is not for that, replied the squire, but, because I am an enemy to all secrets, and would not have any thing rot in my keeping." "Be that as it may, said the knight, I will trust greater things to thy love and fidelity: Know, therefore, that this very night, I have been engaged in a most rare and wonderful adventure, which, that I may briefly relate, take notice, that a little while ago, I was visited by the constable's daughter, than whom a more beautiful and gracious young lady is scarce to be found on this terraqueous globe. How shall I paint to thee, the comeliness of her person? how delineate the acuteness of her understanding? or, how shall I describe those mysterious charms, which, that I may preserve the fealty I have sworn to my own sovereign mistress Dulcinea del Toboso, I must pass over in sacred silence! I shall only tell thee, that heaven itself was jealous of the happiness which fortune had put into my power; or, perhaps, which is more probable, this castle, as I have already observed, is enchanted: for, while I was engaged with her, in a most delightful and amorous conversation, an unseen hand, belonging, doubtless, to the arm of some monstrous giant, descended, I know not whence, upon my jaws, leaving my whole face bathed in gore; and afterwards bruised me in such a manner, that I am infinitely worse, than I  
was

was yesterday, when the carriers maltreated us, as thou knowest, for the excesses of Rozinante; from whence, I conjecture, that the treasure of this fair damsel's beauty, is guarded by some enchanted Moor, and not destined for my possession." "Nor for mine, neither, cried Sancho, for, I have been drubbed by five hundred Moors, so unmercifully, that the pack-stave threshing was but cakes and gingerbread, to what I now feel: so, that I see no great cause you have to brag of that rare adventure, which hath left us in this comfortable pickle. Indeed your worship was not so badly off, because you had that same incomparable beauty in your arms: but, what had I, except the hardest knocks, which, I hope, I shall ever feel in my born days? Cursed am I, and the mother that bore me; for, though, I neither am knight-errant, nor ever design to be one, the greatest part of the mischief that betides us, for ever, falls to my share." It seems then, thou hast suffered too," said Don Quixote. "Woe be unto me and my whole pedigree! cried Sancho, have I not been telling you so all this time?" "Give thyself no concern about that matter, answered the knight, for, now I am determined to prepare that precious balsam, which will cure us both, in the twinkling of an eye."

About this time, the officer of the holy brotherhood, having made shift to light his candle, came back to examine the person whom he supposed murdered; and Sancho, seeing him approach in his shirt and woollen night-cap, with a very unfavourable aspect, and a light in his hand, said to his master, "Pray, sir, is that the enchanted Moor returned \* to spend the last drop of his vengeance upon us." "That cannot be the Moor, answered Don Quixote, for, enchanters never suffer themselves to be seen." "If they won't allow themselves to be seen, cried the squire, they make no bones of letting themselves be felt; that my shoulders can testify." "And mine too, said the knight: but, we have no sufficient reason to believe that he whom we now see, is the enchanted Moor."

Mean while, the trooper drawing nearer, and hearing them talk so deliberately, remained some time in suspense; then observing Don Quixote, who still lay on his back, unable to stir, on account of his bruises and plaisters, he went up to him, saying, "How do'st do, honest friend?" "I would speak more submissively, answered the knight, were I such a plebeian as you; is that the language used in this country to knights-errant, you blockhead?" The officer finding himself treated with so little ceremony, by such a miserable wight, could not bear the reproach, but, lifting up the lamp, oil and all, discharged it upon Don Quixote's pate, which suffered greatly in the encounter, and the light being again extinguished, slipped away in the dark. Things being in this situation, "Sir,

\* Literally, What is left in the bottom of his inkhorn.

said

said Sancho Panza, without doubt, that was the enchanted Moor, who keeps the treasure for other people, and the fifty-cuffs and lamp-leavings for us." "It must be so, replied the knight, but, we must not mind those affairs of enchantment so much, as to let them ruffle or inflame us; because they being invisible and fantastical, do what we can, we shall never be able to take vengeance upon the authors of them: get up therefore, Sancho, if thou canst, and desire the constable of this castle, to supply me with some oil, wine, salt and rosemary; that I may prepare the salutiferous balsam, which, really, I believe, I stand in great need of, at present, for, the wound, which the phantome hath given me, bleeds apace."

Accordingly, the squire made shift to rise, notwithstanding the intolerable aching of his bones, and creeping in the dark, towards the innkeeper's bed-chamber, happened to meet with the trooper, who stood listening, to know the intention of his adversary. "Signor, cried he, whosoever you are, do us the benefit and favour to assist us with some rosemary, salt, wine and oil, in order to cure one of the most mighty knights-errant upon earth, who lies in that bed, desperately wounded by the hands of an enchanted Moor that frequents this inn." The officer hearing such an address, concluded that the man had lost his senses; and it being by this time, dawn, opened the inn-gate, and calling to the landlord, told him what this honest man wanted. The innkeeper having provided Sancho with the ingredients, he immediately carried them to his master, who lay, holding his head between his two hands, and complaining very much of the effect of the lamp, which, however, had done no further damage than that of raising a couple of large tumors upon his pate; that which he took for blood, being no other than sweat forced out by the anguish and pain he had undergone. In short, he made a composition, by mixing the materials together, and boiling them a good while, until he found he had brought the whole to a due consistence; then he asked for a vial to contain the balsam; but, as there was none in the house, he resolved to cork it up in a tin oil-flask, of which the landlord made him a present. Which being done, he repeated over it, more than fourscore pater-nosters, with the like number of ave-maria's, salve's and credo's, accompanying every word with the sign of the cross, by way of benediction: and this whole ceremony was performed in presence of Sancho, the innkeeper and officer; the carrier having very quietly gone to take care of his beasts.

This precious balsam being thus composed, the knight was determined to make instant trial of the efficacy, with which he imagined it endued; and accordingly swallowed about a pint and a half of what remained in the pot, after the oil-flask was full, which had scarce got down his throat,  
when

when he began to vomit in such a manner, as left nothing in his stomach; and a most copious sweat breaking out upon him, in consequence of the violent operation, he desired they would wrap him up warm, and leave him to his repose. They complied with his request, and he fell into a profound sleep that lasted three hours, at the end of which awaking, he found himself exceedingly refreshed, and so well recovered of his bruises, that he seemed perfectly well: and implicitly believed that he had now made sure of the balsam of Fierabras, which while he possessed, he might, with the utmost confidence and safety, engage in the most perilous quarrels, combats and havock, that could possibly happen.

Sancho Panza seeing his master recovered to a miracle, begged he would bestow upon him, the sediment of the pot, which was no small quantity: and his request being granted, he laid hold of it with both hands, and setting it to his head, drank off, with strong faith and eager inclination, almost as much as his master had swallowed before. But, the poor squire's stomach chanc'd to be not quite so delicate as that of the knight, and therefore, before he could discharge a drop, he suffered such pangs and reachings, such qualms and cold sweats, that he verily believed his last hour was come, and in the midst of his wamblings and affliction, cursed the balsam and the miscreant that made it. Don Quixote perceiving his situation, said, "I believe that all this mischief happens to thee, Sancho, because thou art not a knight; for, I am persuaded, that this liquor will be of service to none but such as are of the order of knighthood." "If your worship knew so much, cried Sancho, woe be unto me and my whole generation! Why did you allow me to taste it?" At this instant, the potion began to operate, and the poor squire to unload at both ends, with such fury, that the mat upon which he had thrown himself, and the sheet that covered him, were soon in a woeful pickle: he sweated and shivered with such violent motions and fits, that not only he himself, but every body present, thought he would have given up the ghost.

This tempest of evacuation, lasted near two hours, at the expiration of which, he found himself far from being relieved like his master, but, on the contrary, so much fatigued that he was not able to stand. The knight, as we have already observed, finding himself in good health, and excellent spirits, longed fervently to depart in quest of adventures, thinking every minute he spent in that place, was an injury to the world in general, and to those miserable objects who wanted his favour and protection; especially, as he was now in possession of the certain means of safety and confidence, in that efficacious balsam he had made. Prompted by these suggestions, he himself saddled Rozinante, and with his own hands put the pannel upon the beast of his squire, whom he also assisted in getting  
on



on his cloaths, and mounting his afs. He then beftrode his own fteed, and laying hold of a pitchfork that ftood in a corner of the yard, appropriated it to the ufe of a lance; while all the people in the houfe, exceeding twenty perfons, beheld him with admiration: the landlord's daughter being among the fpectators, he fixed his eyes upon her, and from time to time, uttered a profound figh, which feemed to be heaved from the very bottom of his bowels; and which, in the opinion of all thofe who had feen him anointed over night, was occafioned by the aching of his bones.

He and his fquire, being by this time mounted, he halted at the gate, and calling to the innkeeper, pronounced, in a grave and folemn tone; "Numerous and mighty are the favours, fir conftable, which I have received in this caftle of yours, and I fhall think myfelf under the higheft obligation, to retain a grateful remembrance of your courtefy, all the days of my life. If I can make you any return, in taking vengeance on fome infolent adverfary, who hath, perhaps, aggrieved you; know, that it is my province and profefion, to affift the helpiefs, avenge the injured, and chaftife the falfe: recollect, therefore, and if you have any boon of that fort to ask, fpeak the word; I promife by the order of knighthood which I have received, that you fhall be righted and redreffed to your heart's content." "Sir knight, replied the innkeeper, with the fame deliberation, I have no occafion for your worfhip's affiftance, to redrefs any grievance of mine; for, I know how to revenge my own wrongs, when I fuffer any: all I defire, is, that you will pay the fcore you have run up in this inn, for provender to your cattle, and food and lodging to yourfelf and fervant." "It feems then, this is an inn," answered the knight. "Aye, and a well refpected one," faid the landlord. "I have been in a miftake all this time, refumed Don Quixote, for, I really thought it was a caftle; and that none of the meaneft, neither: but, fince it is no other than a houfe of public entertainment, you have nothing to do, but excufe me from paying a farthing; for, I can by no means, tranfgrefs the cuftom of knights-errant, who, I am fure, as having read nothing to the contrary, never paid for lodging, nor any thing elfe, in any inn or houfe whatfoever, becaufe they had a right and title to the beft of entertainment, in recompence for the intolerable fufferings they underwent, in feeking adventures by night and by day, in winter as well as fummer, on foot and on horfeback, expofed to hunger and thirft, to heat and cold, and to all the inclemencies of heaven, as well as the inconveniencies of earth." "All this is nothing to my purpofe, faid the innkeeper, pay me what you owe, and fave all your idle tales of knight-errantry, for thofe who will be amufed with them; for my own part, I mind no tale but that of the moneey I take." "You are a faucy publican and a blockhead to boot,"

cried Don Quixote, who putting spurs to Rozinante, and brandishing his pitch-fork, sallied out of the inn, without opposition; and was a good way off, before he looked behind to see if he was followed by his squire.

The landlord, seeing the knight depart without paying, ran up to seize Sancho, who told him, that since his master had refused to discharge the bill, he must not expect any money from him, who being the squire of a knight-errant, was, as well as his master, bound by the same laws, to pay for nothing in taverns and inns. The publican, irritated at this answer, threatened, if he would not pay him, to indemnify himself, in a manner that should not be so much to the squire's liking: but, Panza swore by the laws of chivalry his master professed, that he would not pay a doit, though it should cost him his life; for, he was resolved, that the honourable and ancient customs of knight-errantry, should not be lost through his misbehaviour; neither, should those squires, who were to come into the world after him, have occasion to complain of his conduct, or reproach him with the breach of so just a privilege.

As the unfortunate Sancho's evil genius would have it, there were among the company that lodged that night, in the house, four clothiers of Segovia, three pin-makers from the great square of Cordova, and a couple of shopkeepers from the market-place of Sevil; all of them, brisk jolly fellows, and mischievous wags. These companions, as if they had been inspired, and instigated by the same spirit, came up to the squire, and pulled him from his ass; then, one of them fetching a blanket from the landlord's bed, they put Sancho into it, and lifting up their eyes, perceived the roof was too low for their purpose; therefore determined to carry him out into the yard, which had no other cieling than the sky: there placing Panza in the middle of the blanket, they began to toss him on high, and divert themselves with his capers, as the mob do with dogs at Shrove-tide. The cries, uttered by this miserable valet, were so piercing as to reach the ears of his master, who halting to listen the more attentively, believed that some new adventure was approaching, until he clearly recognized the shrieks of his squire: he immediately turned his horse, and with infinite straining, made shift to gallop back to the inn; but, finding the gate shut, rode round in search of some other entrance; and when he approached the yard-wall, which was not very high, perceived the disagreeable joke they were practising upon his squire, who rose into the air, and sunk again with such grace and celerity, that if his indignation would have allowed him, I verily believe the knight himself would have laughed at the occasion. He attempted to step from his horse upon the wall, but, was so bruised and battered, that he could not move from his seat; and therefore, situated as he was, began to vent such a torrent of reproachful

reproachful and opprobrious language, against Sancho's executioners, that it is impossible to repeat the half of what he said. This, however, neither interrupted their mirth nor their diversion, nor gave the least truce to the lamentations of Sancho, who prayed and threatened by turns, as he flew. Indeed, nothing of this sort, either could or did avail him, until, leaving off, out of pure weariness, they thought fit to wrap him up in his great coat, and set him on his ass again. The compassionate Maritornes seeing him so much fatigued, thought he would be the better for a draught of water, which, that it might be the cooler, she fetched from the well; and Sancho had just put the mug to his lips, when his draught was retarded by the voice of his master, who cried aloud, "Son Sancho, drink not water, drink not that which will be the occasion of thy death, my son; behold this most sacred balsam, (holding up the cruze of potion in his hand) two drops of which will effectually cure thee." At these words, the squire eyed him, as it were, askance, and in a tone still more vociferous, replied, "Perchance your worship has forgot that I am no knight; or may be, you want to see me vomit up all the entrails I have left, after last night's quandary. Keep your liquor for yourself, and may all the devils in hell give you joy of it; and leave me to my own discretion." He had no sooner pronounced these words, than he began to swallow, and perceiving at the first draught, that the cordial was no other than water, he did not chuse to repeat it; but, desired Maritornes to bring him some wine. This request she complied with very cheerfully, and paid for it with her own money, for, it was reported of her, that although she was reduced to that low degree in life, she actually retained some faint sketches and shadows of the christian.

Sancho having finished his draught, clapped heels to his ass, and the inn-gate being thrown wide open, sallied forth, very well satisfied with having got off, without paying any thing, although he had succeeded at the expence of his shoulders, which were, indeed his usual sureties. True, it is, the landlord had detained his bags for the reckoning; but, these Sancho did not miss, in the confusion of his retreat. As soon as he was clear of the house, the innkeeper would have barricadoed the gate, had he not been prevented by the blanket-companions, who were of that sort of people, who would not have valued Don Quixote a farthing, even if he had been actually one of the knights of the Round-Table.

## C H A P. IV.

In which is recounted the discourse that passed between Sancho Panza and his master Don Quixote ; with other adventures worthy of record.

**S**ANCHO made shift to overtake his master, so haggard and dismayed, that he was scarce able to manage his beast ; and when the knight perceived his melancholy situation, “ Honeſt Sancho, ſaid he, I am now convinced beyond all doubt, that this caſtle or inn is enchanted ; for, thoſe who made ſuch a barbarous paſtime of thy ſufferings, could be no other than phantomes and beings belonging to the other world. I am confirmed in this opinion, from having found, that while I was by the wall of the yard, a ſpectator of the acts of thy mournful tragedy, I could neither climb over to thy aſſiſtance, nor indeed move from Rozinante, but, was fixed in the ſaddle by the power of enchantment ; for, I ſwear to thee, by the faith of my character ! if I could have alighted from my ſteed, and ſurmounted the wall, I would have revenged thy wrongs, in ſuch a manner, that thoſe idle miſcreants ſhould have remembered the jeſt to their dying day : altho’ I know, that in ſo doing, I ſhould have tranſgreſſed the laws of chivalry, which, I have often told thee, do not allow a knight to lift his arm againſt any perſon of an inferior degree, except in defence of his own life and limbs, or in caſes of the moſt preſſing neceſſity.” “ So would I have revenged myſelf, ſaid Sancho, knighted or not knighted ; but, it was not in my power ; tho’ I am very well ſatiſfied, that thoſe who diverted themſelves at my coſt, were no phantomes, nor enchanted beings, as your worſhip imagines, but men made of fleſh and bones, as we are, and all of them have chriſtian names, which I heard repeated, while they toſſed me in the blanket : one, for example, is called Pedro Martinez, another Tenorio Hernandez, and the inn-keeper goes by the name of Juan Palameque the left-handed : and therefore, ſignor, your being diſabled from alighting and getting over the wall, muſt have been owing to ſomething elſe than enchantment. What I can clearly diſcern from the whole, is, that theſe adventures we go in ſearch of, will, at the long run, bring us into ſuch miſventures, that we ſhall not know our right hands from our left : and therefore, in my ſmall judgment, the beſt and wholeſomeſt thing we can do, will be to jog back again to our own habitation, now while the harveſt is going on, to take care of our crops, and leave off fauntering from \* poſt to pillar, and falling out of the frying-pan into the fire, as the ſaying is.”

\* In the original from Ceca to Mecca ; a phraſe derived from the cuſtoms of the Moors, who uſed to go in pilgrimage to theſe two places. Ceca was in the city of Cordova.

“ How



How little art thou acquainted, Sancho, replied Don Quixote, with the pretensions of chivalry! hold thy tongue and have patience; for, the day will soon arrive, on which thy own eyes shall judge what an honourable profession it is: pray, tell me, now, what greater satisfaction can there be in this world, or what pleasure can equal that of a conqueror, who triumphs over his adversary in battle? None sure!" "That may be, answered the squire, tho' I know nothing of the matter. This only I know, that since we have taken up the trade of knights-errant, your worship, I mean, for, as to my own part, I have no manner of title to be reckoned in such an honourable list, we have not gained one battle, except that with the Biscayan; and even there, your worship came off with half an ear, and the loss of one side of your helmet: from that day, to this good hour, our lot hath been nothing but cudgelling upon cudgelling, pummelling upon pummelling; except the advantage I have had over your worship, in being tossed in a blanket by enchanted Moors, whom I cannot be revenged of, in order to know how pleasant a pastime it is, to overcome one's enemy, as your worship observes." "That is the very grievance, Sancho, under which both you and I labour, said Don Quixote; but, for the future, I will endeavour to procure a sword tempered with such masterly skill, that he who wears it, shall be subject to no kind of enchantment: and who knows, but accident may furnish me with that which Amadis possessed, when he stiled himself the knight of the flaming sword; and truly it was one of the most excellent blades that ever a warrior unsheath'd; for, besides that sovereign virtue it contained, it cut keen as a razor, and no armour, tho' ever so strong or enchanted, could stand before its edge." "I am so devilishly lucky, said Sancho, that if the case was really so, and your worship should light on that same sword, it would, like the precious balsam, be of no service or security to any but your true knights; and we that are squires might sing for sorrow." "Thou must not be afraid of that, replied the knight, heaven will surely deal more mercifully with thee."

In such conversation, Don Quixote and his squire jogged along, when the former descrying on the road in which they travelled, a large and thick cloud of dust rolling towards them, turned to Sancho, saying, "This, O Sancho! is the day that shall manifest the great things which fortune hath in store for me! This, I say, is the day, on which the valour of this arm shall be displayed as much as upon any other occasion; and on which, I am resolved to perform deeds that shall remain engraven on the leaves of fame to all posterity! Seest thou that cloud of dust before us? The whole of it is raised by a vast army, composed of various and innumerable nations that are marching this way." "By that way of reckoning there must be two, said Sancho, for right over against it, there is just such another." Don Quixote

immediately turned his eyes, and perceiving Sancho's information to be true, was rejoiced, beyond measure; firmly believing that what he saw, were two armies in full march to attack each other, and engage in the middle of that spacious plain; for, every hour and minute of the day, his imagination was engrossed by those battles, enchantments, dreadful accidents, extravagant amours and rhodomontades, which are recorded in books of chivalry; and indeed every thing he thought, said, or did, had a tendency that way.

As for the dust he now saw, it was raised by two flocks of sheep which chanced to be driven from different parts into the same road, and were so much involved in this cloud of their own making, that it was impossible to discern them until they were very near. The knight affirmed they were armies, with such assurance, that Sancho actually believed it, and said to his master, "And pray now, good your worship, what must we do?" "What, answered Don Quixote, but assist and support that side which is weak and discomfited? Thou must know, Sancho, that yonder host which fronts us, is led and commanded by the mighty emperor Alifanfaron sovereign of the great island of Trapoban; and that other behind us, belongs to his mortal enemy the king of the Garamanteans, known by the name of Pentapolin with the naked arm, because he always goes to battle with the sleeve of his right arm tucked up." "But why are those chieftains so mischievously inclined towards each other?" said Sancho. "The cause of their enmity, replied the knight, is this: Alifanfaron, who is a most outrageous pagan, is enamoured of Pentapolin's daughter, a most beautiful and courteous lady, who being a christian, her father will by no means betroth her to the infidel prince, unless he shall first renounce the law of his false prophet Mahomet, and become a convert to the true faith." "Now, by my whiskers! cried Sancho, king Pentapolin is an honest man, and I am resolved to give him all the assistance in my power. "In so doing, thou wilt perform thy duty, Sancho, said his master, for, to engage in such battles as these, it is not necessary to be dubbed a knight." "That I can easily comprehend, replied the other, but, where shall we secure the ass, that we may be sure of finding him after the fray is over; for, I believe it is not the fashion now-a-days, to go to battle on such a beast." "True, said the knight, and I think the best way will be to leave him to his chance, whether he be lost or not; for, we shall have such choice of steeds, when once we have gained the victory, that Rozinante himself will run some risk of being exchanged for another: but, observe and listen attentively; I will now give thee a detail of the principal knights that serve in these two armies; and that thou mayest see and mark them the better, let us retire to yon rising ground, from whence we can distinctly view the line of battle in both." They accordingly placed themselves upon  
a hil-

a hillock, whence they could easily have discerned the two flocks of sheep which Don Quixote metamorphosied into armies, had not the dust they raised confounded and obscured the view: but, nevertheless, beholding in his imagination, that which could not otherwise be seen, because it did not exist, he began to pronounce with an audible voice:

“That knight whom thou seest with yellow armour, bearing in his shield, a lion crowned and crouching at the feet of a young lady, is the gallant Laucalco lord of the silver bridge; that other beside him, who wears armour powdered with flowers of gold, and bears for his device three crowns argent in a field azure, is the amorous Micocolembo grand duke of Quiracia; and he upon his right hand, with those gigantic limbs, is the never to be daunted Brandabarbaran de Boliche, sovereign of the three Arabias, who comes armed with a serpent’s skin, and instead of a shield, brandishes a huge gate, which, it is said, belonged to the temple that Samson overthrew, when he avenged himself of his enemies at his death: but, turn thine eyes, and behold, in the front of this other army, the ever conquering and never conquered Timonel de Carcajona, prince of New-biscay, whose arms are quartered azure, vert, argent and or; and the device in his shield, a cat or, in a field gules with the letters Miau, which constitute the beginning of his lady’s name; and she, they say, is the peerless Miaulina, daughter of Alfeniquen duke of Algarve: the other, who loads and oppresses the loins of that fiery Arabian steed, with armour white as snow, and a shield without device, is a novice knight of the French nation, called Pierre Papin baron of Utrique: the third, who strikes his iron rowels into the flanks of that spotted, nimble \*Zebra, is the potent duke of Nerbia, espartafilardo of the wood, who bears in his shield for a device, a bunch of asparagus, with an inscription signifying, By Destiny I’m dogged.”

In this manner did he invent names for a great many knights in either army, to all of whom also he gave arms, colours, mottos and devices, without the least hesitation, being incredibly inspired by the fumes of a distempered fancy; nay, he proceeded without any pause, saying, “That squadron forming in our front, is composed of people of divers nations: there be those who drink the delicious waters of the celebrated Xanthus, with the mountaneers who tread the Masilican plains; and those who sift the purest golden ore of Arabia felix: there also, may be seen the people who sport upon the cool and famous banks of the translucent Thermodonte; and those who conduct the yellow Pactolus in many a winding stream; the promise-breaking Numidians; the Persians for their archery renowned; the Parthians and the Medes who combat as they fly; the Arabians famed for shifting habitations; the Scythians cruel as they are fair; the thick-lipp’d

\* Zebra is a beautiful creature, native of Arabia, vulgarly called the wild ass.

race of Æthiopia, and an infinite variety of other nations, whose looks I know and can discern, tho' I cannot recollect their names. In that other Squadron march those men, who lave in the crystal current of the olive-bearing Betis; those whose visages are cleaned and polished with the limpid wave of the ever rich and golden Tagus; those who delight in the salutiferous draughts of Genil the divine; those who scour the Tartesian fields, that with fat pasture teem; those who make merry in the Elysian meads of Herezan; the rich Manchegans crowned with ruddy ears of corn; those clothed in steel the bold remains of ancient Gothic blood; those who bathe in Pisuerga famous for its gentle current; those who feed their flocks upon the spacious meads of the meandring Guadiana, celebrated for its secret course; those who shiver with the chill blasts of the woody Pyrenees, and those who feel the snowy flakes of lofty Appenine: in fine, whatever nations Europe imbosoms and contains."

Heaven preserve us! what provinces did he mention! what nations did he name; bestowing, with wonderful facility, those attributes that belonged to each; being all the while, absorpt, and, as it were, immersed in the contents of his deceitful books. Sancho Panza listened attentively to his master, without uttering one syllable; and from time to time, turned his eyes from one side to another, to see if he could discern those knights and giants who were thus described: but, not being able to discover one of them, "Sir, said he, your worship may say what you please, but, the devil a man, giant or knight that you have mentioned is there; at least, I can see none: perhaps indeed the whole is enchantment, like the phantomes of last night." "How say'st thou? replied Don Quixote, do'st thou not hear the neighing of steeds, the sound of clarions, and noise of drums?" "I hear nothing, answered Sancho, but abundance of bleating of ewes and lambs." and truly, that was the case: for, by this time, the two flocks were pretty near them." "Thy fear, said Don Quixote, hinders thee from seeing and hearing aright; for, one effect of terror, is to disturb the senses, and make objects appear otherwise than they are: if thou art, therefore, under such consternation, retire on one side, and leave me alone; for, I myself, am sufficient to bestow victory on that cause which I espouse." So saying, he clapped spurs to Rozinante, and putting his lance in the rest, darted down from the hillock like lightning. In vain did Sancho bellow forth, "Turn, signor Don Quixote: good your worship turn! so help me God! those are ewes and lambs you are going to attack! woe be to the father that begat me! will you not turn? What madness possesses you! Consider, here are no giants, nor knights, nor cats, nor arms, nor shields quartered or whole; nor inverted azures, and the devil knows what: was there ever such distraction? sinner that I am!"



The knight, however, did not regard this exclamation: on the contrary, he rode on, bauling aloud, "So ho, knights! you that attend and serve under the banners of the valiant emperor Pantapolin with the naked arm, follow me in a body, and you shall behold, how easily I will avenge him on his adversary Alifanfaron of Trapoban." Having uttered these words, he rushed into the thickest of the squadron of sheep, and began to lay about him, with as much eagerness and fury, as if he had been actually engaged with his mortal enemies. The herdsmen and shepherds who were driving the flock, called to him to forbear; but, finding their admonition had no effect, they ungirded their slings, and began to salute his ears with stones, the least of which was as large as an ordinary fist: but he, far from minding their missiles, rode about the field, crying, "Where art thou, proud Alifanfaron? face me, if thou darest; I am but a single knight, who want to prove thy prowess, hand to hand, and sacrifice thy life for the injury thou hast done to Pentapolin Garamanta." Just as he pronounced these words, he received a pebble on his side, that seemed to have buried a couple of his ribs in his belly; and gave him such a rude shock, that he believed himself either dead or desperately wounded: then remembering his specific, he pulled out the cruze, and setting it to his mouth, began to swallow the balsam; but, before he had drank what he thought a sufficient dose, there came another such almond, so plum upon his hand and cruze, that after having shivered the pot to pieces, it carried off in its way, three or four of his grinders, and shattered two of his fingers in a grievous manner: in short, so irresistible were both the applications, that the poor knight could not help tumbling from his horse. The shepherds immediately came up, and believing him actually dead, gathered together their flock with all imaginable dispatch, and taking their dead, which might be about seven in number, upon their shoulders, made off without any further inquiry.

All this time Sancho remained upon the hill, beholding, with amazement, the madness of his master, tearing his beard, and cursing the hour and minute on which it was his fate to know him: and now seeing him fallen, and the shepherds gone, he descended to his assistance, when finding him still sensible, tho' in a miserable situation, "Did not I warn you, signor Don Quixote, said he, to turn, and assure you that those you went to attack were no armies, but flocks of innocent sheep?" "How strangely can that miscreant enchanter, who is my enemy, transmography things to thwart me? Know, Sancho, that it is a very easy matter for negromancers to make us assume what shapes they please; and the malicious wretch who persecutes me, envying the glory I should have gained in this battle, hath doubtless metamorphosed the squadrons of the foe, into flocks of sheep: but, thou shalt do one thing, I intreat thee, Sancho, in order to be undeceived and convinced of the truth;

mount thy afs, and follow them fair and softly; and, when they are at a convenient distance from hence, thou wilt see them return to their former shapes, and ceasing to be sheep, become men again, right and tight as I at first described them; but, do not go at present, for, I have occasion for thy service and assistance: come hither, and see how many teeth I have lost; methinks, there is not one left in my whole jaw.

Sancho accordingly approached so near, as to thrust his eyes, as it were, into his master's mouth, just at the time when the balsam began to operate in his stomach, which, with the force of a culverin, discharged its contents full in the beard of the compassionate squire. "Holy virgin! cried Sancho, what is this that hath befallen me? without doubt this poor sinner is mortally wounded, since he vomits blood." But, considering the case more maturely, he found, by the colour, taste and smell, that it was not blood, but the balsam he had seen him drink: and such was the loathing he conceived at this recognition, that his stomach turned, and he emptied his bowels upon his master; so that both of them remained in a handsome pickle. Sancho ran to his afs, for a towel to clean them, and some application for his master's hurt, but, when he missed his bags, he had well nigh lost his senses; he cursed his fate again, and determined with himself to leave the knight, and return to his habitation, even tho' he should lose his wages for the time he had already served, as well as his hopes of governing the island of Promise.

At this juncture, Don Quixote arose, and clapping his left hand to his cheek, in order to prevent his teeth from falling out, with the right laid hold of the bridle of Rozinante, who, like a faithful and affectionate servant, had never stirred from his master's side; and went up to the place where his squire stood, leaning upon his afs, with one hand applied to his jaw, in the posture of a person who is exceedingly pensive: the knight perceiving him in this situation, with manifest signs of melancholy in his countenance, "Know, Sancho, said he, that one man is no more than another, unless he can do more than another. All those hurricanes that have happened to us, prognosticate that we shall soon have fair weather, and that every thing will succeed to our wish: for, it is impossible that either good or bad fortune should be eternal; and therefore it follows, that our adversity having lasted so long, our prosperity must be now at hand. Be not grieved then, at the misfortunes that happen to me, since no part of them falls to thy share." "Not to my share! answered Sancho, mayhap then, he whom they tossed in a blanket, yesterday, was not the son of my father: and the bags that are lost to-day, with all the goods in them, belonged to some other person." "What! hast thou lost the bags, Sancho!" cried Don Quixote. "Yes, sure," said the other. "At that rate, then, we have no victuals to eat?" resumed



J. Hayman inv. et del.

C. Grignon Sculp.



sumed the knight : “ That would certainly be the case, answered the squire, if the meadows did not furnish those herbs you say, you know, with which, unfortunate knights like your worship, are wont to make up such losses.” “ Yes, but for all that, replied Don Quixote, I could at present relish a luncheon of brown bread, or a loaf with a couple of red herrings, better than all the herbs described by Dioscorides, even with the annotations of doctor Laguna ; but, nevertheless, mount thy beast, honest Sancho, and follow me : God, who provides all things, will not be wanting to us ; more especially, as we are employed in his immediate service : he faileth not to provide for the gnats of the air, the insects of the earth, the spawn of the sea ; and is so beneficent, as to cause the sun to shine upon the good and bad, and sendeth rain to the wicked as well as to the righteous.” “ Your worship, said Sancho, is more fit to be a preacher than a knight-errant.” “ Knights-errant, replied his master, ever had, and ought to have, some knowledge of every thing : nay, some there have been in times past, who would stop to make a sermon or discourse upon the highway, with as much eloquence, as if they had taken their degrees at the university of Paris : from whence, it may be inferred, that the lance was never blunted by the pen, nor the quill impeded by the lance.” “ What your worship observes, may be very true, said Sancho, but, in the mean time, let us leave this place, and endeavour to get a night’s lodging in some house or other, where God grant there may be neither blankets nor blanketeers, nor phantomes, nor enchanted Moors ; else, may the devil confound both hook and crook !”

“ Implore the protection of God, my son, answered the knight, and lead me where thou wilt : for this once, I leave our lodging to thy care ; but, reach hither thy hand, and feel with thy finger, how many teeth I have lost on this right side of my upper jaw, which is the place that gives me the greatest pain.” Sancho introduced his fingers, and having carefully examined his gums, “ How many teeth, said he, was your worship wont to have in this place ?” “ Four, besides the dog-tooth, answered Don Quixote, all of them sound and whole.” “ Consider what your worship says ?” replied Sancho. “ I say four, if not five, resumed the knight ; for, in all my life, I never lost tooth or fang, either by worm, rheum or scurvy.” “ At present, said the squire, in that part of the lower jaw, your worship has but two grinders and a half ; and above, neither half nor whole ; all is smooth as the palm of my hand.” “ Cruel fortune ! cried Don Quixote, hearing this melancholy piece of news, would they had rather demolished a limb, so it had not been the sword arm : for, I would have thee to know, Sancho, that a mouth without grinders, is like a mill without a millstone ;

and a \* tooth is worth a treasure; but, such mischances always attend us who profess the strict order of chivalry: get up, friend, and lead the way, and I will follow at thy own pace." Sancho complied with his desire, and took the way that seemed most likely to lead to some accommodation, without quitting the high road, which was thereabouts very much frequented. While they jogged on softly, because the pain in Don Quixote's jaws would not suffer him to be quiet, or exert himself in pushing forward, Sancho being desirous of entertaining and diverting him with his discourse, said, among other things, what will be rehearsed in the following chapter.

#### C H A P. V.

An account of the sage discourse that passed between Sancho and his master: the succeeding adventure of the corpse, with other remarkable events.

I N my opinion, my good master, all the misventures, which have this day happened to us, are designed as a punishment for the sins committed by your worship, in neglecting to fulfil the oath you took, not to eat off a table-cloth, nor solace yourself with the queen; together with all the rest that follows, which your worship swore to observe, until such time as you could carry off that helmet of Malandrino, or how d'ye call the Moor? for I don't remember his right name." "Thou art very much in the right, said Don Quixote: to deal ingenuously with thee, Sancho, that affair had actually slipped out of my remembrance; and thou mayest depend upon it, that affair of the blanketing happened to thee, for the fault thou wast guilty of, in omitting to put me in mind of it, in time: but, I will make an atonement; for, there are methods for compounding every thing, in the order of chivalry." "Did I swear any thing?" replied Sancho. "Your not having sworn is of no importance, said Don Quixote; it is enough that I know you to be concerned as an accessary; and whether that be the case or not, it will not be amiss to provide a remedy." "Well then, replied the squire, I hope your worship will not forget this, as you did the oath: perhaps the phantoms may take it in their heads again, to divert themselves with me, and even with your worship, if they find you obstinate."

In this and other such discourse, night overtook them in the midst of their journey, before they could light on or discover any house where they could procure lodging; and what was worse, they were almost famished: for, in their bags, they had lost their whole buttry and provision; nay, to crown their mis-

\* I have endeavoured to preserve an alliteration in tooth and treasure, after the example of Cervantes, who seems to have intended it, in the words *Diente* and *Diamante*.

fortune,

fortune, an adventure happened to them, that without any exaggeration, might have actually passed for something preternatural. Though the night shut in very dark, they continued travelling, Sancho believing, that as they were in the king's highway, they should probably find an inn, at the distance of a league or two.

Jogging on therefore, under cloud of night, the squire exceeding hungry, and the master very well disposed to eat, they descried upon the road before them a vast number of lights, that seemed like moving stars, approaching them. Sancho was confounded at the sight, the meaning of which, even Don Quixote could not comprehend: the one checked his ass, the other pulled in his horse's bridle, and both halted, in order to gaze attentively at the apparition of the lights, which seemed to increase the nearer they came. This being perceived by the squire, he began to quake like quicksilver; and the hair bristled up on Don Quixote's head: nevertheless, recollecting himself a little, "Without doubt, Sancho, said he, this must be a vast and perilous adventure, in which I shall be obliged to exert my whole strength and prowess." "Woe is me! cried Sancho, if perchance this should be an adventure of phantoms, as I am afraid it is, where shall I find ribs for the occasion?" "Phantoms or not phantoms, said the knight, I will not suffer them to touch a thread of thy cloaths: if they made merry at thy expence before, it was owing to my incapacity to climb over the yard wall: but, at present, we are in an open field, where I can manage my sword, as I please." "But, if they should benumb and bewitch you, as they did in the morning, said the squire, what benefit shall I receive from being in the open field?" "Be that as it will, replied Don Quixote, I beseech thee, Sancho, be of good courage; and thou shalt soon know by experience, how much I am master of that virtue." Sancho accordingly, promised to do his best, with God's assistance: then they both stept to one side of the road, and began to gaze again with great attention: while they were thus endeavouring to discern the meaning of the lights, they perceived a great number of persons in white: which dreadful vision entirely extinguished the courage of Sancho Panza, whose teeth began to chatter, as if he had been in the cold fit of an ague; and this agitation and chattering increased, when they saw them more distinctly: for, first and foremost appeared about twenty persons on horseback, all of them cloathed in white, with each a lighted flambeau in his hand, muttering in a low and plaintive tone. Behind them, came a litter covered with black, followed by six mounted cavaliers in deep mourning, that trailed at the very heels of their mules, which were easily distinguished from horses, by the slowness of their pace.

This

This strange vision at such an hour, and in such a desert place, was, surely, sufficient to smite the heart of Sancho with fear, and even make an impression upon his master; and this would have been the case, had he been any other than Don Quixote: as for the squire, his whole stock of resolution went to wreck. It was not so with his master, whose imagination clearly represented to him, that this was exactly an adventure of the same kind with those he had read in books of chivalry: that the close litter was a bier, in which was carried some dead or wounded knight, the revenge of whose wrongs was reserved for him alone: wherefore, without canvassing the matter any further, he set his lance in the rest, fixed himself in his seat, and with the most genteel and gallant deportment, placing himself in the middle of the road, through which they were indispenfibly obliged to pass; he raised his voice, and called to them as they approached:

“Halt, knights, whosoever ye are, and give an account of yourselves: whence come ye? whither go ye? and what are you carrying off in that bier? for, in all appearance, you have either done, or are doing, an injury to some person: and it is necessary and convenient that I should know it, in order to chastise you for what you are now doing, or revenge the wrong you have already done.” “We are at present, in a hurry, (replied one of the phantomes in white; the inn we intend to lodge at is far off, and we cannot stay to give such a tedious account as you desire.” So saying, he spurred on his mule; while Don Quixote, mightily incensed at this reply, laid hold of his bridle, saying, “Stand, and answer the questions I have asked, with more civility; otherwise, I will give battle to you all.”

The mule being skittish, was frightened in such a manner, at being seized by the bridle, that rearing on her hind feet, she fell backward upon her rider; and a servant on foot, seeing his master fall, began to revile Don Quixote, whose choler being already provoked, he couched his lance, and without hesitation, attacked one of the mourners, who soon fell to the ground, most miserably mauled: then wheeling about, upon the rest, it was surprizing to see with what dispatch he assaulted and put them to the rout! while Rozinante acted with such agility and fury, that one would have sworn, at that instant, a pair of wings had sprung from his back. All the squadron arrayed in white, was composed of timorous and unarmed people, who were fain to get out of the fray, as soon as possible, and began to fly across the plain, with their lighted torches, like so many maskers in carnival time. The mourners being involved and intangled in their long robes, could not stir out of the way: so that Don Quixote, without running any risk, drubbed them all round, and obliged them at length to quit the field, much against their inclination; for, they actually believed he was no man,  
but







F. Hayman inv<sup>t</sup>

J. Ravenet Sculp<sup>t</sup>

but a devil incarnate, who lay in wait to carry off the dead body that was in the litter.

All this while Sancho stood beholding with admiration the courage and intrepidity of the knight; saying within himself, "This master of mine is certainly as strong and valiant as he pretends to be."

Mean while, Don Quixote, by the light of a torch that lay burning on the ground, perceiving the first whom the mule overthrew, rode up to him, and clapping the point of his lance to the poor man's throat, commanded him to yield; otherwise, he would put him to death. To this declaration the other answered, "Methinks I am already sufficiently quiet; for, one of my legs is broke, so that I cannot stir: I beseech your worship, therefore, if you be a christian, not to kill me, as in so doing, you will commit the horrid sin of sacrilege; for, I am a licentiate, and have taken holy orders." "If you are an ecclesiastic, what the devil brought you here?" cried Don Quixote. "The devil indeed I think it was," answered the overthrown priest: "You will have to do with worse than the devil, said the knight, if you refuse the satisfaction I at first demanded." "That is easily granted: replied the other, and in the first place, your worship must know, that tho' I just now called myself a licentiate, I am no more than a batchelor: my name is Alonzo Lopez; I was born at Alcovendas; and now come from the city of Baeça, in company with eleven other priests, who are those who fled with the torches: we are convoying to Segovia that litter, which contains the corpse of a gentleman who died in Baeça, where it was deposited till now, (as I was saying) that we are carrying his bones to be interred at Segovia, which was the place of his nativity." And who killed him?" said Don Quixote. "God himself, replied the batchelor, by means of a pestilential calenture that seized him!" "At that rate, resumed the knight, the Lord hath saved me the trouble of avenging his death, as I would have done, had he been slain by any mortal arm; but, considering how he died, there is nothing to be done, except to thrug up our shoulders in silence: for, this is all that could happen, even if I myself should fall by the same hand; and I desire your reverence would take notice, that I am a knight of La Mancha, called Don Quixote, whose office and exercise it is, to travel thro' the world, redressing grievances, and righting wrongs\*." "I do not know how you can call this behaviour righting wrongs, said the batchelor: I am sure you have changed my right into wrong, by breaking my leg, which will never be set to rights again so long as I live; and the grievances you have redressed for me, have been to aggrieve me in such manner, as that I shall never cease to grieve at my misventure, in meeting with you, while you was

\* Knights engaged themselves, by oath, to protect the widow and the orphan, to redress all injuries, and in a special manner, to defend the characters of ladies by force of arms.

in search of adventures." "All things do not equally succeed, observed the knight; it was the misfortune of you and your companions, Mr. Batchelor Alonzo Lopez, to travel in the night, with these surplices and lighted flambeaus, singing all the way, before people clad in deep mourning, so that you seemed a company of ghosts broke from the other world; therefore, I could not help performing my duty in attacking you: and I would have behaved in the same manner, had I actually known you to be really and truly the inhabitants of hell; for, such indeed I thought you were." "Since my hard fate would have it so, said the batchelor, I intreat your worship, Sir knight-errant, who have been the cause of an unlucky errand to me, to help me in getting from under the mule, which keeps one of my legs fast jammed between the stirrup and the saddle." "I might have talked on till morning, said the knight; why did not you inform me of your distress sooner?"

He then called aloud to Sancho, who was in no hurry to hear him, but busy in rummaging a sumpter mule which those honest priests brought along with them, well furnished with provisions. Having made a bag of his great coat, into which he crammed as much of their victuals as it would hold, he loaded his ass with the bundle, and then running up to his master, helped to free Mr. Batchelor from the oppression of his mule, on which, having mounted him, with a torch in his hand, Don Quixote advised him to follow the rout of his companions; and desired him to beg their pardon in his name, for the injury he had done them, as it was not in his power to avoid it. Sancho likewise interposing, said, "If in case the gentlemen should want to know, who the valiant hero is, who put them to flight, your worship may tell them, that he is the famous Don Quixote de la Mancha, otherwise surnamed the Knight of the rueful Countenance."

Thus dismissed, the batchelor pursued his way; and the knight asked what had induced Sancho, now, rather than at any other time, to stile him the Knight of the rueful Countenance. "Truly, answered Sancho, I have been looking at you some time, by the light of that torch the unfortunate traveller held in his hand; and in good faith, your worship cuts the most dismal figure I have almost ever seen; and it must certainly be occasioned either by the fatigue you have undergone in this battle, or by the want of your teeth." "That is not the case, replied his master; but, the sage who is destined to write the history of my exploits, hath thought proper that I should assume some appellation, by the example of former knights, one of whom took the title of the Flaming Sword; another, of the Unicorn; a third, of the Ladies; a fourth, of the Phœnix; a fifth, of the Griffin; a sixth, called himself the Knight of death: and by these epithets and symbols, they were known all over the face of the earth; and therefore, I say, that

that the fore-mentioned sage hath now put it into thy thoughts, and directed thy tongue to call me the knight of the rueful Contenance; an appellation that henceforward I adopt: and that it may suit me the better, I am resolved to have a most woeful figure painted upon my shield, with the first opportunity." "There is no occasion, said Sancho, to throw away time and money on such a device; your worship has no more to do, but uncover your own face; and I'll warrant, those who behold it, will call it a rueful one, without your having recourse to pictures and shields to explain your meaning; and you may believe I tell you nothing but the truth, when I maintain, tho' it be but in jest, that hunger and the want of teeth, makes your worship look so ill-favouredly, that we may very well save the expence of a rueful picture."

Don Quixote could not help laughing at the pleasantry of Sancho, tho' he actually determined to assume that name, and have his shield and target painted according to his fancy. "I know, Sancho, said he, that I have incurred the sentence of excommunication, for having laid violent hands on consecrated things, according to the canon; 'Si quis suadente diabolo, &c.' yet, you know, I touched them not with my hands, but with my lance; and even then, never dreamed of injuring priests, or of giving the smallest offence to the church, which I respect and adore, like a faithful catholic and christian as I am; but, on the contrary, took them for phantomes and beings of another world: but, the case being as it is, I remember what happened to the Cid Ruy Diaz, who broke to pieces the chair of a certain king's ambassador, in presence of his holiness the pope; for which outrage he was excommunicated; and that very day, the worthy Rodrigo de Vivar, behaved like a valiant and honourable knight."

The batchelor being gone, as we have observed, without answering one word, Don Quixote expressed a desire of examining the litter, to see if it really contained a corpse; but, Sancho would by no means consent to this inquiry; saying, "Your worship has already finished this perilous adventure, with less damage to yourself, than I have seen you receive in any other; but, the people whom you have conquered and overthrown, may chance to recollect that they were vanquished by a single man, and be so much ashamed and confounded at their own cowardice, as to rally, and if they find us, give us our belly-full. Dapple is at present very comfortably furnished, there is an uninhabited mountain hard by, hunger is craving, we have nothing to do, but retreat thither at a gentle trot; and, as the saying is, 'the dead to the bier, and the living to good cheer.' With these words, he took the lead with his ass, and the knight thinking there was a good deal of reason in what he said, followed him very peaceably, without making any reply.

When they had travelled a little way between two hills, they found themselves in a spacious and retired valley, where they alighted; Sancho unloaded the as, they sat down on the green turf, and with hunger for their sauce, dispatched their breakfast, dinner, afternoon's luncheon and supper at one meal; solacing their stomachs out of more than one basket, which the ecclesiastical attendants of the defunct, who seldom neglect these things, had brought along with them on their sumpter mule: but, another misfortune befel them, which in Sancho's opinion was the worst that could happen; they had not one drop of wine to drink, nor indeed of water to cool their throats, so that they were parched with thirst: then, the squire perceiving the meadow where they sat, was overgrown with green and tender grass, made the proposal which may be seen in the following chapter.

#### C H A P. VI.

Of the unseen and unheard-of adventure atchieved by the valiant Don Quixote de la Mancha, with less hazard than ever attended any exploit performed by the most renowned knight on earth.

“**T**HIS grass, my good master, proves beyond all contradiction, that there must be some spring or rivulet hereabouts, by which it is watered; and therefore, we had better proceed a little farther, until we find wherewith to allay this terrible thirst, which is more painful and fatiguing than hunger alone.” This advice appearing rational to Don Quixote, he took hold of Rozinante's bridle, and Sancho leading Dapple by the halter, after he had loaded him again with the fragments of their supper, they began to move farther into the meadow, at a venture, for the night was so dark, they could not distinguish one object from another: but, they had not gone two hundred paces, when their ears were saluted with a prodigious noise of water, that seemed to rush down from some huge and lofty rocks: they were infinitely rejoiced at the sound, when, halting to listen, that they might know whence it came, they were all of a sudden surprised with another kind of noise, that soon damped the pleasure occasioned by the water, especially in Sancho, who was naturally fearful and faint-hearted: I say, they heard the sound of regular strokes, accompanied with strange clanking of iron chains, which, added to the dreadful din of the cataract, would have smote the heart of any other but Don Quixote with fear and consternation.

The night, as we have already observed, was dark, our travellers happened at this time to be in a grove of tall trees, whose leaves, moved gently  
by

by the wind, yielded a sort of dreary whisper: so, that the solitude of the place, the darkness of the night, the noise of the water, and rustling of the leaves, concurred to inspire them with horror and dismay: the more so, as the strokes were continued, the wind sighed on, and the morning was far off; and all these circumstances were aggravated by their ignorance of the place in which they were. But, Don Quixote encouraged by his own intrepid heart, mounted Rozinante, braced his shield, and brandishing his lance, “ Friend Sancho, cried he, know that I was born by heaven’s appointment, in these iron times, to revive the age of gold, or, as it is usually called, the golden age. I am he, for whom strange perils, valiant deeds, and vast adventures are reserved! I am he, I say, ordained to re-establish the knights of the round table, the twelve peers of France, with the nine worthies! he, whose feats shall bury in oblivion, the Platirs, Tablantes, Olivantes, and Tirantes, the Febufes and Belianises, together with the whole tribe of knights-errant who lived in former times: performing such mighty and amazing deeds of arms, as will eclipse their most renowned acts! Consider well, thou true and loyal squire, the darkness and the solemn stillness of this night, the indistinct and hollow whispering of these trees, the dreadful din of that water we came to seek, which seems to rush and rumble down from the lofty mountains of the moon; together with these incessant strokes that strike and wound our ears: all those circumstances united, or each singly by itself, is sufficient to infuse fear, terror and dismay, into the breast of Mars himself; much more in him who is altogether unaccustomed to such adventures and events. Yet, all I have described are only incentives that awaken my courage, and already cause my heart to rebound within my breast, with desire to atchieve this adventure, howsoever difficult it may appear to be! Therefore, straiten Rozinante’s girth, recommend thyself to God, and wait for me in this place, three days at farthest, within which time, if I come not back, thou may’st return to our village, and, as the last favour and service done to me, go from thence to Toboso, and inform my incomparable mistress, Dulcinea, that her captive knight died in attempting things that might render him worthy to be called her lover.”

When Sancho heard these last words of his master, he began to blubber with incredible tenderness. “ I cannot conceive, said he, why your worship should attempt such a terrible adventure: it is now dark, and no body sees us; therefore, we may turn out of this road and avoid the danger, tho’ we should not taste liquor these three days; and if no body sees us, we run no risk of being accused of cowardice: besides, I have heard the curate of our town, whom your worship knows very well, remark, in his preaching, ‘ he that seeketh danger perisheth therein: therefore it must be a sin to tempt God by engaging in this rash exploit, from whence there is no escaping

without a miracle: and heaven hath wrought enow of them already, in preserving you from being blanketed as I was, and bringing you off conqueror, and sound wind and limb, from the midst of so many adversaries as accompanied the dead man: and if all this will not move you, nor soften your rugged heart, sure you will relent, when you consider, and are assured, that your worship will be scarce gone from hence, when I shall, thro' pure fear, yield my life to any thing that may chuse to take it. I left my habitation, wife and children, to come and serve your worship, believing it would be the better, not the worse for me so to do: but, as greediness bursts the bag, so is the bag of my hopes bursten; for, when they are at the highest pitch, in expectation of that curst unlucky island your worship has promised me so often; I find, in lieu of that, you want to make me amends, by leaving me in this desert, removed from all human footsteps: for the love of God! dear master, do me not such wrong; or, if your worship is resolved to attempt this atchievement, at any rate, at least delay it till morning, which, according to the signs I learned when I was shepherd, will appear in less than three hours; for the muzzle of the bear\*, is at top of his head, and shews midnight in the line of the left paw."

"How can't thou perceive, said Don Quixote, that line or head, or muzzle thou talkest of; when the night is so dark, that there is not a star to be seen?" "It is so, answered Sancho, but, fear hath many eyes; and I can at present behold things that are hid within the bowels of the earth; much more those that appear in the firmament above: a man of sound judgment, like me, can easily foretell, that it will soon be day." "Let it come when it will, answered Don Quixote, it shall not be said of me, either now, or at any other time, that I was diverted by tears and intreaties, from doing what I owed to the customs of chivalry: I therefore, beseech thee, Sancho, to hold thy peace; for, God who has put it in my heart, to attempt this dreadful and unseen adventure, will doubtless, take care of my safety, and comfort thee in thy affliction: thy business at present, is, to gird fast Rozinante, and remain in this place; for, dead or alive, I will soon return."

Sancho finding this was the final resolution of his master; and how little all his tears, advice, and intreaties availed; determined to make use of stratagem to detain the knight, if possible, till morning: with this purpose, under pretence of adjusting the girth of Rozinante, he fair and softly, without being perceived, tied two of the horse's feet together, with the halter of his ass, in such a manner, that when Don Quixote attempted to depart, he found it impossible, because his steed could move no otherwise than by leaps.

\* In Castilian, *Boçina* signifies a cornet or hunting-horn, to which the Spaniards suppose the constellation of *Ursa Minor* bears some resemblance.



The squire perceiving the success of his invention, "Sir, said he, you may see that heaven, melted by my tears and prayers, hath ordained that Rozinante shall not stir; and if you obstinately persist in spurring and driving him on, you will only give offence to providence, and, as the saying is, kick against the pricks."

The knight actually despaired of making him go forward, because the more he goaded his horse, the less was he inclined to stir; and therefore, without guessing a tittle of the ligature, thought proper to submit, and wait with patience, either till morning, or such time as Rozinante should recover the use of his limbs; believing for certain, that his disappointment was owing to another cause, than the craft of his squire, to whom he said: "Since Rozinante is incapable of moving, I am content to wait for the dawn, tho' I cannot help lamenting its delay." "You shall have no cause for lamentation, answered Sancho, I will entertain your worship with telling stories till day, unless you chuse to alight, and take a nap on the soft grass, according to the custom of knights-errant, that you may find yourself refreshed when day breaks, and ready to undertake the unconscionable adventure that awaits you." "Talk not to me, of alighting or sleeping, said Don Quixote, do'st thou imagine me to be one of those knights who seek their repose, in times of danger? Sleep thou, who wa'st born to sleep, or follow thy own inclinations; for my own part, I will behave as becomes a person of my pretensions." "Let not your worship be offended; for, that was not my intention when I spoke," answered Sancho, who coming close to him, laid hold of the saddle before and behind, and stood embracing his master's left thigh, without daring to stir a finger's breadth from the spot; such was his consternation inspired by the strokes, which all this time, sounded alternately in his ears.

Then Don Quixote claiming his promise of entertaining him with some story; "I would, with all my heart, said Sancho, if the dread of what I hear, would allow me; but, nevertheless, I will try to force out one story, which, if I hit it aright, without letting it slip thro' my hands, is the best tale that ever was told; therefore, I would have your worship be attentive, for thus I begin.

"There was, so there was; the good that shall fall, betide us all; and he that seeks evil, may he meet with the devil. Your worship may take notice, that the beginning of antient tales, is not just what came into the head of the teller: no, they always began with some saying of Cato the censor of Rome, like this of 'He that seeks evil, may he meet with the devil.' And truly it comes as pat to the purpose, as the ring to my finger, in order to persuade your worship to remain where you are, without going in search of evil, in any manner of way; or else to turn into another road, since we are not bound

to follow this in which we have been surprized with fear and terror." "Follow thy story, Sancho, said Don Quixote, and as to the road we have to follow, leave the care of that to me." "To proceed then, said Sancho: In a certain village of Estremadura, there lived a certain goat-shepherd. I mean, one that kept goats; and this shepherd or goat-herd, as the story goes, was called Lope Ruyz; and it came to pass, that this Lope Ruyz fell in love with a shepherdess whose name was Torralva; which shepherdess, whose name was Torralva, was the daughter of a rich herdsman; and this rich herdsman."—

"If thou tellest thy tale in this manner, cried Don Quixote, repeating every circumstance twice over; it will not be finished these two days: proceed therefore, connectedly, and rehearse it, like a man of understanding: otherwise, thou hadst better hold thy tongue." "In my country, answered Sancho, all the old stories are told in this manner; neither can I tell it in any other; nor is it civil in your worship, to desire I should change the custom." "Take thy own way, said the knight, and since it is the will of fate, that I should hear thee, pray go on."

"Well then, good master of mine, proceeded Sancho, that same shepherd, as I have already remarked, fell in love with the shepherdess Torralva, who was a thick, brawny wench, a little coy, and somewhat masculine; for, she wore a sort of mustachios: methinks, I see her now, for all the world." "Then thou knewest her?" said the knight. "Not I, answered the squire, but the person who told me the story, said it was so true and certain, that if ever I should chance to tell it again, I might affirm upon oath, that I had seen it with my own eyes—And so, in process of time, the devil, who never sleeps, but wants to have a finger in every pye, managed matters in such a manner, that the shepherd's love for the shepherdess, was turned into malice and deadly hate: and the cause, according to evil tongues, was a certain quantity of small jealousies she gave him, exceeding all bounds and measure. And such was the abhorrence the shepherd conceived for her, from that good day forward, that, in order to avoid the sight of her, he resolved to absent himself from his own country, and go where he should never set eyes on her again. Torralva finding herself despised by Lope, began to love him more than ever." "That is the natural disposition of the sex, said Don Quixote, to disdain those who adore them, and love those by whom they are abhorred: but, proceed Sancho."

"It so fell out, said Sancho, that the shepherd put his resolution in practice, and driving his goats before him, travelled through the plains of Estremadura, towards the kingdom of Portugal. Torralva having got an inkling of his design, was soon at his heels, following him on foot,  
aye,

aye, and barefoot too, with a pilgrim's staff in her hand, and a wallet at her back, in which, as the report goes, she carried a bit of a looking-glass, a broken comb, and a kind of vial of wash for her complexion: but, howsoever, whether she carried these things or not, I shall not at present, take upon me to aver: but only say what is recorded, that the shepherd came with his flock to the river Guadiana, which at that time was very high, having almost forsaken its channel: and finding at the place, neither boat nor bark to carry himself and his flock to the other side, he was very much in the dumps, because he saw Torralva behind him, and knew what he must suffer, from her tears and complaints: but, looking about, he at last perceived hard by him, a fisherman in a boat that was so small, as to contain only one person and one goat: nevertheless, they struck up a bargain, by which the man was to ferry over the shepherd with his three hundred goats. Accordingly, the fisherman took one goat into the boat, and carried it over; then he returned and carried over another, then he returned again to fetch another. Pray good your worship, keep an exact account of the goats, as the fisherman ferried them over; for, if one only should be lost in the reckoning, the story will break off, and it will be impossible for me to relate one word more. To be short then, I say, the landing-place on the other side being full of mud and slippery, was a great hindrance to the fisherman in his going and coming; but, however, he returned for the other goat, and then for some more, and then for another."

"Suppose them all passed over at once, said Don Quixote; for, if thou goest backwards and forwards in this manner, thou wilt not have them all ferried over in a year." "How many have already passed?" said the squire, "How the devil should I know?" answered the knight. "Did not I tell you to keep a good account? said Sancho, now before God! the tale is at an end, and it is impossible to proceed." "How can that be? replied Don Quixote, is it so essential to the story, to know the number of goats as they passed, so precisely, that if I misreckon one, thou canst not proceed?" "Certainly, sir, said Sancho, I can proceed in no manner of way: for, when I desired your worship to tell me what number of goats had passed, and you answered you did not know, at that instant, the whole of the story that remained untold, vanished from my remembrance; and, upon my conscience! it was very curious and entertaining." "At that rate then, the story is at an end? said Don Quixote, "As much at an end, replied the squire, as the mother that bore me."

In good sooth, resumed the knight, thou hast related the strangest fable, tale, or story that ever was invented; and finished thy relation in such a manner, as never was, or will be heard again in this world: but

but nothing else was to be expected from thy sound judgment : and indeed, it is a matter of no admiration with me ; because, I take it for granted that these incessant strokes have disordered thy understanding." " Not unlikely, said Sancho ; but, this I know, that there is no more to be said of the tale, which ended in that place, where the mistake began, about the passage of the goats." " In good time, end it according to thy own pleasure, replied the knight, and now let us see if Rozinante will move. So saying, he began again to spur, and the horse to leap, without moving from his station, so effectually had Sancho fettered him.

About this time, whether it was owing to the coolness of the morning that approached, or to his having supped upon something that was laxative ; or, which is more probable, to the operation of nature ; Sancho was seized with an inclination and desire of doing that which could not be performed by proxy ; but, such was the terror that had taken possession of his soul, that he durst not move the breadth of a nail-paring from his master's side : at the same time, it was as impossible for him, to resist the motion of his bowels ; and therefore, to compromise the matter, he slipp'd his right hand from the hinder part of the saddle, and without any noise, softly undid the slip knot by which his breeches were kept up : upon which, they of themselves fell down to his heels, where they remained like a pair of shackles ; he then gathered up his shirt behind, as well as he could ; and exposed his posteriors, which were none of the smallest, to the open air : this being done, and he imagined it was the chief step he could take to deliver himself from the pressing occasion and dilemma, in which he was, another difficulty still greater occurred, namely, that he should not be able to disencumber himself without noise : he therefore, began to fix his teeth close, shrug up his shoulders, and hold in his breath with all his might. But, notwithstanding these precautions, he was so unlucky in the issue, as to produce a rumbling sound very different from that which had terrified him so much. It did not escape the ears of Don Quixote, who immediately cried, " What noise is that, Sancho ? " I know not, sir, said the squire, it must be some new affair, for adventures and misventures never begin with trifles." He tried his fortune a second time, and without any more noise or disorder, freed himself from the load which had given him so much uneasiness. But, as Don Quixote's sense of smelling, was altogether as acute as that of his hearing, and Sancho stood so close to him, that the vapours ascended towards him, almost in a direct line, he could not exclude some of them from paying a visit to his nose. No sooner was he sensible of the first salutation, than in his own defence, he pressed his nose between his finger and thumb, and in a snuffling tone, pronounced,

" Sancho,

“ Sancho, thou seemest to be in great fear.” “ I am so, answered the squire ; but, how comes your worship to perceive my fears now, more than ever ?” “ Because, at present, thou smellst more than ever, and that not of amber,” replied the knight. “ That may be, said Sancho ; but, I am not so much to blame as your worship, who drags me at such unseasonable hours, into these uninhabited places.” “ Retire three or four steps farther off, friend, resumed Don Quixote, stopping his nose all the time, and henceforth take more heed of thy own person, and remember what thou owest to mine ; for, I find, the frequent conversation I maintain with thee, hath engendered this disrespect.” “ I’ll lay a wager, replied Sancho, that your worship thinks I have been doing something I ought not to have done.” “ The more you stir it, friend Sancho, said the knight, the more it will stink.”

In this and other such discourse, the master and his squire passed the night ; but, Sancho perceiving the day begin to break apace, with great care and secrecy, unbound Rozinante, and tied up his breeches. The beast, which was naturally none of the briskest, seemed to rejoice at his freedom, and began to paw the ground ; for, as to curvetting, with his leave be it spoken, he knew nothing of the matter. Don Quixote finding him so mettlesome, conceived a good omen from his eagerness, believing it a certain presage of his success in the dreadful adventure he was about to achieve. Aurora now disclosed herself, and objects appearing distinctly, Don Quixote found himself in a grove of tall chestnut-trees, which formed a very thick shade. The strokes still continuing, though he could not conceive the meaning of them, he, without further delay, made Rozinante feel the spur ; then turning to take leave of Sancho, commanded him to wait three days at farthest, as he had directed before ; and if he should not return before that time was expired, he might take it for granted, that God had been pleased to put a period to his life, in that perilous adventure ; he again recommended to him, the embassy and message he should carry from him, to his mistress Dulcinea ; and bade him give himself no uneasiness about his wages ; for, he had made a will, before he quitted his family, in which he should find his services repayed, by a salary proportioned to the time of his attendance : but, if heaven should be pleased to bring him off from that danger, safe, found and free ; he might, beyond all question, lay his account with the government of the island he had promised him. Sancho, hearing these dismal expressions of his worthy master, repeated, began to blubber afresh, and resolved not to leave him, until the last circumstance and issue of the affair.

From these tears, and this honourable determination of Sancho Panza, the author of this history, concludes, that he must have been a

gentleman born, or an old christian at least. His master himself was melted a little at this testimony of his affection, but not so much, as to discover the least weakness: on the contrary, disguising his sentiments, he rode forward towards the place, from whence the noise of the strokes and water seemed to come; Sancho following on foot, and, according to custom, leading by the halter his ass, which was the constant companion of his good and evil fortune. Having travelled a good way, among those shady chestnut-trees, they arrived in a small meadow lying at the foot of a huge rock, over which a stream of water rushed down with vast impetuosity. Below, appeared a few wretched huts, that looked more like ruins than houses, and they observed that from them proceeded the horrible din of the strokes which had not yet ceased.

Rozinante being startled at the dreadful noise of the strokes and water, Don Quixote endeavoured to sooth him, and advanced by little and little, towards the huts, recommending himself in the most earnest manner, to his mistress, whose favour he implored in the achievement of that fearful enterprize: neither did he omit praying to God for his protection. Sancho, who never stirred from his side, thrust his neck as far as he could, between the legs of Rozinante, in order to discover the objects that kept him in such terror and suspense; and when they had proceeded about an hundred paces farther, at the doubling of a corner, stood fully disclosed to view, the very individual and undoubted cause of this tremendous sound, and terrible noise, which had filled them with such doubts and consternation, all night long.

This was no other, be not offended gentle reader, than six fulling-hammers, which by their alternate strokes, produced that amazing din. Don Quixote was struck dumb with astonishment at the sight; Sancho looked at him, and found his head hanging down upon his breast, and other manifest signs of his being out of countenance. The knight, in his turn, looked at the squire, and saw his mouth shut, his cheeks puffed up, with other symptoms of his being ready to burst with laughing: this comical situation of the squire, in spite of all his own melancholy, obliged the master to begin; and Sancho no sooner beheld the severity of the knight's features, relaxed, than he opened the flood-gates of his mirth, which broke forth with such violence, that he was under the necessity of supporting his sides with both fists, that they might not be rent to pieces by the convulsion. Four times did he exhaust, and as often renew the laugh with the same impetuosity as at first; for which, Don Quixote already wished him at the devil, more especially, when he heard him pronounce, by way of sneer, "Know, friend Sancho, that I was born by heaven's appointment, in these iron times, to revive the age of gold, or the golden age! I am he, for whom strange perils, valiant deeds,

deeds, and vast adventures are reserved!" And in this manner he proceeded, repeating all or the greater part of the knight's exclamation, when they first heard the terrible noise.

Don Quixote finding that Sancho made a jest of him, was so much ashamed and provoked, that, lifting up his lance, he bestowed upon him two or three thwacks, which, had they fallen upon his head, as they lighted on his shoulders, would have saved his master the trouble of paying his salary, unless it might be to his heirs. Sancho feeling his joke turned into such disagreeable earnest, which, he was afraid, might not be as yet over, addressed himself to his master with great humility, saying, "Good your worship forbear; before God I was only in jest." "Tho' you was in jest, answered Don Quixote, I was not quite so merrily disposed: come hither, Mr. Joker; don't you think, that if, instead of fulling-hammers, these had been some very dangerous adventure, I have shewn courage enough to undertake and atchieve it? Am I, who am a knight, obliged, forsooth, to distinguish sounds, and know which proceed from fulling-mills, and which do not? especially as it may be the case, and it really is so, that I never saw one before; tho' it is otherwise with thee, base plebeian as thou art, who wast born and bred up among them: but, see if thou can'st metamorphose these six hammers into so many giants, and bring them within arm's length of me, one by one, or all together; and if I don't make them lie with their heels uppermost, make a jest of me, as much as you please."

"Enough, dear master, replied Sancho, I confess I have exceeded a little, in my pleasantry; but, pray, tell me, now that we are at peace again, as God shall deliver your worship from all succeeding adventures, as safe and sound as you have been extricated from this; is not the terror with which we were seized, a thing to be laughed at, and repeated? I mean my own terror, for, as to your worship, I know you are an utter stranger to terror and dismay!" "I do not deny, answered Don Quixote, that what hath happened to us, is ridiculous enough; but, nevertheless, it ought not to be repeated; because every body has not discretion to take things by the right handle." "I am sure, replied Sancho, that your worship knows how to handle your lance, with which, while you wanted to handle my head, you happened to salute my shoulders; thanks be to God, and my own activity, in avoiding the blow: but, all that, when it is dry, will rub out; and I have often heard it said, "He that loves thee well, will often make thee cry:" nay, it is a common thing for your gentry, when they have said a harsh thing to a servant, to make it up with him, by giving him a pair of cast breeches; tho' I don't know what they use to give after having beaten him, unless it be the practice of knights-errant, after blows, to give islands and kingdoms on the mainland."

“ Who knows, said Don Quixote, but the dice may run that way, and all that thou hast mentioned, come to pass: I ask pardon for what is past, since you are resolved to be more discreet for the future; and as the first emotions are not in a man’s own power, I must apprise thee henceforward, to be more reserved, and abstain from speaking so freely to me; for, in all the books of chivalry I have read, and they are almost infinite, I never found that any squire talked so much to his master as thou hast talked to thine: and really, both you and I are very much to blame; thou, in regarding me so little, and I in not making myself regarded more: was not Gandalin, squire of Amadis de Gaul, count of the firm island? and yet we read of him, that he always spoke to his master, cap in hand, with an inclination of his head, and his body bent in the Turkish manner. What need I mention Gasabal, squire to Don Galaor, who was so reserved, that in order to express the excellence of his surprising silence, his name is mentioned but once, in the whole course of that equally vast and true history. From what I have said, Sancho, thou art to draw this inference, that there is a necessity for maintaining some distinction, between the master and his man, the gentleman and his servant, and the knight and his squire: wherefore, from this day forward, we are to be treated with more respect and less provocation; for, if ever I am incensed by you again, in any shape whatever, the pitcher will pay for all: the favours and benefits I have promised, will come in due time, and if they should fail, your wages at least, will be forthcoming, as I have already informed you.”

“ All that your worship observes, is very just, said Sancho; but, I should be glad to know, since, if the benefits come not in time, I must be fain to put up with the wages, what was the hire of a knight-errant’s squire in those days: and whether they agreed by the month or the day, like common labourers.” “ I do not believe, answered Don Quixote, that they were retained for hire, but depended altogether on favour; and tho’ I have bequeathed a sum to thee, in my will, which I have left signed and sealed at home, it was done in case of the worst; for, one does not know how chivalry may succeed in these calamitous times: and I would not have my soul punished in the other world, for so small a matter; for, let me tell thee, Sancho, in this, there is not a more dangerous course, than that of adventures.” “ That I know to be true, answered the squire, since the noise of a fulling-mill could daunt and disturb the heart of such a valiant knight-errant as your worship: but, this I assure you of, that from this good hour, my lips shall never give unbrage to your worship, in turning your affairs to jest again; but, on the contrary, honour you as my natural lord and master.” “ In so doing, replied Don Quixote, thou shalt live long upon the face



face of the earth; for, after your father and mother, you ought to respect your master as another parent."

## C H A P. VII.

Of the sublime adventure, and shining acquisition of Mambrino's helmet; with other accidents that happened to our invincible knight.

**A**BOUT this time, some rain beginning to fall, Sancho proposed that they should shelter themselves in the fulling-mill; but, Don Quixote had conceived such abhorrence for it, on account of what was past, that he would by no means set foot within its walls: wherefore, turning to the right-hand, they chanced to fall in with a road different from that in which they had travelled the day before: they had not gone far, when the knight discovered a man riding with something on his head, that glittered like polished gold: and scarce had he descried this phænomenon, when turning to Sancho, "I find, said he, that every proverb is strictly true; indeed, all of them are apophthegms dictated by experience herself; more especially, that which says, "Shut one door, and another will soon open:" this I mention, because, if last night, fortune shut against us the door we sought to enter, by deceiving us with the fulling-hammers; to-day, another stands wide open, in proffering to us, another greater and more certain adventure, by which, if I fail to enter, it shall be my own fault, and not imputed to my ignorance of fulling-mills, or the darkness of the night. This I take upon me to say, because, if I am not egregiously mistaken, the person who comes towards us, wears upon his head the very helmet of Mambrino, about which I swore the oath which thou may'st remember."

"Consider well what your worship says, and better still what you do, said Sancho! I should not chuse to meet with more fulling-mills, to mill us and maul us altogether out of our senses." "The devil take the fellow, cried Don Quixote, what affinity is there between a fulling-mill and a helmet?" "Truly, I know not, answered the squire; but, in good faith, if I were permitted to speak freely, as usual, I could perhaps give such reasons as would convince your worship, that you are mistaken in what you say." "How can I be mistaken, scrupulous traitor? replied Don Quixote: see'st thou not yonder knight who rides this way, upon a dapple steed, with a golden helmet on his head?" "What I perceive and discern, said Sancho, is no other than a man upon a grey ass, like my own, with something that glitters on his head." "And that is the very helmet of Mambrino, replied the knight: stand aside, and leave me alone to deal with him; thou shalt see, that with-

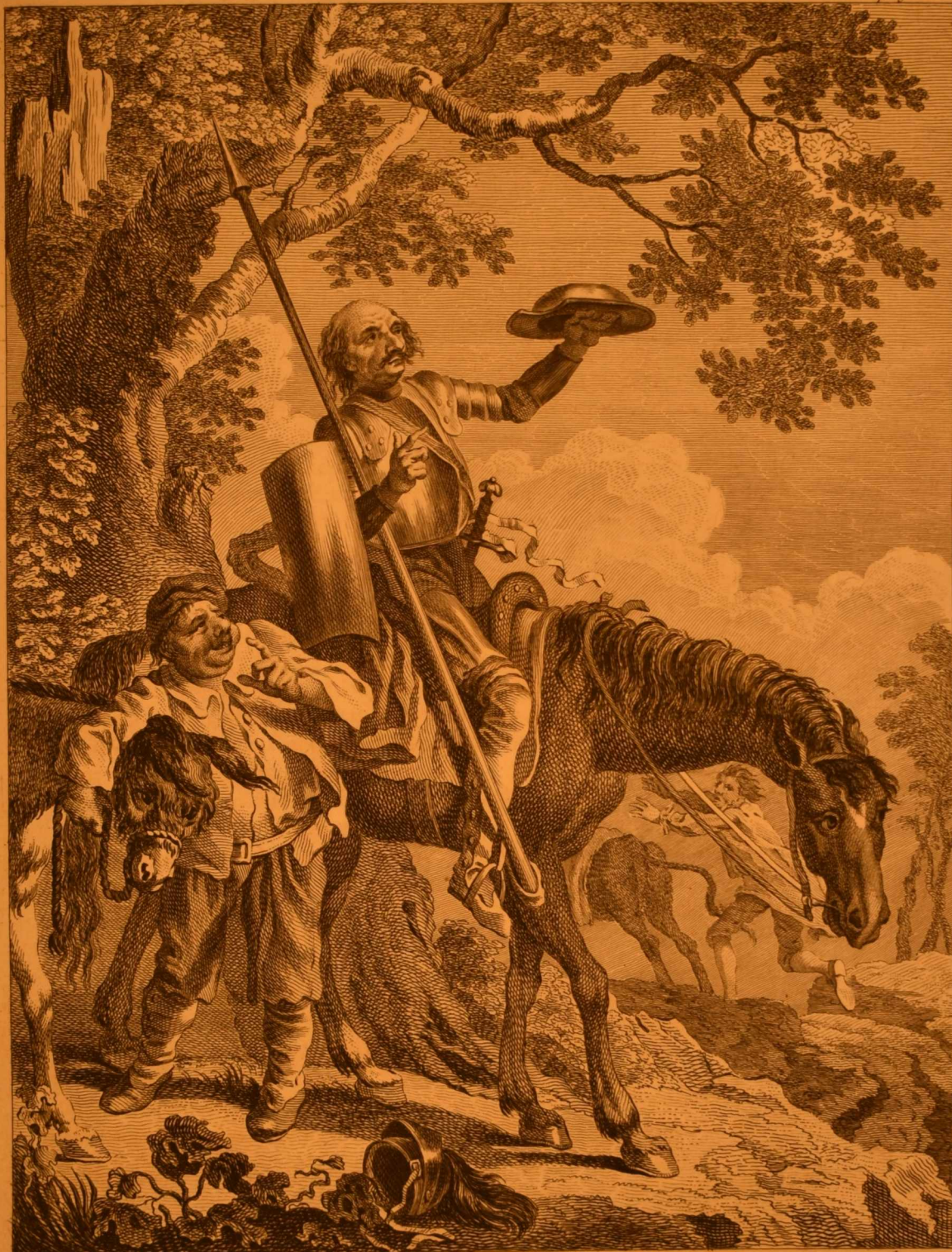
out

out speaking a syllable, in order to spare time, this adventure will be concluded by my acquisition of the helmet I have longed for so much." "Yes, I will take care to get out of the way, answered Sancho; and God grant, cried he as he went off, that this may turn out a \*melon rather than a milling." "I have already warned thee, brother, said the knight, not to mention, nor even so much as think of the mill again: else by heaven! I'll say no more, but mill the soul out of thy body."

Sancho was fain to hold his tongue, dreading the performance of his master's oath, which had already struck him all of a heap. The whole affair of the helmet, steed, and knight, which Don Quixote saw, was no more than this: in that neighbourhood, were two villages, one of them so poor and small, that it had neither shop nor barber: for which reason, the trimmer of the larger that was hard by, served the lesser also, in which, at that time, there was a sick person to be blooded, and another to be shaved; so that this barber was going thither with his brass basin under his arm: but, as it chanced to rain while he was on the road, that he might not spoil his hat, which probably was a new one, he sheltered his head under the basin, which being clean scoured, made a flaming appearance, at the distance of half a league; and, as Sancho had observed, he rode upon a grey ass, which gave occasion to Don Quixote to believe he was some knight with a helmet of gold, mounted upon a dapple steed; for, he accommodated every thing he saw, with incredible facility, to the extravagant ravings of his disordered judgment. When he, therefore, saw this unlucky knight approach, without the least expostulation, he put Rozinante to full speed, and couching his lance in the rest, resolved to run him thro' the body at once; but, when he was almost up with him, without checking the impetuosity of his career, he cried aloud, "Defend thyself, wretched caitiff, or voluntarily yield what so justly belongs to me."

The poor barber, who neither dreaded nor dreamed of any such demand, seeing this phantom coming full speed upon him, could find no other means to defend himself from the stroke of the lance, than to throw himself down over the buttocks of his ass; then getting up, before he had scarce touched the ground, with the nimbleness of a stag, he began to fly across the plain so swift, that the wind itself could not overtake him: but, he left his basin upon the spot, with which Don Quixote was satisfied, saying, "The pagan hath acted with discretion, in imitating the beaver, which, seeing itself chased by the hunters, tears off with its teeth, by natural instinct, those parts for which it is pursued." Then, he ordered Sancho to take up the helmet, which the squire having examined all round, "Egad! said

\* Oregano, in the original, signifies sweet marjoram, as if Sancho had wished his master might find a nosegay, rather than a bloody nose.



Hayman delins.

Ravenet sculp.



he, "It is a special good bason, well worth a piece of eight, if it be worth a farthing;" and gave it to his master, who putting it on his head, and turning it round and round, without being able to find the vizor, said, "Without doubt, the pagan for whom this renowned helmet was first forged, must have had a most capacious head: but the worst of it is, that, one half is wanting."

When Sancho heard him call the bason a helmet, he could not refrain from laughing, but, remembering the indignation of his master, checked his mirth all of a sudden; and when Don Quixote asked what he laughed at, replied, "I can't help laughing when I think of the huge head of the pagan who owned that helmet, which looks for all the world like a barber's bason." "Why, truly, Sancho, said he, I imagine that this very individual enchanted helmet, by some strange accident or other, must have fallen into the hands of some body who did not know its inestimable value, but, seeing it was made of the purest gold, melted down one half of it for sale, and left the other in this shape, resembling, as thou sayest, a barber's bason: but, be that as it may, since I am satisfied of its real worth and identity, the transmutation is of small consequence; for, I will order it to be repaired in the first village where we can find a blacksmith, in such a manner as to be unexcelled, nay even unequalled by that which Vulcan forged and finished for the God of war: mean while, I will wear it in this manner; for, it is still better than nothing at all, and will be sufficient to defend me from any shower of stones that may chance to fall."

"Yes, if they come not out of slings, as was the case in the skirmish between the two armies; when they demolished your worship's grinders, and broke the cruze which contained that blessed balsam, which made me vomit up my liver and lights." "That loss gives me not much uneasiness, answered the knight, because thou knowest, Sancho, I retain the receipt of it in my memory;" "So do I, replied the squire. But, Lord, let me never stir from the place where I now stand, if ever I either make or meddle with it for the future; especially, as I hope I shall never have occasion for it again, being resolved, with the assistance of my five senses, to avoid being hurt myself, and also to refrain from hurting any person whatsoever. As to another bout of blanketing, I have little to say: such misfortunes are not easily prevented; but, when they happen, there is nothing else to be done, but to shrug up our shoulders, hold in our breath, shut our eyes, and leave ourselves to the determination of chance and the blanket."

"Thou art a bad christian, Sancho, said Don Quixote, when he heard these words, for, once you receive an injury, you never forget it; but, know it is peculiar to noble and generous minds to overlook such trifles: hast thou got a leg lamed, a rib fractured, or thy head broke in the prosecution of that

that jest, that thou canst not forget it? for, the affair, when duly considered, was no more than jest and pastime: had I not understood it so, I should have returned e'er now, and done more mischief in revenging thy quarrel, than the Grecians did, for the rape of Helen, who, if she lived in this age, or if my Dulcinea had flourished in her time, would not have been so renowned for beauty." Here he fetched a profound sigh, and sent it to the clouds. "Let it pass then for a joke, said Sancho, since there is no likelihood of its being revenged in earnest: but, I know what sort of jokes and earnestness those are; and I believe they will scarce slip out of my memory, while they remain engraven on my shoulders. But, setting this aside, I wish your worship would tell me, what I shall do with this dapple steed so like a grey ass, which was abandoned by Mr. Tonfor, whom your worship overthrew: for, by the swiftness of his heels when he ran away, he seems to have no thoughts of returning; and by my whiskers 'tis an excellent beast!"

"It is never my custom, said Don Quixote, to plunder those I overcome; neither is it according to the laws of chivalry, to take from them their horses, and leave them on foot, unless the conqueror hath lost his own during the engagement; in which case, we are allowed to take the horse of the vanquished, as the lawful spoils of war: wherefore, Sancho, leave that horse or ass, or what thou wilt, where he now stands, and perhaps his master, perceiving we are gone, will return and find him." "God is my witness, answered Sancho, I should be glad to carry him off, or at least exchange him for my own, which seems to be the worst of the two: truly, the laws of chivalry are too confined; and since they do not extend to the exchange of one ass for another, I would fain know if they allow me to change the furniture of the one for that of the other?" "I am not quite clear in that particular, replied the knight; and in such a dubious case, till such time as we can get better information, I think thou mayest exchange the furniture, if the necessity for so doing be extreme." "It is so extreme, said Sancho, that if it were for my own particular wearing, I could not want it more." Thus provided with a licence, he made the exchange of caparisons, and equipped his beast with such finery, that he looked ten per cent. the better.

This exploit being performed, they went to breakfast on the remains of what they had plundered from the sumpter-mule, and quenched their thirst with the water from the fulling-mills, without turning their heads that way, so much did they abhor them, on account of the dread which they had inspired. The rage of hunger and anxiety being thus appeased, they mounted, and without following any determined course (for, it is the practice of true knights-errant, to keep no certain road) they left the choice of their route to the will and pleasure of Rozinante, which was always a rule to his master,

ster, as well as to the asfs that followed whithersoever he led, like a trusty friend and companion. In consequence, therefore, of his determination, they returned into the high-road, in which they travelled at random, without any particular scheme.

While they thus jogged on, " Sir, said Sancho to his master, I wish your worship would allow me to confer a little with you ; for, since you imposed that severe command of silence upon me, divers things have perished in my stomach, and this moment, I have somewhat at my tongue's end, which I would not for the world have miscarry." " Speak then, said Don Quixote, and be concise in thy discourse ; for, nothing that is prolix can relish well." " I say, Sir, answered Sancho, that for some days past, I have been considering how little is to be got and saved, by going in quest of those adventures your worship hunts after, thro' these cross-paths and desarts, where, tho' you conquer and atchieve the most perilous exploits, there is no body present to be witness of your prowess ; so that it may remain in everlasting silence, contrary to the intention, and prejudicial to the merits of your worship : wherefore, in my opinion, with submission to your better judgment, our wisest course would be to go into the service of some emperor or great prince, who hath a war upon his hands, in whose service, your worship may have occasion to shew your personal valour, your great strength and greater understanding ; which being perceived by the king we serve, he cannot chuse but reward every one according to his deserts ; neither will there be wanting some person to write the history of your worship's exploits, for a perpetual memorial : I shall not mention my own, because they cannot exceed the bounds of a squire's province ; tho' this I will venture to say, that if it was customary in chivalry, to recount the atchievements of our fraternity, I don't think mine might be inserted between the lines of the book."

" Thou art not much in the wrong, replied Don Quixote ; but, before it comes to that issue, a knight must travel up and down the world as a probationer, in quest of adventures, until, by his repeated atchievements, he shall have acquired a sufficient stock of fame ; so that when he arrives at the court of some mighty monarch, he may be immediately known by his works ; in that case, as soon as he shall be seen to enter the gates of the city, all the boys will surround and follow him, shouting and crying, behold the knight of the Sun, or the Serpent, or of any other badge under which he hath performed his great exploits. " Behold, they will say, the man who vanquished in single combat, the mighty giant Brocabruno ; and delivered the great Mamaluke of Persia, from the strange enchantment that prevailed over him, for the space of nine hundred years." Thus shall they proceed, recounting his exploits from mouth to mouth, until, surpris'd at the noise of the children and populace, the king of that country shall appear

pear at one of the palace-windows; and no sooner behold the knight, than knowing him immediately by his armour, or the device upon his shield, he will certainly exclaim, "So ho, there! let all the knights belonging to my court, go forth and receive the flower of chivalry that comes yonder."

At this command, all of them will come out, and the king himself advance to meet him on the middle of the stair-case, where he will embrace him most affectionately, giving him the kiss of friendship and welcome; then taking him by the hand, will he conduct him to the queen's closet, where he will find her majesty with the princess her daughter, who is one of the most beautiful and accomplished young ladies, that ever was seen in the known world. In this interview, she will immediately fix her eyes upon the knight, who at that instant shall be gazing at her, and each will appear to the other, something supernatural: without knowing how, or wherefore, they will find themselves presently caught and intangled in the inextricable net of love, and be infinitely concerned, because they have no opportunity of conversing together, and of disclosing the reciprocal anxiety of their thoughts: after this audience, he will, doubtless, be carried to some apartment of the palace richly furnished, where, after they shall have taken off his armour, they will clothe him in a rich scarlet robe brought for the purpose; and, if he made a fine appearance in armour, he will look infinitely more genteel in his doublet: at night, he will sup at the same table with the king, queen and infant, upon whom he will fix his eyes, as often as he can, without being perceived by the by-standers; while she will practise the same expedient, with equal sagacity; for, as I have already observed, she must be a young lady of vast discretion.

The table being uncovered, there will enter at midnight thro' the hall-door, a little, deformed dwarf, followed by a beautiful lady, guarded by two giants; and he will propose a certain adventure, contrived by a most ancient sage, which whosoever shall finish, will be deemed the most valiant knight in the whole world: then the king will order every warrior in waiting, to attempt it, but all of them shall fail, except the stranger knight, who will perform and accomplish it very much to his own credit, as well as to the satisfaction of the princess, who will think herself extremely happy, and well requited for having placed her affections so worthily. What is better still, this king or prince, or whatever he is, being at that time engaged in a most obstinate war with a potentate of equal strength, his guest, after having staid a few days at court, begs leave to go and serve him in the field; and the king granting his request with pleasure, the knight most politely kisses his hand for the great honour he hath done him: that same night, he goes to take his leave of his mistress the infant, thro' the rails of a garden adjoining to the chamber in which she lies; where they have already, at different times, enjoyed



enjoyed each other's conversation, by the means of a damsel, who being the infanta's confidante, is privy to the whole amour: on this occasion, he will sigh most pitiously, she will actually faint away, the damsel will run for water; and the knight will be extremely concerned, because the day begins to break, and he would not for the world, be discovered, to the prejudice of his lady's reputation. In fine, the princess recovers, and reaches her fair hand thro' the rails to the knight, who kisses it a thousand times, and bathes it with his tears: then is concerted between them, some method, by which he is to inform her of his good or bad success; and the infanta intreats him to return as soon as possible: he swears solemnly to comply with her request, kisses her hand again, and bids her farewell with such affliction as well nigh deprives him of life: from thence he retreats to his chamber, throws himself upon the bed, but cannot sleep, so grieved is he at parting; he rises early in the morning, goes to take leave of the king, queen and infanta; their majesties accordingly, bid him farewell, after having informed him, that the princess is indisposed, and cannot see company: the knight imputing her disorder to her sorrow for his departure, is pierced to the soul, and well nigh betrays his own anxiety. The confidante being present all the while, takes notice of every circumstance, which she imparts to her lady, who listens with tears in her eyes, and observes that nothing gives so much uneasiness as her ignorance of the knight's pedigree, and her impatience to know whether or not he is of royal extraction: the damsel assures her, that so much politeness, gentility and valour as he possessed, could never be united except in a dignified and royal disposition: the afflicted infanta consoles herself with this observation, and endeavouring to regain her serenity, that she may not give cause of suspicion to her parents, in two days, appears again in public.

The knight having set out for the army, comes to battle, overcomes the king's adversary, takes many towns, makes diverse conquests, returns to court, visits his mistress in the usual manner, and the affair being concerted between them, demands her in marriage, as the reward of his service: her father refuses to grant the boon, on pretence of not knowing who this hero is; but, nevertheless, either by stealth or some other way, the infanta becomes his wife; and at last, the king is overjoyed at his good fortune, when this knight proves to be the son of a valiant monarch of some unknown country, for, I suppose, it could not be found in the map. The father dies, the infanta succeeds, and in two words, the knight becomes king: this then is the time to reward his squire, and all those who helped him to ascend the throne. The squire, accordingly, is married to a damsel belonging to the infanta, who doubtless, must be she that was privy to her amour, and daughter of some powerful duke.

“ This is what I want, cried Sancho, and what with fair play I shall obtain; for, all that you have mentioned, will exactly happen to your worship, under the title of the knight of the rueful Countenance.” “ Never doubt it, Sancho, replied Don Quixote; for, in the same manner, and by the same steps I have recounted, knights-errant rise, and have risen to the rank of kings and emperors. Our only business now is, to look out for some christian or pagan king who is at war, and hath a beautiful daughter; but, there will be time to think of that, since, as I have already told thee, renown must be acquired elsewhere, before we repair to court: nay, another difficulty occurs, namely, that tho’ we should find a king at war, who has a beautiful daughter, after I shall have acquired incredible glory thro’ the whole universe; I do not know how it can be proved that I am of royal extraction, or even second cousin to an emperor: and no king will grant his daughter to me in marriage, until he is first thoroughly satisfied in that particular, tho’ my famous exploits should merit a much more valuable reward: true it is, I am a gentleman of an ancient and honourable family, not without property, possession, and a title, to the revenge of the five hundred \*Sueldos; and it is not impossible, that the sage ordained to write my history, may furnish up my parentage and pedigree in such a manner, as to prove me descended in the fifteenth or sixteenth generation from a king: for, I must tell thee, Sancho, there are two sorts of pedigree in the world; one that brings and derives its original from princes and monarchs, which time hath defaced by little and little, till at last, it ends in a point, like a pyramid: the other owes its beginning to people of mean degree, and increases gradually to nobility and power; so, that the difference is, the one was once something, but is now nothing; and the other was once nothing but is now something! perhaps, therefore, I may be one of the first mentioned division; and my origin, upon inquiry, be found high and mighty; a circumstance that ought to satisfy the king, who is to be my father-in-law: and if it should not have that effect, the infanta will be so enamoured of me, that in spite of her father, she will receive me as her lord and husband, even tho’ she were certain of my being the son of a porter; but should she be shy, then is the time to carry her away by force, to any corner of the earth I shall chuse for my residence, until time or death shall put an end to the resentment of her parents.”

“ And here, cried Sancho, nothing can be more pat to the purpose, than what some of your unconscionable fellows often say, Who would beg a beni-

\* The Spaniards of old paid a tribute of 500 Sueldos or pieces of coin to the Moors, until they were delivered from this imposition by the gallantry of the gentlemen or people of rank, from which exploit a Castilian of family, used to express the nobility and worth of his extraction, by saying he was of the revenge of the Sueldos.

son, that for the taking may have \* venison? tho' it would still be more proper, if they had said †, Better thief than grieve. This I observe, that in case the king, your worship's father-in-law, should not prevail upon himself to give you the infanta his daughter, you may, as your worship says, steal and convey her off by main force: but, the misfortune is, that while the peace is on the anvil, and before you come to the peaceable enjoyment of your kingdom, the poor squire may chew his cud in expectation of his recompense, unless that confidante damsel, who is to be his spouse, should make her escape with the princess, and be content to join her evil fortune to his, until such time as heaven shall ordain it otherwise; for, I believe his master may very safely give her away in lawful marriage." "That thou mayest depend upon," said Don Quixote. "Since it is so, then, answered Sancho, we have nothing to do, but recommend ourselves to God, and let fortune take its own course." "The lord conduct it, replied the knight, according to my desires and thy necessity; And small be his grace, who counts himself base." "A God's name be it so, said Sancho, for my own part, I am an old Christian, and therefore fit to be a lord." "Ay, to be greater than a lord, answered Don Quixote, and even if thou wast not so well qualified, it would be of no signification ‡; because, I being king, can confer nobility upon thee, without putting thee to the expence of purchasing, or of subjecting thyself to any kind of servitude: for, in creating thee an earl, behold thou art a gentleman at once; and let people say what they will, in good faith! they must call thee, your Lordship, if it should make their hearts ache." "And do you reckon that I should not know how to give authority to the portent?" said the squire. "Patent, thou woud'st say, and not portent," replied the knight. "It may be so, answered Sancho; but I insist upon it, that I should demean myself very decently: for, once in my lifetime, I was beadle of a corporation, and the gown became me so well, that every body said, I had the presence of a warden: then what shall I be when I am clothed in a ducal robe, all glittering with pearls, like a foreign count? Upon my conscience, I believe people will come an hundred leagues on purpose to see me." "You will make a very good appearance, said Don Quixote; but, thou must take care to keep thy beard close shaved; for, it is so thick, matted and unseemly, that unless thou hast recourse to the razor, once a day at least, they will see what thou art, a gun-shot off." "What else have I to do, said the squire, but to hire a barber and keep him constantly in the house; and if I find occasion for it, even make him follow me, as a master of the horse follows one of your grandees."

\* Literally, Never beg, when you can take.

† In the original, A snatch from behind a bush, is better than the prayer of good men.

‡ This seems to have been intended as a stroke of satire, against those princes who sell nobility to the highest bidder, without any regard to the merit of the purchaser.

“ How do’st thou know, said Don Quixote, that our grandees are attended by their masters of horse?” “ That you shall be satisfied in, answered the squire: heretofore, I was a whole month at court, where I saw a very little gentleman, who they told me, was a very great lord, passing to and fro, and a man following him a horseback, turning ever and anon as he turned, as if he had been the nobleman’s own tail: when I asked why the man did not overtake the other, but always kept behind him; they answered that he was his master of horse, and that it was a fashion among the great, for each to be attended by an officer of that name. Ever since that time, I have remembered their office so distinctly, that now, I believe I shall never forget it.” “ I think thou art very much in the right, said Don Quixote, in resolving to carry thy barber along with thee; for, customs come not altogether, because they were not invented all at once: therefore, thou mayest be the first earl that ever went attended by a shaver; and truly, it is an office of greater confidence to trim the beard, than to saddle the horse.” “ Leave that affair of the barber to my management, said Sancho, and be it your care to make yourself a king, and me an earl with all convenient speed.” “ That shall be done,” replied the knight, who lifting up his eyes, perceived that which shall be recounted in the succeeding chapter.

#### C H A P. VIII.

Don Quixote sets at liberty a number of unfortunate people, who, much against their wills, were going a journey that was not at all to their liking.

**C**ID Hamet Benengeli, the Arabian and Manchegan author, recounts in this solemn, sublime, minute, pleasant and fanciful history, that the conversation between the renowned Don Quixote, and his squire Sancho Panza, as related in the foregoing chapter, was no sooner concluded, than the knight lifting up his eyes, beheld upon the road before him, about twelve men on foot, strung together, like beads, with a great iron chain fastened to their necks, and he perceived shackles upon the arms of each. They were conducted by two men on horseback, and the like number on foot: the horsemen armed with firelocks, and the foot with javelins and swords. Sancho seeing them advance, “ That, said he, is the chain of slaves compelled by the king to work in the gallies.” “ How! compelled! cried the knight, is it possible the king compels people into his service?” “ I don’t say so, answered Sancho; those people are condemned for their crimes, to serve in the king’s gallies, on compulsion.” “ In short, replied Don Quixote, be that as it will, they go not voluntarily, but

but are driven by force." "Certainly," said Sancho. "Since that is the case, resumed his master, here the execution of my office is concerned: to annul force, and bring succour to the miserable." "Pray, good your worship take notice, that justice, which is the king himself, never uses violence nor severity to such people, except as a punishment for their crimes."

By this time, the chain of galley-slaves being come up, Don Quixote, with much courtesy, desired the guards would be pleased to inform him of the cause or causes for which those people were treated in that manner: one of the horsemen replied, that they were slaves belonging to his majesty, going to the galleys, and that was all he could say, or the inquirer had occasion to know of the matter. "Nevertheless, resumed the knight, I am desirous of knowing from each in particular, the occasion of his misfortune." To these he added other such courteous intreaties to induce them to satisfy his desire, that the other man on horseback said, "Though we have got along with us, the register and certificate of the sentence of each of those malefactors, we have no time at present to take it out and give you the reading of it: but, if you have a mind to go and question themselves, they will answer every thing you ask, to the best of their knowledge; for, they are a set of miscreants who delight in recounting as well as in acting their roguery."

With this permission, which he would have taken, if they had not granted it, Don Quixote approached the chain, and asked of the foremost, for what offence he travelled in that equipage! "Only for being in love," answered the criminal. "For that only!" replied the knight. "If they condemn people for being in love, I might have been tugging in the galleys long ago." "But my love, answered the slave, was quite different from what your worship imagines. I fell deeply in love with a basket crammed full of white linnen, and locked it so fast in my embrace, that if justice had not tore it from my arms, by force, I should not have quitted it willingly, to this good hour: the thing being flagrant, there was no room for putting me to the torture, and therefore the cause was soon discussed: my shoulders were accommodated with a cool hundred, I was advised to divert myself three years in the Gurapas; and so the business ended." "Pray what are the Gurapas?" said Don Quixote. "The Gurapas are the galleys," answered the thief, who was a young fellow, about twenty years of age, and said he was a native of Piedrahita.

The knight put the same question to the second, who seemed so overwhelmed with grief and melancholy, that he could not answer one word; but, the first saved him the trouble by saying, "This man, sir, goes to the galleys for being a canary-bird: I mean, for his skill in vocal music." "What! said the knight, are people sentenced to the galleys for their skill

in music" "Yes, sir, answered the other, for, nothing is worse than to sing in the heart-ach." "On the contrary, said Don Quixote, I have always heard it observed, that Music and Play, will fright Sorrow away." "But here, replied the slave, the case is quite different; for, he that sings but once, will have cause to weep for ever." Don Quixote saying he could not comprehend his meaning, one of the guards explained it: "Sir, said he, to sing in the heart-ach, is a term used by these miscreants, to express a criminal, who confesses under the torture: and it having been applied to that delinquent, he owned his crime, which was horse-stealing; accordingly, having received two hundred lashes, he was condemned for six years to the galleys: and he appears always pensive and sad, because his brother rogues who keep him company, continually maltreat, upbraid, despise and scoff at him, for having confessed out of pure pusillanimity: for, say they, No, contains as many letters as Ay; an offender is very lucky, when his life or death depends upon his own tongue, and not upon the evidence of witnesses: and truly, I think they are not far mistaken."

"I am of the same opinion, said Don Quixote, and passing on, repeated his former question to the third, who with great readiness and alacrity, answered, "I am going to visit my lady Gurapa, for having wanted ten ducats." "I will give twenty with all my soul, replied the knight, to ease you of your misfortune." "That, resumed the slave, is like giving money to a man perishing with hunger at sea, where there is no food to be bought. I say this, because had I been master in time of those twenty ducats your worship now offers, I would have anointed the secretary's pen, and quickened my lawyer's invention with them, to such good purpose, that I should be now, standing at liberty, in the square of Zocodover in Toledo, and not dragging like a hound to the galleys; but, heaven is above.—Patience and—that is enough."

Don Quixote then advanced to the fourth, who was a man of a venerable aspect, with a long, white beard hanging down to his girdle; and he no sooner heard the knight ask the cause of his being in that situation, than he began to weep bitterly, without answering one word; but, the fifth criminal lent him his tongue, saying, "That honourable gentleman is going to the galleys, after having made his public appearance on horse-back with great solemnity." "That is, I suppose, said Sancho, after having been exposed to public shame\*." "Even so, replied the slave, and that punishment was inflicted upon him, for being an ear-broker, or ra-

\* A crime that is punished by the pillory in England, is in Spain expiated by the convict's being mounted upon an ass, in a particular dress, and led through the streets by a crier who proclaims the transgression.

ther, a broker for the whole body: to be plain with you; the gentleman was convicted of pimping, and giving himself out for a conjurer." "Were it not for the addition of his conjuring scheme, said Don Quixote, he is so far from deserving to row in the galleys for pure pimping, that it rather \* entitles him to the command of them, as general in chief: for, if the office of a pander was well regulated, it would be a most honourable and necessary employment, in a well-ordered commonwealth; reserved for people of birth and talents, and, like other places of trust, laid under the inspection of proper comptrollers, and limited to a certain number, like the brokers of merchandize: such a regulation would prevent many mischiefs, which are now occasioned by that employment's being in the hands of idiots or simple wretches, such as silly women, pages and buffoons, without either age or experience; who, upon the most urgent occasions, when there is need of the most important contrivance, let the morsel freeze between the dish and the mouth, and can scarce distinguish betwixt their right hands and their left. I could proceed, and advance many arguments to prove how advantageous it would be in a commonwealth, to make proper distinctions in the choice of those who exercise such a necessary employment; but, this is no place to settle that affair in; and one day, I may chance to recommend it to the consideration of those who can both discern and provide a suitable remedy for this defect. I shall only at present observe, that the compassion I feel, at sight of these grey hairs, and that venerable countenance in distress for having been a pander, is extinguished by the additional crime of sorcery, though I am well apprised, that there are no conjurers in the world, who can force or alter the will, as some weak-minded people imagine; for, the inclination is free, and not to be enslaved by any incantation whatsoever. The practice of some simple women, and knavish impostors, is to compose poisonous mixtures, to deprive people of their senses, under pretence of causing them to be beloved: it being a thing impossible, as I have said, to compel the will." "What your honour says, is very true, replied this good old man; and really, sir, as to the affair of conjuring, I am not guilty: tho' I cannot deny that I have been a pimp; but, I never thought I was to blame in that capacity, because my whole intention was, that all the world should enjoy themselves, and live in peace and quiet, without quarrels and anxiety. Yet, the uprightness of my intention was of no service in preventing my being sent to a place from which I shall never return, oppressed as I am with years and a violent strangury, that will not allow me a moment's rest." So saying, he began to weep again, as before; and

\* This is a good hint for a reforming legislature.

his tears raised the pity of Sancho to such a degree, that he took a rial out of his bosom, and gave it in charity to the distressed senior.

Then Don Quixote addressed himself to the next, who answered his question, not with less, but infinitely more vivacity, than that of the former; saying, "I trudge in this manner, for having jested a little extravagantly with two of my female cousins; and with two more, who, tho' not related to me, were in the same degree of blood to each other: in short, I jested with them so long, that in the end, there was such an intricate increase of kindred as no casuist could unravel. Every thing was proved against me, I had neither interest nor money, and ran some risk of having my windpipe stopt; but they only condemned me for six years to the galleys; I submitted to the sentence, as the punishment of my crime: youth is on my side, life may be long, and time brings every thing to bear: if your worship, sir knight, will part with any small matter for the comfort of poor wretches like us, God will requite you in heaven, and we upon earth, will take care to petition him for long life and health to your worship, that you may be as happy, as by your goodly appearance, you deserve to be." The person who spoke in this manner, appeared in the dress of a student, and one of the guards said he was a great orator and excellent latin scholar.

After all these, came a man of a good mein, about thirty years of age, who squinted so horribly, that his eyes seemed to look at each other: he was equipped in a very different manner from the rest; his foot being loaded with a huge chain that went round his whole body, and his neck adorned with two iron rings, to one of which the chain was fastened; and the other was called a keep-friend, or friend's-foot; from which descended to his middle, a couple of iron bolts fitted with a pair of manacles for his arms, secured by a large padlock, in such a fashion, as to hinder him from lifting up his hands to his mouth, and to disable him from bending his head to his hands. Don Quixote inquiring, why that man was more fettered than all the rest; one of the guards answered, "Because he is a greater rogue than all the rest put together, and so daring a villain, that although he is shackled in that manner, we are under some apprehension that he will give us the slip." "What crime has he committed, said the knight, that deserves no greater punishment than that of going to the galleys?" "He goes for ten years, replied the guard, which is a kind of civil death: but, you need not inquire any further, when you know that this honest gentleman is the famous Gines de Passamonte, alias Ginesello de Parapilla." "Softly, Mr. Commissary, said the slave, hearing these words, don't transmography names and surnames in that manner: Gines is my name, and not Ginesello, and Passamonte the title of my family:



mily : not Parapilla, as your worship says ; let every body turn about and look at home, and he will have business enough." " Speak with less insolence, Mr. Thief above sterling, replied the commissary, or else I shall make you hold your peace with a vengeance." " It appears by this oppression, answered the galley-slave, that God's will must be done ; but, one day, some body shall know whether or not my name is Ginesillo de Parapilla." " An't you called so, you lying vagabond ?" said the guard. " Yes, yes, I am so called, answered Gines ; but, I will make them change that name, or their skins shall pay for it, if ever I meet them in a place I don't chuse at present to name. Sir knight, if you have any thing to bestow, pray let us have it, and the Lord be with you, for you only tire us with enquiring about other people's affairs ; if you want to be informed of my history, know, I am that Gines de Passamonte whose life is written by these ten fingers."

" He tells nothing but the truth, said the commissary ; for, he has actually written his own history, as well as could be desired, and pawned the manuscript in jail, for two hundred rials." " Ay, and I shall redeem it, said Gines, if it were for as many ducats." " What ! Is it so entertaining ?" said Don Quixote. " Yes, answered Gines, it is so entertaining, that woe be unto Lazarillo de Tormes, and all who have written or shall write in that manner. What I can affirm of mine, is, that it contains truths, and such ingenious and favourable truths, as no fiction can equal." " And what is the title of your book ?" said the knight. " The life of Gines de Passamonte," replied the other. " Is it finished ?" said Don Quixote. " How can it be finished, answered the author, when my natural life is not yet concluded ? I have already written my whole history from my birth till the last time I was sent to the galleys." " You have visited them before now, then ?" said the knight. " For the service of God and the good of my country, I have already served in them, during the space of four years, and know the difference between the biscuit and the bull's pizzle, answered the thief ; and my journey to them now, gives me no great pain, for, there I shall have time to finish my book, and set down a great many things I have to say : there being spare time enough in the galleys of Spain, for that purpose which does not require much leisure, as I have every circumstance by heart." " You seem to be an ingenious fellow," said Don Quixote. " And unfortunate, answered Gines ; for, genius is always attended by evil fortune." " Evil fortune ought to attend villains like you, said the guard." " I have already desired you, Mr. Commissary, to proceed fair and softly, answered Passamonte ; your superiors did not give you that rod to maltreat us poor wretches, but, to conduct and carry us to the place of our destination, according to his majesty's  
T 2 command :

command : and by the life of—but 'tis no matter. The spots we received in the inn, may, one day, be rubbed out in the washing. Mum's the word. Let us live while we can, speak while we may, and at present pursue our journey ; for, this joke has already lasted too long."

The commissary lifted up his rod, in order to give a proper reply to the threats of Passamonte ; but, Don Quixote interposing, begged he would not chastise him ; because it was not to be wondered at, if one whose limbs were so shackled, should take such liberties with his tongue : then addressing himself to the prisoners, " From all that you have told me, dear brethren, said he, I clearly perceive, that although you ought to be chastised for your crimes, the punishment you are going to suffer, is not much to your liking ; on the contrary, you make this journey very much against your inclination : and perhaps, the pusillanimity of one of you under the torture, this man's want of money, and that other's scarcity of friends, and last of all, the partiality of the judge, may have been the cause of your perdition, in depriving you of that justice, your several cases intitled you to. Which consideration now operates within me, suggesting, persuading and even compelling me to shew in your behalf, the end and aim for which heaven sent me into this world, and made me profess the order of knight-errantry, by which I am bound by oath, to succour the needy and oppressed ; but, because I know, that one maxim of prudence, is, not to do that by foul means, which can be accomplished by fair, I beseech Mr. Commissary and the guards to unchain and let you depart in peace : the king will not want people to serve him on better occasions ; and I think it is very hard to enslave those whom God and nature have made free. Besides, gentlemen soldiers, added the knight, those poor people have committed no offence against you ; and every body hath sins of his own to answer for. There is a God in heaven, who will take care to chastise the wicked and reward the righteous ; and it is not seemly, that honest men should be the executioners of their fellow-creatures, on account of matters with which they have no concern. This favour I entreat in a mild and peaceable manner ; and if you grant my request, will thank you heartily : whereas, if you refuse to do quietly what I desire, this lance and sword, with the valour of my invincible arm, shall make you do it on compulsion."

" A fine joke, truly ! replied the commissary : he has brought his harangue to a very merry conclusion ; desiring us to set at liberty the king's prisoners, as if we had authority to grant, or he to demand, their discharge. I wish your worship would go about your business, and set to rights that bason on your skull, without going in quest of a cat with three feet."

" You are a cat and a rat and a scoundrel to boot," replied the knight, attacking

attacking him with such wonderful dispatch, that he had not time to put himself in a posture of defence, so was thrown from his horse, dangerously wounded by a thrust of the knight's lance. And it happened luckily that this was the man who had the firelock. The rest of the guard were at first astonished and confounded at this unexpected assault; but they soon recollected themselves, and the horsemen drawing their swords, while those on foot handled their javelins, set upon Don Quixote in their turn, who waited for them with vast composure; and doubtless, he would have fared ill, if the galley-slaves, seeing a fair occasion offered, of gaining their liberty, had not made shift to obtain it, by breaking the chain with which they were fettered. Such was the confusion, that the guards, between their endeavours to detain the slaves who were unbound, and their efforts against Don Quixote who assaulted them, could do nothing at all effectual. Sancho, for his part, assisted in disengaging Gines de Passamonte, who being the first that leapt free and disencumbered, on the plain, attacked the wounded commissary, and robbed him of his sword and musket, with which, pointing at one, and taking aim at another, without firing, however, in a trice, there was not one of the guards to be seen; for they made the best of their way, not only from Passamonte's firelock, but also from the shower of stones which was rained upon them by the rest of the slaves, who had by this time disengaged themselves.

Sancho was infinitely grieved at this event, representing to himself, that those who fled would instantly give notice of the affair to the holy brotherhood, which, upon the tolling of a bell, would immediately fall forth in search of the delinquents. This supposition, he suggested to his master, whom he intreated to depart forthwith, and conceal himself somewhere in the neighbouring mountain. "That may be a very good expedient, said the knight; but I know what is proper for me to do at present." He then called to the slaves who were all in confusion, and after they had plundered and stripped the commissary to the skin, they assembled around him in a circle, in order to receive his commands, and he accosted them in this manner: "It is the duty of honest men, to be thankful for benefits received; and one of the sins that gives the greatest offence to God, is ingratitude. This truth, I observe, gentlemen, because you must be sensible, by manifest experience, of that which you have received from me; as an acknowledgment for which, it is my will and pleasure, that you set out immediately, loaded with that chain from which I have delivered your necks, and, repairing to the city of Toboso, there present yourselves before the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, and tell her, that her knight of the rueful countenance, hath sent you to her, with his hearty commendations. You shall also punctually recount to her, every circumstance  
of

of this famous adventure, even to the granting you that liberty you so ardently wished for: and this duty being performed, you may go, a God's name, whithersoever ye list."

To this command, Gines de Passamonte, in the name of all the rest, answered, "What your worship commands, most worthy deliverer, is of all impossibilities, the most impossible to fulfil. For, we must by no means travel in a body, but, single and divided, and each by himself endeavour to abscond within the bowels of the earth, in order to avoid the holy brotherhood, which will, doubtless, come out in search of us. But your worship may, and it is but justice you should, change that service and tribute intended for my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, into a certain number of Ave-maria's and Credo's, which we will say for your prosperity; and this is a duty we can fulfil, by night as well as by day, in motion and at rest, and in peace as well as in war: but, to suppose that we will now return to the flesh-pots of Ægypt, I mean to the carriage of our chain, and take the road to Toboso, is to suppose that it is now midnight, tho' it wants little more than two hours of noon: and indeed, to expect this condescension of us, is like expecting pears from an elm."

"Then by heavens! said Don Quixote in a rage, Don Son of a whore, Don Ginesillo de Parapilla, or whatsoever is your name, you shall go alone, with your tail between your legs, and carry the whole chain upon your own shoulders." Passamonte, who was none of the most passive people in the world, having already smacked the knight's weak side, from the mad action he had committed in giving them their freedom, and finding himself treated by him in this haughty manner, tipped the wink to his companions, who retiring with him, at a little distance, began to shower such a number of stones upon their deliverer, that he could not contrive how to cover himself with his shield: and poor Rozinante minded the spur no more, than if he had been made of brass. Sancho retired behind his ass, which sheltered him from the storm of hail, that descended on them both: but, his master could not screen himself so well, as to avoid an infinite number of pebble-shot, which took place upon different parts of his body, some of them with such force, that he came tumbling to the ground; and no sooner was he fallen, than the student set upon him, and snatching the bason from his head, made a most furious application of it to the knight's shoulders, and then dashed it upon the ground with such force, that it went into a thousand pieces. They likewise stripped him of a \*jacket he wore above his armour, and would even have taken his hose, had not

\* It was the custom of knights to wear a coat of arms made of some rich stuff figured in a particular manner. The duke of Brabant being called in a hurry to the battle of Agincourt, took a trumpeter's banner, and making a hole through the middle, put it over his head, and wore it as his coat of arms.

his greaves been in their way; they plundered Sancho of his great coat, leaving him in his doublet and hose, and dividing the spoils of the battle among them, each took his own separate route, more anxious to escape the holy brotherhood which they dreaded, than to load themselves with the chain again, and go to present themselves before the lady Dulcinea del Toboso.

The ass and Rozinante, Sancho and Don Quixote, were the only persons remaining on the field. Dapple, with his head hanging down in a pensive attitude, and every now and then shaking his ears, as if he imagined the hurricane of stones that whizzed about them, was not yet over; Rozinante lying stretched upon the ground, to which, like his master, he was humbled by a pebble: Sancho in his doublet, terrified at the thoughts of the holy brotherhood; and Don Quixote excessively out of humour, at seeing himself so ill requited by those people whom he had served in such an essential manner.

#### C H A P. IX.

Of what befel the renowned Don Quixote in the brown mountain; being one of the most surprising adventures, which is recounted in this true history.

**D**ON Quixote finding himself so evil entreated, said to his squire, "I have always heard it observed, Sancho, that benefits conferred on base-minded people, are like drops of water thrown into the sea. Had I taken thy advice, I might have avoided this vexation: but, now the affair is over, we must have recourse to patience, and take warning for the future." "Yes, replied Sancho, your worship will take warning, as sure as I am a Turk: but, since you allow, that if you had taken my advice, you would have avoided this misfortune, take my advice now, and you avoid a greater still; for, I give you notice, that all your errantry will stand you in little stead, against the holy brotherhood, who don't value all the knights-errant in the universe three farthings: and, in faith, this minute, methinks I hear their arrows buzzing about my ears." "Thou art naturally a coward, Sancho, said the knight; but, that thou mayest have no reason to say I am obstinate, and never follow thy counsel, for once thou shalt prevail: I will retreat from the danger thou darest so much; but, it shall be on condition, that thou shalt never, either in life or death, hint to any person whatsoever, that I retired, and avoided this peril, thro' fear, but merely in compliance with thy earnest request: for, to say otherwise, would be to propagate falsehood; and from this hour to that, and from  
that

that hour to this, I give thee the lie, and affirm thou liest, and wilt lie as often as thou shalt say or think any such thing: make no reply, therefore; the very thought of my being supposed to abscond, or retreat from danger, especially from this, as it implies some sort of shadow of fear, inspires me with such courage, that here am I alone, ready to remain and expect not only the holy brotherhood, which thou hast mentioned with fear and trembling, but also the brothers of the twelve tribes of Israel, those of the seven Maccabees, with Castor and Pollux, and all the brethren and brotherhoods in the universe." "Sir, replied Sancho, to retreat is not to fly, nor is it prudent to tarry when the danger over-balances the hope: and it is always the practice of wise people, to reserve something for to-morrow, without venturing all upon one cast; and you must know, that tho' I be a rustic and a clown, I have all my lifetime had a small share of what is called good conduct: wherefore, you need not repent of having taken my advice, but mount Rozinante, if you can; if not, I will lend you my assistance, and follow me; for, this noddle of mine tells me, that at present we have more need of heels than of hands."

Don Quixote accordingly mounted, without the least reply, and Sancho leading the way, upon his ass, they took refuge in that part of the brown mountain which was nearest, the squire intending to go quite across to Viso or Almodovar de Campo, after they should have lurked for some days amongst the rocks, that they might not be found, in case the holy brotherhood should come in search of them: he was encouraged to this resolution, by seeing, that in the \* scuffle with the galley-slaves, the provisions his ass carried had escaped untouched; a circumstance that, in his opinion, amounted to a miracle, considering what the thieves had taken, and how narrowly they have searched.

That evening, they arrived in the very heart of the Sierra Morena †, where Sancho proposed to spend the night, and even to pass a few days, at least stay as long as their store should last: accordingly they took up their lodging between two rocks, in the midst of a great number of cork-trees: but, fate, which, according to the opinion of those who do not enjoy the light of the true faith, guides, conducts and disposes all things after its own way, ordained that Gines de Passamonte, that famous robber and cheat, who had been delivered from the chain, by the valour and madness of Don Quixote; I say, fate ordained that he, impelled by the fear of the holy brotherhood, which he did not dread without good reason, happened like-

\* This is an oversight of the author, who seems to have forgot, that Sancho lost his wallet at the inn, and was robbed by the galley-slaves of the great coat or cloak, in which he carried the remains of that provision he had taken from those who attended the dead body towards Segovia.

† A chain of dusky mountains that divide Castile from Andalusia.

wife to take refuge in those mountains; and even to be carried by this fear to the same place whither the same principle had directed Don Quixote and Sancho Panza, just time enough to know who they were, notwithstanding their being gone to sleep. As the wicked are always ungrateful, and necessity puts them to their shifts, and the present convenience overcomes the prospect of future quiet; Gines, who was neither grateful nor good-natured, resolved to steal Sancho's ass, undervaluing Rozinante, as a subject that he could neither pawn nor sell: accordingly, while the squire was asleep, he stole Dapple, and before morning, was gone far enough to elude all pursuit.

The appearance of Aurora that rejoices the earth, had a quite contrary effect upon Sancho Panza, who missing his Dapple, and searching for him in vain, began to utter the most woeful lamentation that ever was heard; and Don Quixote waked by the noise, heard him exclaiming in this manner: "O Son of my bowels! born in my house, the play-fellow of my children, the delight of my spouse, the envy of my neighbours, and comforter of my cares! in short, the half of my sustenance: for, with six and twenty maravedis which thou hast daily earned, did I defray one half of my family expence!" Don Quixote hearing this complaint, and being informed of the cause, consoled Sancho with all the arguments in his power, and begging him to have patience, promised to give him a bill of exchange, on sight of which, he should receive three asses out of five, which the knight had left at home. Sancho being comforted with this declaration, dried up his tears, moderated his sighs, and returned a thousand thanks to Don Quixote for his generosity. As they sauntered among the rocks, the knight's heart was rejoiced to see places so well adapted to those adventures he was in quest of; for, they recalled to his remembrance, those wonderful events which had happened to knights-errant among such rocks and solitudes: he went on, musing on these subjects, and indeed so wrapt up, and engrossed by them, that he minded nothing else: while Sancho's only care, now that he thought he travelled in safety, was to satisfy his appetite with what remained of the spoils of the clergy: he therefore jogged on leisurely, after his master\*, sitting side-ways on his ass, and replenishing his own bags, out of that which contained the provision; and while he was thus employed, would not have given a farthing for the best adventure that could happen.

Chancing, however, to lift up his eyes, he perceived his master had stopt, and was endeavouring, with the point of his lance, to raise some bundle that lay upon the ground: he therefore hastened up to him, in order to lend his assistance, should it be found necessary, and arrived just as

\* Here Cervantes hath been caught napping by the critics, who observe, that Sancho could not be mounted on the ass which was but just now stolen by Gines Paslanonte.

the knight had turned up with his lance, a pillion with a portmanteau fixed to it, all rotted and consumed by the weather: but so heavy, that Sancho was obliged to alight, in order to take them up. His master having ordered him to examine the contents of the portmanteau, he obeyed with great alacrity, and tho' it was shut with a chain and padlock, there were so many holes in it, that he soon reached the inside, where he found four shirts of fine holland, with other provision of linnen, equally fashionable and clean, together with a pretty large heap of crowns of gold, wrapt up in a rag, which he no sooner perceived, than he cried in a rapture, "Blessed be heaven for granting us one advantageous adventure!" then continuing his search, he found a pocket-book richly garnished, which Don Quixote desired to have, bidding him keep the money for his own use. Sancho kissed his hand for the favour, and taking the linnen out of the portmanteau, crammed it into the bag that held their provision.

The knight having considered the whole affair, "Sancho, said he, I am of opinion, and I cannot possibly be mistaken, that some bewildered traveller, in his passage over these mountains, has been set upon by robbers, who having slain him, must have dragged his body to be buried in this unfrequented place." "That cannot be the case, answered the squire; for, if they had been robbers, they would not have left the money behind them." "Thou art in the right, said Don Quixote; and I cannot guess nor conceive what the matter can have been. Let us see if there be any thing written in this pocket-book, by which we may trace out and come to the certainty of what we want to know." He opened it accordingly, and the first thing he found was the rough draught, tho' very legible, of a sonnet, which he read aloud for the benefit of Sancho, in these words:

## I.

LOVE either cruel is or blind;  
Or still unequal to the cause,  
Is this distemper of the mind,  
That with infernal torture gnaws.

## II.

But Love's a god, and cruelty  
In heavenly breasts can never dwell:  
Then say, by what authority,  
I'm doom'd to feel the pains of hell?

## III.

Of all my sufferings and my woe,  
Is Chloe then the fatal source?



Sure ill from good can never flow,  
Nor so much beauty gild a curse.

## IV.

With hopeless misery weigh'd down,  
I'll seek for quiet in the grave;  
For when the malady's unknown,  
A miracle alone can save.

“ From such rhyme, said Sancho, there is no information to be got, unless by that clue \*, we could come to the bottom of the affair.” “ What clue do'st thou mean?” said the knight. “ The clue your worship mentioned just now in the sonnet,” answered the squire. “ I mentioned no clue, replied Don Quixote, but Chloe, which is without doubt, the name of the lady of whom the author of these verses complains : and really he must have been a very ingenious poet, or else I know very little of the art.” “ Then your worship understands crambo?” said the squire. “ Better than you imagine, answered the knight, as you will see when you carry from me a letter to my mistress Dulcinea del Toboso, written in verse from top to bottom : for, thou must know, Sancho, that all or the greatest part of the knights-errant who lived in former ages, were very much addicted to poetry and music ; these two qualities, or rather gifts of nature, being annexed to all errants in love : tho' the truth is, their couplets were rather sprightly than elegant.” “ I wish your worship would read on, said Sancho ; perhaps you may find something more to our satisfaction.” Accordingly the knight, having turned over the leaf, “ Here is prose, said he ; and seems to be a letter.” Sancho asking if it was upon business, his master replied, “ In the beginning there was nothing but love.” “ Pray, Sir, cried Sancho, read it aloud ; for I am highly delighted with matters of love.” “ With all my heart,” answered Don Quixote, who raising his voice, in compliance with the squire's request, read what follows :

“ Thy false promises, together with the certainty of my misfortune, have exiled me to a corner of the world, from whence thou wilt hear an account of my death, before this my complaint shall reach thine ears. Thou hast cast me off, ungrateful as thou art ! in favour of one, who, tho' he is richer, is not a more deserving lover than me : for, if virtue were the wealth that is most esteemed, I should have no cause to envy the happiness of others, or to bewail my own mishap. What thy beauty had raised, thy behaviour has overthrown : by the first I mistook thee for an angel ; by the last I dis-

\* As it is impossible to preserve the original blunders of Sancho, who mistakes Fili or Phillis, for Hilo that signifies a thread, we are obliged to substitute another, by changing Phillis into Chloe, which Sancho, in English, might have as naturally mistaken for a clue, and by this expedient, the sense of the passage is not hurt, and but very little altered.

covered thee to be a woman. Mayest thou live in peace, fair authoress of my misfortunes; and heaven grant that the deceit of thy husband may never be disclosed, that thou mayest never repent of what thou hast done, nor I enjoy the revenge I do not desire."

Don Quixote having read this letter, observed that nothing else could be inferred either from it, or the verses, but that the author was some despairing lover. Then perusing the rest of the book, he found more verses and letters, some legible, and others not intelligible; but, the substance of them all, was composed of complaints, lamentations, suspicions, desires, disgusts, favours and disdain, some of which were extolled, and others deplored. While Don Quixote examined the book, Sancho rummaged the portmanteau, without leaving a corner in that or the pillion, which he did not search, pry into and overhaul: no seam was left unript, no lock of wool unpicked, that nothing might be lost thro' negligence and want of care; so much was his cupidity awakened, by finding the money, which amounted to more than an hundred crowns: and tho' he reaped no other fruit from his industry, he thought himself abundantly requited for his capers in the blanket, his vomit of the balsam, the benediction of the pack-staves, the fifty-cuffs of the carrier, the loss of his bags, the robbery of his great coat, with all the hunger, thirst and fatigue he had undergone in the service of his worthy master, who had made him more than amends, by his generous present of this windfall.

The knight of the rueful countenance was impatient to know the owner of the portmanteau; conjecturing by the sonnet, the letter, the gold, and the fine linnen, that he must be some lover of quality, whom the disdain and barbarity of his mistress had driven to some desperate end: but, as in that uninhabited and rocky place, there was no body who could give him the information he wanted, he resolved to penetrate still farther into the mountain, without taking any other road than what Rozinante should chuse for his own conveniency, still confident of meeting with some strange adventure among these briars and brambles.

As he went on, entertaining himself with these reflections, he perceived, upon the top of a hill, right before him, a man skipping from bush to bush, and rock to rock, with wonderful agility: his body seemed naked, his beard black and bushy, his hair long and matted, his feet unshod, his legs bare, and his thighs covered with breeches, which to all appearance, were of crimson, but so ragged, that his skin appeared thro' many different holes, while his head was without any sort of covering. Notwithstanding the nimbleness with which he passed, all these minute circumstances were seen and remarked by the knight of the rueful countenance, who in vain, attempted to follow him; those rough roads being quite unpassable by the feeble

feeble Rozinante, which was naturally phlegmatic and tender-footed. However, Don Quixote concluded that this must be the owner of the pillion and portmanteau, and determined within himself to find him out, altho' he should travel a whole year thro' the mountains, for that very purpose. With this view, he ordered Sancho to alight, and take a short cut over one part of the mountain, while he should go round the other; that by this expedient, they might come up with the man who had so suddenly vanished from their sight. "That proposal I can by no means comply with, answered the squire; for, if I stir but an inch from your worship, fear instantly lays hold on me, and assaults me in a thousand horrid shapes and visions; and let this serve to apprise you, that henceforward, I will not budge a finger's breadth from your presence." "Be it so, said he of the rueful countenance; and I am very glad that thou can'st avail thyself of my courage, which shall never fail thee, even if thy soul should fail thy body: follow me therefore, step by step, or at thy own leisure, and use thine eyes like two spy-glasses: we will take a compass round this little mountain, and perhaps we may meet again with that man, who is certainly no other than the owner of what we found." To this observation, Sancho replied, "Methinks we may save ourselves that trouble; for, if upon finding him, he should prove to be the owner of the money, I must of course, make restitution: therefore we had better spare all this fruitless search, and keep it bona fide, until the true owner, appear of himself, without all this intricate inquiry; and before that happens, perhaps I shall have spent the whole, and then I shall be discharged by law." "In that notion thou art mistaken, Sancho, resumed the knight; for, as we have already good grounds to believe that he is the owner, it is our duty to find him out, and restore what we have taken: and tho' we should not find him, the strong reason we have to believe that it belongs to him, will make us equally guilty in detaining it, as we should be, if it really did. Wherefore, friend Sancho, do not give thyself any uneasiness about the inquiry; because, if we find him, I shall be freed from a great deal of anxiety." So saying, he put spurs to Rozinante, and Sancho followed in his usual manner. Having surrounded part of the mountain, they found in a brook that watered the foot of it, a dead mule saddled and bridled, and half consumed by the dogs and crows: another circumstance which confirmed them in the opinion, that he who fled from them was master both of the mule and portmanteau.

While they were looking at this object, they heard a shepherd's whistle, and presently on the left appeared a good number of goats, and behind them, on the top of the mountain, they descried the goatherd, who seemed to be a man in years. Don Quixote calling aloud, intreated him to come down; and he in the same tone, asked what had brought them to that

that place, which was seldom trodden except by the feet of goats, wolves, and other wild beasts that harboured thereabouts? Sancho bade him come down, and they would tell him what had brought them thither; upon which, the goatherd descended, and coming up to Don Quixote, "I'll wager, said he, that you are looking at the hireling mule, which lies dead in that bottom, where in good sooth it hath lain full six months. Pray, have you met with its master?" "We have met with nothing, answered the knight, but a pillion and portmanteau, which we found not far from hence." "I have often seen the same things, replied the goatherd, but would never touch nor go near them, being afraid of some misfortune; or of being questioned for theft; for, the devil is very cunning, and raises blocks under our feet, over which we stumble, and very often fall." "That is the very thing I say, answered Sancho, though I saw them also, I would not go within a stone's throw of them: there I left them, and there they remain as they were; for, I don't chuse to steal a dog with a collar about his neck\*." "Prithee, honest friend, said Don Quixote, dost thou know who the owner of these things is?" "All that I can say of the matter, answered the goatherd, is, that it may be about six months, more or less, since there came to our hut, which is about three leagues from hence, a very genteel young man of a comely appearance, riding upon that very mule that now lies dead, with the same pillion and portmanteau which you say, you found. He asked what part of the mountain was the most woody and concealed, and we told him, that it was this very spot where we now are; and it is so, for if you go half a league farther into the mountain, you will perhaps, find it a very difficult matter to return: and I marvel much, how you have got so far, for, there is neither high-road, nor by-path that leads to this place. But, as I was saying, the young man hearing our reply, turned his mule, and rode towards the place to which we had directed him, leaving us all very much pleased with his appearance, though not a little surprized at his question, and the speed with which we saw him ride back into the heart of the mountain: from that time we saw no more of him, till a few days after, when he sprung upon one of our shepherds on the road, and without saying why or wherefore, beat and bruised him unmercifully; after which, he went to the sumpter-afs, and, carrying off all the bread and cheese that was on his back, with surprizing nimbleness, ran back again to the thicket. As soon as we understood this particular, several of us goatherds went in search of him, through the most wild and unfrequented part of the mountain, for the space of two days, at the end of which, we found

\* Methinks it is inconsistent with the character of the knight, to allow Sancho to tell such a fraudulent untruth in his hearing; nor is Panza's behaviour, on this occasion, much for the honour of his simplicity.

him

him lying in the hollow of a large cork-tree. He came out to us, in a very civil manner, with his cloaths all torn, and his face so tanned and disfigured by the sun, that we should scarce have known him, had not his cloaths, tattered as they were, which we had before taken particular notice of, assured us that he was the person we went in search of. He saluted us very courteously, and in a few words, though very well chosen, bade us not wonder at seeing him in that condition; for, he was obliged in that manner, to do penance, which had been enjoined him, on account of his manifold sins and transgressions. We earnestly begged to know who he was, but that he never could be prevailed upon to tell: we desired him also, whenever he should have occasion for food, without which he could not live, to tell us where we should find him, and we would bring it to him, with great care and affection; or, if that was not to his liking, we desired him to ask it civilly, without taking it by force. He thanked us kindly for our tenders of service, begged pardon for the assaults he had committed, and promised for the future, to ask it for God's sake, without giving offence to any person whatsoever. With regard to the place of his habitation, he said he had no other than that which chance presented every night when it grew dark; and concluded his discourse with such piteous lamentation, that our hearts must have been made of flint, if we could have heard it without shedding tears, considering the woeful change he had undergone, since we saw him at first: for, as I have already observed, he was a genteel, comely youth, and by his courteous and polite discourse, shewed himself to be a person of good birth, and excellent breeding: and though we who heard him were only home-bred country people, the gentility of his carriage was easily perceived by our clownish ignorance. In the midst of this conversation that past between him and us, he grew silent all of a sudden, and nailed, as it were, his eyes to the ground, for a considerable space of time, during which, we remained in suspense and no small concern, to see the effect of this stupefaction; for, by his staring at the ground for a good while, without moving his eye-lids, then shutting them close and biting his lips, and then drawing up the skin of his forehead, we could easily perceive that he was seized with some fit of madness; and he soon confirmed the truth of our opinion; for, he sprung up with surprizing force, from the ground on which he had thrown himself, and attacked the person who was next to him, with such rage and resolution, that if we had not taken him off, he would have beaten and bit him to death: crying aloud all the time, "Ha, treacherous Fernando! Now shalt thou pay for the injury thou hast done me. These hands shall tear out thy heart, in which all kinds of wickedness, particularly fraud and deceit, are harboured and dwell!"

To

To these he added other expressions, tending to reproach that Fernando with treachery and baseness. When we had got our friend out of his clutches, with no small trouble, he went off without speaking another word, and ran at full speed among these shrubs and brambles, so as that it was impossible for us to follow him. From these things, we conjectured that his madness comes upon him by fits, and that some person of the name of Fernando must have done him some deadly wrong, which hath driven him to distraction. Indeed, this conjecture has been since confirmed by his different behaviour on diverse occasions, when he hath met with our shepherds, from whom he hath sometimes begged part of their provision, and at other times, hath taken it by force; for when the fit of lunacy is upon him, though they offer it of their own free will, he will not accept of it peaceably, without coming to blows; but, when he is in his right senses, he begs it for God's sake, in a very courteous and civil manner, and returns many thanks for the favour, accompanied with abundance of tears. And truly, gentlemen, added the goatherd, I and four more country lads, two of them my own servants, and the other two friends of mine, yesterday resolved to go in search of him, and after having found him, to carry him, either by force or fair means, to the city of Almodavar, which is about eight leagues from hence; and there have him cured, if he be curable; or learn of him, when he is in his senses, who he is, and whether or not he has any relations, to whom we may give an account of his misfortune. This, gentlemen, is all I can say, in answer to the questions you asked; and you may take it for granted, that the owner of the goods you found, is the very same person whom you saw skip about, half-naked, with such agility." For, Don Quixote had said that they had seen a man in that condition, leaping from rock to rock.

The knight was very much surprized at this information of the goatherd, which making him still more impatient to know who this unfortunate lunatic was, he determined with himself to put his former design in execution, and go in quest of him, through the whole mountain, without leaving a cave or corner unsearched until he should find him. But, accident was more his friend on this occasion, than he could either imagine or expect. For, at that instant, the young man of himself, appeared in the cleft of a rock hard by the place where they stood; and came towards them, muttering something to himself, which they could not have understood, had he been near, much less, as he was at some distance from them. His equipage was just as it has been described; but, as he approached, Don Quixote perceived that his buff doublet, though torn to rags, still retained the perfume; from whence he concluded, that the person

son who wore such dress, could not be a man of the lowest rank. When he came up, he saluted them very politely, though with a hoarse mistuned voice; and the salutation was returned with no less courtesy by Don Quixote, who alighting from Rozinante, with genteel and graceful deportment, went and embraced the stranger, whom he strained within his arms a good while, as if he had been a very old acquaintance. The other, who might have been called the tatterdemalion of the distracted, as Don Quixote was stiled the knight of the rueful countenance, after having submitted to this embrace, stepped back, and laying his hands on the shoulders of the knight, stood looking attentively in his face, in order to recollect him; no less astonished, perhaps, at the figure, mien and armour of Don Quixote, than this last was surpris'd at his forlorn appearance. At length, the first who broke silence after the embrace was the ragged youth, who spoke what you may read in the following chapter.

## C H A P. X.

The continuation of the adventure in the Sierra Morena.

**T**HE history relates, that Don Quixote listened with vast attention to the shabby knight of the mountain, who began the conversation thus: "Assuredly, signor, though I have not the honour to know who you are, I thank you heartily for those expressions of kindness with which you treat me; and wish I were in such a situation as would enable me to repay this courteous reception with something more than meer good-will." "My will and desire, answered Don Quixote, to serve you is so strong, that I was determin'd not to quit these mountains, until I had found you, and learned of yourself, whether or not, the grief you manifest in this strange course of life, could be alleviated by any kind of remedy, for which, had need required, I would have searched with all possible diligence: and had your misfortune been such as shut up all the avenues to advice and redress, I was resolv'd to join your lamentations, and bemoan your misery to the utmost of my power; for, in all my misfortunes, the greatest consolation is a sympathising friend: and if this my friendly intention deserves the least return of civility, I intreat you, signor, by that courtesy which I see you so eminently possess, and moreover, conjure you by that object, which of all others in this life, you have most loved, or are most in love with, to tell me who you are, and inform me of the cause that brings you to live and die in this solitude, like the brute beasts among which you dwell, so different from that rank and situation, to which your

dress and person declare you are intitled. And I swear by the order of chivalry which I have received, unworthy sinner that I am ! and by the profession of a knight-errant, that if you comply with this my request, I will serve you with that earnestness which my duty obliges me to express; either in remedying your mishap, if it admits of remedy; or in condoling you, as I have already promised." The knight of the wood, hearing him of the rueful countenance talk in this manner, could do nothing for some time, but gaze, and stare and survey him from head to foot; at length having examined him thoroughly, he said, " If you have got any food, for God's-sake spare me a little; and after I shall have eaten it, I will do as you desire, in return for the civility you now shew me."

Sancho immediately pulled from his bag, and the goatherd from his scrip, some victuals to appease the hunger of the tatterdemalion, who swallowed what they gave him, like a frantic person, with such hurry that he left not the interval of an instant between one mouthful and another, but seemed to devour rather than eat, without either speaking or being spoke to by the spectators. His repast being ended, he beckoned them to follow, and conducted them to a verdant spot of grass, at the turning of a rock, a little way from the place where they were; and, sitting down on the green turf, they followed his example; not a word being spoke all the time, until the ragged knight, after having adjusted himself in his seat, began in this manner: " If you desire, gentlemen, that I should, in a few words, inform you of the immensity of my misfortunes, you must give me your promise that you will not by any question, or otherwise, interrupt the thread of my doleful story; for, if you should, that instant I will break off the narration." This warning recalled to the knight's memory, the story recounted by his squire, which still remained unfinished, because he had not kept an exact account of the goats, as they passed the river. But, to return to the tattered knight, " I give you this precaution, added he, because, I would briefly pass over the detail of my misfortunes, the remembrance of which brings fresh addition to my woe; and the fewer questions you ask, the sooner shall I have finished the relation; although, in order to satisfy your curiosity to the full, I will not fail to mention every material circumstance." Don Quixote promised, in behalf of himself and the company, to avoid all manner of interruption, and the stranger thus assured, began in these words:

" My name is Cardenio, the place of my nativity one of the best cities in this province of Andalusia, my family noble, my parents rich, and my misfortunes so great, that no doubt, they have been lamented by them, and even felt through my whole kindred, though all their wealth would not alleviate my woe; for, the goods of fortune are but of little service  
against



against those ills inflicted by the hand of heaven. In the same country lived, shall I call her, a paradise, which love had adorned with all the charms I could desire to possess; such was the beauty of Lucinda, a young lady as well born and rich as I, though more fortunate, and endowed with less constancy than what was due to my honourable intentions. This Lucinda did I admire, love and adore even from my most tender years; and she made me all the returns of love and inclination, that I could expect from her infant age. Our parents were not ignorant of our mutual affection, which gave them no offence, because they foresaw that if it should encrease with our years, it could have no other issue than marriage; an union which the equality of our age and fortune seemed to point out. Mean while, our passion growing up with our age, Lucinda's father thought himself obliged to forbid me his house; imitating, in that particular, the parents of Thisbe, whom the poets have celebrated so much. This prohibition, added flame to flame, and wish to wish; for, though our tongues were restrained, they could not silence our pens, which commonly express the sentiments of the heart with more liberty, because the presence of the beloved object often confounds the most determined intention, and puts to silence the most undaunted tongue.

Good heaven! what letters did I write! what chaste endearing answers did I receive! what songs did I compose, inspired by love that displayed the soul unmasked, inflamed each soft desire, regaled the fancy and indulged the wish! in fine, my patience being exhausted, and my heart almost consumed with the desire of seeing her, I resolved to execute the scheme which seemed most favourable for my love and pretensions; and this I put in practice, by demanding her in marriage of her father, who thanked me for the honour I intended him, by this proposal of marrying into his family, but said, as my own father was alive, it was properly his business to make the demand; for, unless his consent and inclination were obtained, Lucinda was not a person either to be given or taken in marriage, by stealth. I thanked him, in my turn, for his politeness, and thinking there was a great deal of reason in what he said, assured myself that my father would readily agree to the proposal, whenever I should make it. I therefore, flew instantly to disclose my sentiments to him on that subject, and entering the closet where he was, found him reading a letter, which before I could speak a syllable, he put into my hand, saying, "By this letter, Cardenio, you will see how much duke Ricardo is inclined to do you service." This duke Ricardo, as you must know, gentlemen, is a grandee of Spain, whose estate lies in the best part of this province. I took and read the letter, which was so extremely kind, that I myself should have blamed my father, had he refused to comply with what

he requested in it: this was, to send me immediately to his house, he being desirous that I should live as the companion, not the servant, of his eldest son; and he would take care of my fortune, in such a manner as should manifest the esteem he had for me. Having read the letter, I was struck dumb at knowing the contents; especially, when I heard my father pronounce, "Two days hence, Cardenio, you shall set out, according to the pleasure of the duke; and you ought to thank God for having opened an avenue, through which you may arrive at that fortune I know you deserve." To this declaration he added other advices, as became a prudent father, and I, the night before I departed, finding means to speak with Lucinda, told her what had happened; nay, I even imparted it to her father, intreating him to wait a few days, without disposing of her to any other, until I should know in what manner Ricardo wanted to employ me. He gave me his promise accordingly, and she confirmed it by a thousand vows and anxious sighs.

I at length arrived at the seat of duke Ricardo, by whom I was so well received and kindly entertained, that Envy presently began to do her office, possessing the old servants with the opinion, that every expression of favour I received from the duke, was prejudicial to their interest. But he who was most rejoiced at my residing there, was the duke's second son Fernando, a gay, genteel, liberal and amorous youth, who, in a short time, was pleased to honour me with such intimacy of friendship as became the subject of every body's discourse; and though the elder brother loved and favoured me also, he did not carry his favour and affection to such a pitch. Now, as all secrets are communicated between friends, and the confidence in which I lived with Fernando was soon changed into friendship, he imparted to me, his most secret thoughts, and among other things, a love-affair that gave him a good deal of disquiet. In short, he had an inclination for a country-maid, who was his father's vassal: her parents were very rich, and she herself so beautiful, reserved, modest, and discreet, that nobody who knew her could determine in which of these qualifications she most excelled. These accomplishments of this fair maiden inflamed the desires of Don Fernando to such a pitch, that he resolved, as the easiest conquest over her virtue, to promise he would marry her; for, he found it impossible to gratify his wish, in any other way. I, prompted and bound by my friendship, endeavoured to dissuade and divert him from his purpose, by the strongest arguments and most lively examples I could produce; but, finding them all ineffectual, I resolved to communicate the whole affair to his father duke Ricardo.

Don Fernando having abundance of cunning and discernment, suspected my intention; and was afraid, that the obligation he saw I was under,

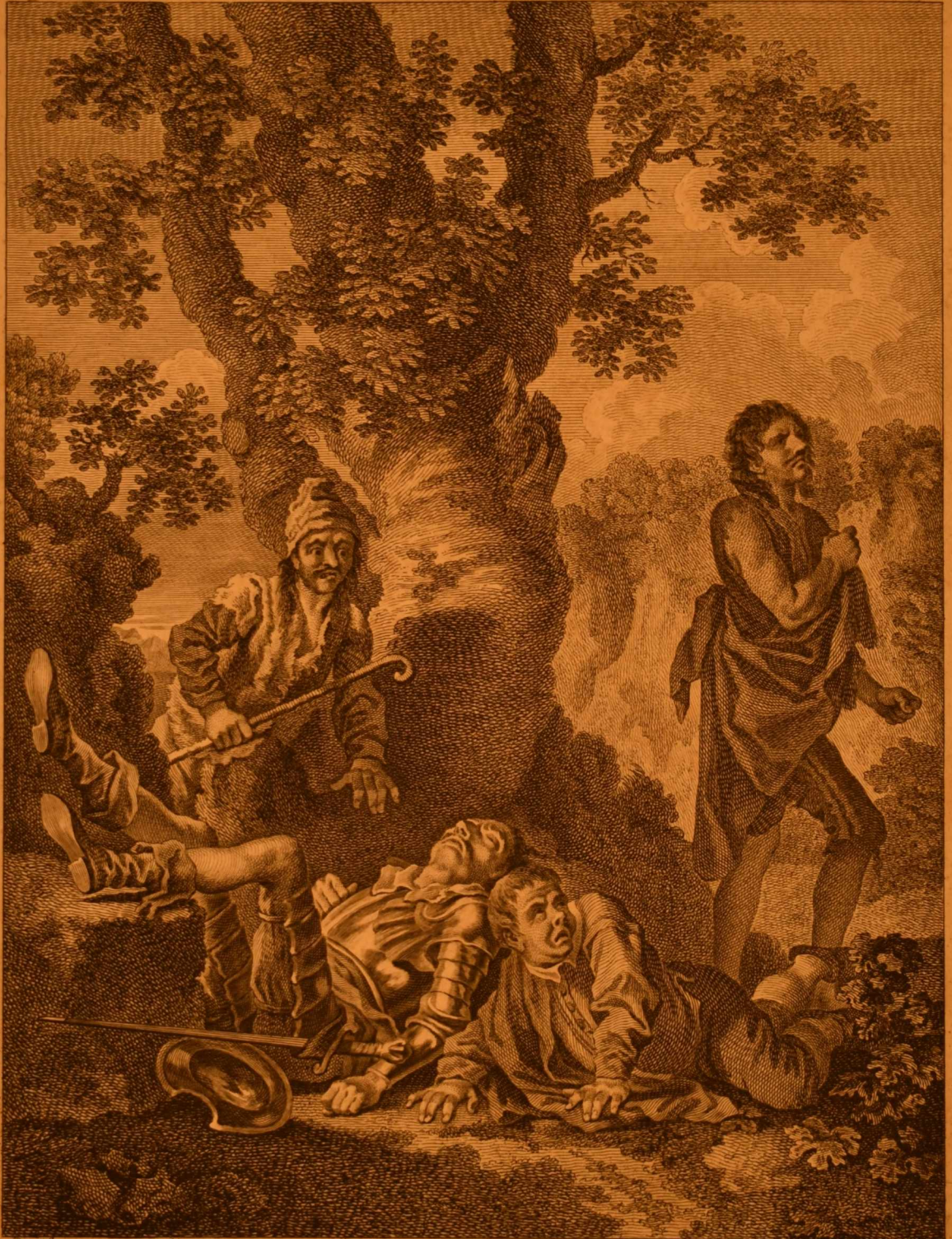
der, as a faithful servant, would not allow me to conceal an affair so prejudicial to the honour of the duke my master : he therefore, in order to divert and deceive me, observed, that he could find no better remedy to remove the beauty that enslaved him, from his remembrance, than that of absence for a few months ; and therefore desired that we should go to my father's house, upon pretence, as he would tell the duke, of seeing and purchasing some fine horses in our town, which produces the best in the world. Scarce had he uttered this proposal, when, prompted by my love, exclusive of his prudent intention, I approved of it, as one of the best concerted schemes that could be imagined ; and was rejoiced at meeting with such a fair conjuncture and occasion of returning to my dear Lucinda. Induced by this motive and desire, I applauded his pretence, and enforced his proposal, advising him to execute his plan with all speed ; for, absence would certainly do it's office, in spite of the most established inclination. At that very time, as I afterwards understood, he had enjoyed the country-maid, under the title of her husband, and waited for an opportunity of owning it with safety to himself, being afraid of the duke's resentment, in case he should discover his folly. It happened afterwards, that as love in young people is, for the most part, nothing but appetite, whose only aim is pleasure ; and this being enjoyed, what seemed love, vanishes, because it cannot exceed the bounds of nature ; whereas real love is bounded by no such limits : I say, as soon as Don Fernando enjoyed the country-girl, his desires were appeased and his raptures abated ; and if at first, he pretended to seek a cure for them, in absence, he now, earnestly desired to be absent, that he might avoid any further gratification.

The duke having given him leave, and ordered me to attend him, we arrived at our habitation, where he was received by my father, in a manner, suitable to his rank and family. I went instantly to visit Lucinda, whose presence, in a moment, rekindled all my desires, which indeed were neither dead nor decayed within me ; and, to my infinite misfortune, I made Don Fernando acquainted with my love, because I thought, by the laws of that intimate friendship with which he honoured me, I ought to conceal nothing from him. I therefore praised the beauty, grace, and discretion of Lucinda, in such a manner, as excited his curiosity to see such an accomplished young lady. Prompted by my evil genius, I gratified his desire, shewing her to him one night, by the light of a taper, at the window, from which I used to converse with her. At sight of her he absolutely forgot all the beauties he had formerly seen ; he was struck dumb with wonder ; he seemed to lose all sense, became absent and pensive ; and, in short, enamoured of her to that degree which you will perceive in the course of my unhappy story. And, the more to inflame his  
desire,

desire, which he concealed from me, and disclosed to heaven alone, he happened one day to find a letter which she had written, desiring me to ask her in marriage of her father; so prudent, modest and tender, that upon perusing it, he said, "In Lucinda alone are centered all the charms of beauty and understanding, which are divided among the rest of her sex." True it is, and I will now confess it, that although I knew how justly Fernando applauded Lucinda, I was vexed at hearing these praises proceed from his mouth, and began to dread, and suspect his inclination; for, he was eternally talking of her, and always turned the discourse upon her, even when he was obliged to bring her in by the head and shoulders: a circumstance that waked a sort of jealousy within me; not, that I imagined aught could alter the faith and affection of Lucinda, yet, notwithstanding, my destiny made me dread the very thing that confidence ensured. Don Fernando always endeavoured to read the letters I sent to Lucinda, together with her answers, on pretence of being highly pleased with the good sense they contained; and it once happened, that she having desired me to send her a book of knight-errantry, in which she took great delight, called *Amadis de Gaul*."

Don Quixote no sooner heard him mention this book, than he said, "Had you told me, in the beginning of your story, that your mistress Lucinda was an admirer of books of chivalry, you would have had no occasion to use any other argument to convince me of her sublime understanding; which I should not have deemed quite so extraordinary as you have represented it, had she wanted relish for that sort of reading: wherefore, you need not spend any more words with me, in extolling her beauty, virtue and good sense; for, upon the knowledge of her taste only, I pronounce her to be the most beautiful and discreet lady in the universe: I wish, however, that you had sent along with *Amadis de Gaul*, the worthy Don Rugel of Greece; for, I know your mistress Lucinda would have been greatly pleased with *Darayra* and *Garaya*, together with the judicious sayings of the shepherd *Darinel*, and those admirable verses of his eclogues, sung and represented by him with such grace, spirit and discretion; but, the time will come when that omission may be rectified; indeed the fault may be repaired as soon as you shall please to accompany me to the place of my habitation, where I can supply you with more than three hundred books, which are the feast of my soul, and entertainment of my life: though now I recollect, not one of them remains in my possession; thanks to the malice of wicked and envious enchanters. But, I hope you will be so good as to forgive me for having contradicted my promise of not interrupting your story; for, when the subject turns upon chivalry or knights-errant, I can no more forbear interposing, than the rays of the sun





J. Hayman Inv. et Del.

J. F. Ravenet Sculpt.

fun can cease to warm, or those of the moon to wet: but, I ask pardon, pray proceed with your story; for, that is most to the purpose at present."

While Don Quixote was talking in this manner, Cardenio hung his head, and fell into a profound reverie; and tho' the knight repeated his request, would neither lift up his head, nor answer one word. At length, after a long pause, looking up, "You cannot, said he, beat it out of my thoughts; nor is there any person upon earth, who can persuade me to the contrary; and he must be a blockhead, who imagines or believes otherwise, than that the villain master Elisabat, carried on a criminal correspondence with queen Madafima." "By heaven, 'tis false! cried Don Quixote, with great indignation and impetuosity, as usual; that report is the effect of malice, or rather meer wantonness. Queen Madafima was a most royal dame, and it is not to be presumed, that a princess of her rank would confer favours upon a meer quack doctor. Whosoever thinks otherwise, lies like a very great scoundrel; and I will prove him such, either on horseback or afoot, armed or disarmed, by night or by day, as will most suit his inclination." Cardenio stood all the while, looking attentively at him, and being, by this time, seized with the paroxysm of his madness, could not proceed with his story; neither, if he had proceeded, would Don Quixote have listened to it, for he was offended at what he had heard to the prejudice \* of queen Madafima, whose reputation interested him as much as if she had been actually his own mistress: such wonderful impression had those profane books made on his imagination!

I say then, Cardenio being by this time, under the influence of his distraction, and hearing himself called liar and scoundrel, with other terms of reproach, could not relish the joke; but, snatching up a large pebble that lay near him, aimed it so successfully at Don Quixote's breast, that he fell fairly on his back with the blow. Sancho Panza, seeing his master treated in this manner, attacked the madman with his clenched fist; but, the lunatic received him with such a blow, as knocked him down to the ground at once, and then getting upon him, mauled his carcase to his heart's content; while the goatherd, who attempted to defend him, met with the same fate. Having thus mastered and pummelled them all round, he left off, and, with great composure, retreated to the thickets from whence he came. Sancho then arose, and enraged to find himself handled in this manner, for nothing, ran to take vengeance on the goatherd, saying that he was to blame for the whole, because he had not informed him, that the man had intervals of madness; which had they known, they might have guarded against them. The goatherd affirmed, that he had apprised them

\* Queen Madafima, a lady in Amadis de Gaul, attended by one Elisabat a surgeon, with whom she travels, and lies in woods and desarts.

of what might happen; and if they had not heard him, it was no fault of his. The squire replied, the goatherd retorted, and, in conclusion, they went by the ears together, and pulled each other's beards with such fury, that there would not have been a single hair left on either chin, had not Don Quixote interposed. Sancho grappling stoutly with his adversary, cried, "Give me leave, Sir knight of the rueful countenance; this is no armed knight, but a plebeian like myself, of whom I can securely take satisfaction for the injury he has done me, by fighting with him hand to hand, like a man of honour." "True, said Don Quixote; but, the cause of what hath happened, cannot be justly imputed to him." Peace accordingly ensued, and the knight asked the goatherd again, if there was a possibility of finding Cardenio; for, he was extremely desirous of hearing the conclusion of his story. The goatherd repeated what he had said before, that he did not certainly know whereabouts he resided; but, if they should stay long in these parts, they could not fail of finding him either mad or sober.

#### C H A P. XI.

Of the strange adventures that happened to the valiant knight of la Mancha, in the Sierra Morena, where he did penance, in imitation of Beltenebros.

**D**ON Quixote having taken leave of the goatherd, and mounted Rozinante again, commanded Sancho to follow him; and the squire besriding his ass, obeyed with great reluctance: as they advanced at leisure, into the most rocky parts of the mountain, Sancho longed to death for an opportunity of talking, and waited impatiently till his master should begin, that he might not transgress his orders; but, being utterly unable to keep silence any longer, "Sir Don Quixote, said he, be pleased to give me your blessing, and grant me leave to return immediately to my wife and children, with whom I can talk and prattle my fill; for, in commanding me to travel with you, thro' these desarts, night and day, without opening my lips when I am disposed to speak, your worship buries me alive: if it were the will of heaven, that beasts spoke as they did in the days of Hyffop, I should be the less uneasy, because I would converse with my ass, at pleasure; and that would be some comfort to me in my misfortunes; but, it is a very hard case, and what I cannot bear with patience, to travel in search of adventures all my life, and find nought but ribroastings, blankettings, robberies, and fisticuffs; and after all, be obliged to sew up our mouths, without daring to bring up what lies upon our stomachs, more than if we were dumb."



“ I understand thee, Sancho, replied the knight ; thou art impatient until I take off the interdiction I have laid upon thy tongue : I take it off, then—say what you please, on condition, that this repeal shall last no longer than our stay in this mountain.” “ Be it so, said Sancho ; to-day I will speak ; to-morrow, God’s will be done : and the first use I make of this safe conduct, is to ask why your worship was in such a passion, about that queen Magimafa, or how d’ye call her ? or of what signification was it to you, whether that same Abat was her sweetheart or not ? Had your worship overlooked that circumstance that you had no concern in, I firmly believe the madman would have gone on with his story, and you would have saved yourself the pebble-shot, with more than half a dozen of kicks and cuffs.”

“ In faith, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, if thou knowest, as I do, what an honourable and princely lady that queen Madafima was, thou wouldest say, I had great patience in forbearing to demolish the mouth from whence such blasphemy proceeded ; for, sure ’tis no less to say, or even think, that a queen should take a surgeon to her bed. The truth of the story is this, that master Elifabat, whom the lunatic mentioned, was a man of prudence and discernment, and served the queen in quality of tutor and physician ; but, to suppose that there was any indecent familiarity between them, is a piece of folly that deserves to be severely chastised : and to convince thee that Cardenio knew not what he said, thou mayest remember he was deprived of his senses, when he took notice of that circumstance.” “ This I’ll venture to say, replied the squire, that the words of a madman are not to be minded ; for, if fortune had not stood your worship’s friend, and directed to your breast the pebble that was aimed at your head, we should have been in a fine condition, for your having quarrelled about that lady, whom heaven confound : you may depend upon it, Cardenio would have been acquitted on account of his madness.”

“ Every knight-errant, said Don Quixote, is obliged to quarrel with those who are out of their senses, as well as those who are in them, if they asperse the honour of women, whatsoever they might be. How much more then, in behalf of princesses of such high quality and accomplishments as adorned queen Madafima, for whom I have a particular affection, on account of her admirable qualifications ; for, over and above her beauty, she had a great share of prudence and resignation in her calamities, which were manifold : and the advice and company of master Elifabat, were of great service in encouraging her to bear her afflictions with patience and equanimity. From hence, the ignorant and malicious vulgar took occasion to say, and suppose, that she admitted of his caresses : but, they lie—I say again, all those who either say or think so, lie in their throats, and I will tell them so two hundred

times over." "As for my own part, said Sancho, I neither say nor think any such thing; those that do may dine upon it: if they were too familiar, by this time they have answered for it to God. I prune my own vine, and know nothing about thine. I never meddle with other people's concerns. He that buys and denies, his own purse belies; as the saying is. Bare I was born, and bare I remain: and if I lose nothing, as little I gain. If he did lie with her that is no matter of mine. Many people hunt the hare without ever finding the scut; for, 'Till you hedge in the sky, the starlings will fly. And evil tongues will not refrain from God himself."

"Good heaven! cried Don Quixote, what fooleries art thou stringing together, Sancho! pray, what relation have these old saws to the subject of our conversation? I charge thee to hold thy peace, and henceforth entertain thyself with spurring up thy ass, and leave off talking of things which do not concern thee: or, let thy whole five senses be convinced, that every thing I have done, am doing, or will do, is highly reasonable, and in exact conformity with the laws of chivalry, which I understand better than any knight that ever professed the order." "Yes, Sir, replied Sancho, to be sure it is an excellent law of chivalry, to stroll about bewildered in these mountains, where there is neither high-road nor by-path, in search of a madman, who, after we have found him, will perhaps take it in his head to finish what he left undone; not of his story, but of your worship's pate and my ribs, which he may chance to break in a thousand shivers."

"I say again, Sancho, resumed the knight, hold thy peace; for, I would have thee know, that I am not detained in this place, so much by the desire of finding the lunatic, as of performing in it, an exploit by which I shall acquire everlasting renown throughout the whole known world; and put the stamp of perfection upon the wonderful efforts of knight-errantry." "And will this exploit be attended with much danger?" said Sancho. "No, answered he of the rueful countenance, tho' the dice may run so as to produce bad instead of good fortune: but, the whole will depend upon thy diligence." "Upon my diligence!" cried the squire. "Without doubt, answered his master; for, if thou wilt return speedily, from the place to which thou must be sent, my affliction will soon be at an end, and my glory will speedily begin: and, that I may no longer keep thee in suspense about the meaning of my words, know, Sancho, that the celebrated Amadis de Gaul was one of the most perfect knights-errant. One of them, said I? he alone, was the only, single, chief and superior of all his contemporaries. Contempt and shame upon Bellianis, and all those who say he equalled him in any one particular; for, by this light, they are all egregiously deceived! I say, moreover, when a painter desires to become famous in his art, he endeavours to imitate the originals painted by the most noted artists; and the

the same maxim holds in every other science and exercise that adorns a commonwealth: therefore, he who wants to attain the virtues of prudence and equanimity, must endeavour to imitate the character of Ulysses, in whose person and sufferings Homer has drawn an excellent picture of wisdom and patience, as Virgil, in the person of Æneas, represents the piety of an affectionate son, and the sagacity of a wise and valiant general: not, that they are described and set forth exactly as they were, but, as they ought to have been; as examples of virtue to posterity. In the same manner, Amadis shone like the north-star, the lucifer and sun of all valiant and amorous knights; and therefore, must be imitated, as a pattern, by all those who serve under the banners of love and chivalry. Now, this being the case, friend Sancho, I find that the knight-errant who approaches the nearest to this great original, will bid fairest for attaining the perfection of chivalry: and one of the circumstances in which that knight gave the highest proofs of his worth, prudence, valour, patience, constancy and love, was his retiring to the poor rock, when he was in disgrace with his mistress Oriana, there to do penance under the feigned name of \* Beltenebros; an appellation certainly very significant and proper to the way of life he had voluntarily chosen. As it is therefore, more easy for me to imitate him in this, than in cleaving giants, beheading serpents, slaying dragons, overthrowing armies, scattering navies, and dissolving enchantments; and as this solitude is so well adapted to such designs, I am resolved to seize occasion by the forelock, which she now so complaisantly presents."

"In reality, said Sancho, what is your worship resolved to do in this remote place?" "Have I not already told thee, replied the knight, that I am determined to imitate Amadis, in acting the desperado, the lunatic and madman: to copy also after the valiant Don Roldan, when he discovered, in a fountain, certain marks by which he was convinced that Angelica the fair had committed uncleanness with Medoro. A piece of information attended with such grief and anxiety, that he ran mad, tore up the trees by the roots, sullied the waters of the transparent springs, slew shepherds, destroyed flocks, set fire to cottages, demolished houses, dragged mares along the ground, and performed a thousand other insolent feats worthy to be inserted in fame's eternal record: and because I do not propose to imitate Roldan, or Orlando or Rotolando, for he went by all these names, literally in all the extravagancies he thought, said and did, I will copy his outlines as well as I can, in the most essential parts of his character; nay, perhaps, I may content myself with the sole imitation of Amadis, who, by his tears and sighs alone, acquired as much fame as the other, with all the mischief he did." "If I apprehend the matter aright, said Sancho,

\* The Beautiful obscure.

the knights who played such mad pranks were provoked, and had some reason to act these fooleries and penance: but, what cause hath your worship to turn madman? With what lady are you in disgrace? or by what signs are you given to understand that the lady Dulcinea del Toboso has been playing the rogue either with Moor or Christian?" "This is the point, answered Don Quixote, and refinement of my design: a knight who turns madman, because he cannot help it, can claim no merit from his misfortune; but, the great matter is, to run distracted without cause, and give my lady reason to conceive what I could do were I moistened, when I can do so much, being dry. More especially, as I have sufficient cause in the long absence to which I am doomed by my ever-darling mistress Dulcinea del Toboso; for, according to the words of the shepherd Matias Ambrosio, which thou mayest have heard,

In absence of my charming fair,  
I suffer all those ills I fear.

Wherefore, friend Sancho, you need not throw away your time unprofitably, in advising me to refrain from an imitation at once so admirable, rare and happy: mad I am, and mad I shall be until thou returnest with the answer of a letter which I propose to send by thee to my lady Dulcinea: and if it be such as I am intitled to by my love and fidelity; my distraction and penance will end: but, should it be otherwise, I shall run mad in earnest, and consequently be insensible of my misfortune: wherefore, let her answer be as it may, it will extricate me from the doubts and affliction in which thou leavest me; because, if it be favourable, I shall enjoy it in my right senses; and if it be unfavourable, my frenzy will not feel it.

But, tell me, Sancho, hast thou taken care of Mambrino's helmet, which I saw thee take up, after that ungrateful vagabond endeavoured in vain to break it in pieces: a circumstance that proves the excellency of its temper?" To this exclamation, Sancho replied, "'Fore God! Sir knight of the rueful countenance, I cannot suffer nor bear with patience, some things which your worship says; for, they make me imagine, that all you have mentioned about chivalry, and acquiring kingdoms and empires, and giving away islands, with other favours and presents, according to the practice of knights-errant, is nothing but puffs of falsehood, and the meer effect of piction or fiction, or what d' ye call it: for, who that hears your worship call a barber's bason the helmet of Mambrino, and sees you continue in that error so many days, but will believe, that he who affirms such nonsense, must be very much crazed in his understanding? The bason, which is all bruised and battered, I have put up in my bag, in order to be mended at home, and used for the service of my own beard, if ever, by the grace of  
God,

God, I come to see my wife and family again." "Heark ye, Sancho, said Don Quixote, by the same oath you swore, I swear again, that thou hast the most slender understanding that any squire in this world does, or ever did possess! is it possible, that after all thy travelling in my company, thou art not convinced that every thing belonging to knights-errant, appears chimerical, folly and distraction, being metamorphosed into the reverse of what it is, by the power of a tribe of enchanters who attend us, changing, converting and restoring each particular, according to their pleasure; and the inclination they have, to favour or annoy us: for which reason, what seems a barber's basin to thee, I can easily discern to be the helmet of Mambrino, and perhaps to a third, it will assume a quite different appearance; and I cannot but admire the providence of the sage who is my friend, in making that which is really and truly Mambrino's helmet, appear a basin to the rest of mankind, because it is of such inestimable value, that if it was known, the whole world would combine to ravish it from me; but, as it appears to them no more than a barber's basin, they never attempt to obtain it. This was plainly the case with the villain, who having endeavoured to break it in pieces, left it on the ground, when he went off; whereas, had he known what it was, in good faith, he would not have quitted it so easily. Keep it therefore with care, my friend, for, at present, there is no occasion for it; on the contrary, I shall strip off all my armour, and remain naked as I was born, in case I be inclined to imitate the penance of Roldan, rather than that of Amadis."

Conversing in this manner, they arrived at the foot of a high mountain, that stood alone, as if it had been cut out from the rest that surrounded it. A gentle rill murmured by the skirts of it, winding along a meadow so green and fertile, that it ravished the spectator's eye; while a number of forest-trees that grew around, together with some delicious herbs and flowers, conspired to make the place enchanting. This was the scene in which the knight of the rueful countenance chose to do penance; and therefore he no sooner perceived it, than he began to exclaim aloud, as if he had actually lost his senses; "This is the spot, ye heavens! which I choose and appoint my residence, while I bewail that misfortune to which you yourselves have reduced me. This is the place, where the tears from these eyes, will increase the waters of that little brook; and where my profound and uninterrupted sighs will incessantly move the leaves of these mountain-oaks, in witness and testimony of the pangs which my tormented heart endures. O ye rural deities, whosoever ye are, who take up your mansion in this uninhabited place, give ear to the complaints of an unhappy lover, whom a tedious absence and imaginary doubts have brought to lament among these craggy hills, and bemoan the cruel disposition of that ungrateful fair, who

is the end and perfection of all human beauty! O ye nymphs and dryads, who are wont to inhabit the hills and groves (so may no nimble and lascivious satyrs, by whom you are beloved, tho' loved in vain, disturb your sweet repose) help me to bewail my mishap; or at least disdain not to hear my moan! O Dulcinea del Toboso! Light of my darkness! Glory of my affliction! North-star of my inclinations! and planet of my fortune! as heaven shall pour upon you the blessings which you ask; consider the place and condition to which your absence hath exiled me, and put such a period to my woe, as my fidelity shall seem to deserve! O ye solitary trees, who henceforth are to bear me company in this retreat, convince me, by the gentle stirring of your boughs, that my presence gives you no disgust: and thou, my squire, the agreeable companion of my good and evil fortune, faithfully retain in thy remembrance, what thou shalt see me do, that thou mayest recount and rehearse every circumstance to the lovely cause of all my distraction!" So saying, he alighted, and taking off the bridle and saddle from Rozinante, gave him a slap on the buttocks, pronouncing these words: "He who is a slave himself, bestows freedom upon thee, O steed, as excellent in thy qualities as unlucky in thy fate! go wheresoever thou wilt; thou bearest engraven on thy forehead, that thou wast never equalled in swiftness, either by Astolpho's Hypogriff, or the renowned Frontino that cost Bradamante so dear."

Sancho, hearing this apostrophe, "My blessing, cried he, be upon him, whose industry now saves us the trouble of taking the halter from the head of Dapple\*, who, in good faith, should not want slaps on the buttocks, nor abundance of fine things said in his praise: but, if he was here, I would not consent to his being turned loose, there being no reason for so doing; for, he was never acquainted with love or despair, no more than I who was his master, while it pleased God I should be so: and truly, Sir knight of the rueful countenance, if this departure of mine, and distraction of your worship are really to take place, you had better saddle Rozinante again, to supply the want of Dapple; by which means a great deal of time will be saved in my going and coming; whereas, if I make the journey on foot, I know not when it will be performed; for, in short, I am a very sorry walker." "Be it so, then, Sancho, answered Don Quixote. I approve of thy proposal; and assure thee, that thou shalt set out in three days, during which I would have thee take notice of what I shall do for her sake, that you mayest be able to give her a full account of my behaviour." "What more can I see, said Sancho, than I have seen already?" "What will very much embellish your story, answered the knight; as yet, I have not torn my cloaths, scattered my armour, and dashed my head against the rocks, nor performed many other

\* Lo! Sancho's ass hath disappeared again!

things of this sort, which thou wilt behold with admiration." "For the love of God, Sir, cried Sancho, take care how you dash your head against the rocks; for, you may chance to meet with such an one as will at the first push put the finishing stroke to this whole scheme of penance; and I should think, that as knocks on the head are absolutely necessary to complete the work, your worship might content yourself, seeing the whole affair is a sham, a counterfeit and a joke; I say, your worship might content yourself with ramming your skull against water, or some soft thing, like a cotton bag; and leave it to my care to tell my lady, that your worship went to logger-heads with the point of a rock, a thousand times harder than adamant." "Friend Sancho, replied the knight, I am obliged to thee, for thy kind intention; but, thou must know, that what I do is not a sham, but a very serious matter; for, to behave otherwise were to transgress the orders of chivalry, which forbid us to lie, under pain of being degraded; and you know, that to substitute one thing instead of another, is downright telling a lie: wherefore, my knocks on the head must be real, hard and effectual, and not sophisticated or imaginary; and it will be necessary to leave me some lint for my wounds, since, it was the will of fate that we should lose the balsam."

"It was a much greater misfortune, said the squire, to lose the ass, and with him the lint and all; but I beseech your worship, not to talk of that accursed drench, the sole mention of which not only turns my stomach, but even my very soul; and I beseech you moreover, to suppose we have past those three days, which you have appointed for shewing me your mad pranks; for, I take them all for granted, and will tell wonders of them to my lady. Write the letter, therefore, and dispatch me forthwith; because, I am impatient till I return and deliver your worship, from that purgatory in which I leave you." "Purgatory call you it, Sancho? replied Don Quixote: it rather deserves the name of hell, or something worse, if worse can be." "I have heard, said the squire, that from hell there is no retention." "I know not, replied the knight, what you mean by retention:" "Retention, answered Sancho, signifies, that whosoever goeth to hell, neither will nor can come back again. The contrary of which shall happen to your worship, or my feet will misgive me, provided I carry spurs to quicken Rozinante: and set me once face to face before my lady Dulcinea, at Toboso, I will tell her such stories of the folly and madness, for they are both the same thing, which your worship hath committed, and will then be committing, that though I should find her harder than a cork-tree, I will make her as pliant as a glove, and with her sweet and honeyed answer, return through the air, like a witch, and deliver your worship from this purgatory that appears like hell, though it be not really

so, because there are some hopes of getting out of it; whereas those who are actually in hell can have no such expectation; and I dare say, your worship will not advance any thing to the contrary."

"That is all very true, said he of the rueful countenance; but, how shall we make shift to write this letter?" "Ay, and the bill for the colts;" added Sancho. "That shall be inserted in the letter, answered his master; and I think, as there is no paper to be had in this place, the best thing we can do, will be to write, in the manner of the ancients, on the leaf of a tree, or on waxen tables, though, I believe, those will be as difficult to be found as the paper. But, now, I remember what will do well and excellently well for our purpose: I will write it in the pocket book which belonged to Cardenio, and thou shalt take care to have it fairly transcribed in the first place where thou canst find a school-master or parish-clerk to copy it. But, by no means employ a scrivener, who may write it in such an unintelligible court-hand, that Satan himself could not understand it." "But what is to be done about the signing of it?" said Sancho. "Love-letters are never signed," replied Don Quixote. "True, resumed the squire, but all bills must be subscribed; and if this of yours, were to be copied, they would say the subscription was counterfeit, and I might go whistle for my colts." "The bill shall be subscribed with my own hand, in the pocket-book, which my niece shall no sooner see, than she will comply with the order, without any further objection: and with regard to the letter, instead of my subscription, thou shalt cause to be inserted, "Yours, till death, the knight of the rueful countenance." And though it be written by another hand, it is of small importance, because, now, I remember, Dulcinea can neither read nor write, nor ever set eyes on any writing or letter of mine; for, our mutual love has been altogether platonic, without extending farther than a modest glance; and even that so seldom, that I can safely swear, in twelve years, during which I have loved her more than the light of these eyes, which will one day be closed in dust, I have not seen her more than four times, and even in these four times, perhaps, she has not perceived me looking at her more than once. Such is the restraint and reserve, in which her father Lorenzo Corchuelo, and her mother Aldonza Nogales, have brought her up!"

"Ah, ha! cried Sancho, is the daughter of Lorenzo Corchuelo, whose other name is Aldonza Lorenzo, the same with the lady Dulcinea?" "Yes, answered the knight, and she deserves to be lady of the whole universe." "I know her perfectly well, said Sancho; and this will venture to say, in her behalf, that she will pitch the bar, as well as e'er a lusty young fellow in the village. Bless the sencer! she is a strapper, tall and hale wind and limb, and can lift out of the mire any squire or knight-errant, who shall choose



choose her for his sweet-heart. Ah! the whore's-chick! what a pair of lungs and voice she has got! I heard her one day, hollow from the belfrey to some young fellows of her acquaintance, who were at work in a corn-field of her father's; and, though it was at the distance of half a league, they heard her as plain as if they had been right under the steeple; and what is better still, she is not at all coy, but behaves herself civilly; and jokes, and romps, and plays the rogue with any body. Now, sir knight of the rueful countenance, I say that your worship not only has cause to run mad for her, but even to despair and hang yourself; and I am sure nobody that heard it, but would say you had done extremely well; even though the devil should run away with you: and truly, I wish I were now upon my way, meerly to see her; for, I have not beheld her these many days; and, surely, she must be greatly altered; for, the sun and weather does very much damage to the face of a woman, who is always at work in the field. To tell you the truth, sir Don Quixote, I have hitherto lived in great ignorance with respect to my lady Dulcinea, whom I verily believed to be some princess, that your worship was in love with; or a person of such rank as to deserve the rich presents you sent to her; namely, the Biscayan and galley-slaves, with many others whom you conquered in the course of your numberless victories, both before and since I have been your squire. But, when one considers the affair, what benefits can my lady Aldonza Lorenzo—I mean, my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, reap from your worship's sending, or having sent those, whom you overcome in battle, to fall upon their knees before her? especially, as they might chance to come, at a time, when she is busy, carding flax or threshing corn; in which case, they would be ashamed to see her, and she laugh or be out of humour at their arrival." "I have frequently observed, before now, Sancho, said Don Quixote, that thou art an everlasting babler, and, though of a shallow understanding, thy bluntness borders often on severity; but, to convince thee of thy own ignorance and my discretion, thou shalt give ear to a short story which I will relate.

Know then, that once upon a time, a certain handsome widow, young, free, wealthy, and, above all, good-humoured, fell in love with a thick, squat, brawny lay-brother, belonging to a neighbouring convent; the superior of which being informed of the affair, said to the widow, one day, by way of brotherly reproof, "I am amazed, madam, and not without cause, that a lady of your rank, beauty and fortune, should bestow your affection upon such a low, simple, clownish fellow; when there are so many masters, graduates, and divines in the convent, among whom your ladyship may choose, as one picks pears, saying, This I like, that I loath. The lady answered, with great freedom and vivacity, "Signor,

you are very much deceived, and very old-fashioned in your opinion, if you think I have made a bad choice in that fellow, who seems so simple: for, in that particular which I admire, he is as much of a philosopher, nay, more than Aristotle himself. In like manner, Sancho, Dulcinea del Toboso is as proper for my occasions as the highest princess upon earth. All the poets, who have celebrated ladies, under names which they invented at pleasure, had not really such mistresses as they describe. Dost thou imagine, that all the Amaryllises, Silvias, Phillises, Dianas, Galateas, Alidas, and other names so often met with, in romances, poems, barbers shops, and on the stage, actually belonged to ladies of flesh and blood, who were adored by those who sing, and have sung their praises? No surely; but, on the contrary, are, for the most part, feigned and adopted as the subjects of verse, that the poets may be thought men of amorous and gallant dispositions. Wherefore, let it suffice, that I imagine and believe the worthy Aldonza Lorenzo, to be beautiful and modest: and, as to her pedigree, it is a matter of small importance; there is no necessity for taking informations on that head, as if she were to be invested with some order of knighthood, and I take it for granted, that she is the noblest princess in the universe; for, thou must know, Sancho, if it be a thing of which thou art ignorant, that the two qualities, which above all others, inspire love, are beauty and reputation: and these two is Dulcinea in consummate possession of; for, in beauty, she excels all women, and is equalled by very few, in point of reputation. And, to conclude, I imagine that all I have said is true without exaggeration or diminution. I paint her in my fancy, according to my wish, as well in beauty as in rank; unexcelled by Helen, unrivalled by Lucretia, or any other heroine of ages past, whether Grecian, Roman or Barbarian; and let people say what they will, if I am blamed by the ignorant, I shall be acquitted by the most rigid of those who are proper judges of the case." "I say, answered Sancho, that your worship is very much in the right, and I am no better than an ass: but I know not why I should mention the word ass; for, one ought not to talk of halts in the house of a man who was hanged. But give me the letter, and farewell 'till I return."

Don Quixote pulled out the memorandum-book, and, stepping aside, with great composure, began to write the letter, which when he had finished, he called to Sancho, saying, he wanted to read it to him, that he might retain it in his memory, in case he should lose it by the way; for, every thing was to be feared from his evil fortune. "Your worship, answered Sancho, may write it down, two or three times in the book, and I will take special care to convey it safely; but, it is folly to suppose, that I can retain it in my memory, which is so bad, that I have many a time  
forgot

forgot my own name ; but, notwithstanding, pray, Sir, read it to me ; I shall be hugely rejoiced to hear it ; for, it must certainly be curiously penned." " Listen then, and I will read it," said Don Quixote, who began as follows.

Don Quixote's letter to Dulcinea del Toboso.

Sovereign and sublime princeſs,

**H**E who is wounded by the edge of abſence, and whoſe heart is ſtuck full of the darts of affliction, moſt divine Dulcinea del Toboſo ! wiſhes thee that health which he is not doomed to enjoy. If I am ſcorned by thy beauty, if thy virtue affords me no relief, if thy diſdain completes my miſfortune ; albeit, I am inured to ſuffering, I can ill ſupport the miſery I bear, which hath not only been exceſſive, but alſo of long duration. My truſty ſquire Sancho will give thee an ample relation, O ungrateful beauty and lovely foe ! of the ſituation in which I remain on thy account : if it be thy will to ſuccour me, I am thy ſlave ; if not, uſe thy pleaſure ; for, the end of my life will ſatisfy thy cruelty and my deſire. Thine till death,

The Knight of the rueful countenance.

" By my father's ſoul ! cried Sancho, this is the higheſt thing I ever heard. Odds-niggers ! how your worſhip writes whatſoever you pleaſe, and how curiouſly you conclude, ' The knight of the rueful countenance.' I verily believe your worſhip is the devil himſelf, and knows every thing." " All that knowledge, replied the knight, is neceſſary for the employment I profeſs." " Why then, ſaid the ſquire, be ſo good as to write on the other leaf, the order for the three colts, and be ſure to ſubſcribe diſtinctly, that when it is preſented, your hand-writing may be known." " With all my heart," ſaid Don Quixote, who, having written the order, read it aloud in theſe terms.

Dear Niece,

**P**LEASE deliver to Sancho Panza, my ſquire, or order, at ſight of this my firſt bill of colts, three of the five, which I left at home in your cuſtody : which three colts I order you to pay, in return for the like number received of him : and this bill, together with his receipt, ſhall be a ſufficient acquittance to you.

Given in the heart of the brown mountain, the twentieth and ſecond of Auguſt, this preſent year.

Sancho liked the form, and desired his master to sign it. "There is no occasion for my signing it, said Don Quixote, with any thing but my cypher, which is sufficient not only for three, but three hundred asses." "As to that, I will take your worship's word; and now give me leave to go and saddle Rozinante, which when I have done, and received your blessing, I intend forthwith to depart, without staying to see you play any foolish tricks, though I will affirm, I have beheld you perform many more than I wished to see." "At least, Sancho, said the knight, I would have thee, because there is a necessity for it, stay and see me stript, and perform a dozen or two of mad pranks, which I can easily finish in half an hour; for, when thine eyes shall have been witnesses of some things I will act, thou mayst safely swear to what additions thou shalt make in thy report; and I assure thee, thou wilt not relate the half of what I intend to achieve." "For the love of God! dear Sir, cried Sancho, let me not see your worship naked: for, it will give me so much uneasiness, that I shall not be able to refrain from weeping; and, my head aches already, with the sorrow I felt last night, about Dapple; so, that I cannot bear to be set a mourning again: wherefore, if it be your worship's pleasure, that I should see some of your mad actions, pray dispatch them in your cloaths; and let them be such as will stand you in most stead: for my own part, I think there is no occasion for any such thing; and if you dispense with them, it will save time, and send me back the sooner with such news as your worship desires and deserves. For, if my lady Dulcinea is not prepared to send a reasonable answer, I solemnly protest, I will extract a favourable reply out of her maw, by kicking and cuffing. What! is it to be born that such a renowned knight-errant as your worship, should run mad without why or wherefore, on account of a—I would not have her ladyship compel me to speak, or, egad, I shall blab things by the dozen, even tho' they should spoil the market. I am a rare fellow at that sport. I find she knows little of my temper, otherwise, i'faith! she would take care to give me no offence." "In good faith! Sancho, said Don Quixote, thou seemest to be as mad as myself." "Not quite so mad, replied the squire, but a little more choleric; but, enough of that. What eatables has your worship got to live upon till my return? will you go to the high-road, and rob the shepherds, like Cardenio?" "Let not that give thee any concern, answered the knight; though I had store of provisions by me, I should eat nothing but the herbs and fruits which this meadow and these trees afford: the perfection of my design consisting in abstaining from food, and in encountering other hardships." "Your worship must know, said Sancho, that I am afraid I shall not find my way back again, to this concealed and unfrequented place, in which I leave your worship." "Take  
good

good notice of the marks, answered the knight, and I shall endeavour to remain always near this very spot: nay, I will take care to ascend the highest rocks hereabouts, that I may have a chance of descrying thee afar off, in thy return. But, the best scheme for preventing thy being bewildered, will be, to cut down some of the furze that grows here in great plenty, and drop bunches of it, at small distances on the way, until thou shalt reach the flat country: and they will serve as land marks to guide thee hither in thy return, like the clue of Theseus, in the labyrinth of Crete."

"I will take your advice, said Sancho;" who accordingly cutting a large bundle, begged his master's blessing, and took his leave, not without many tears on both sides. Then mounting Rozinante, whom Don Quixote strongly recommended to his care, commanding him to pay as much regard to the steed as he would shew for his own person; he set out for the plain, scattering, by the way, the furze he had cut, according to the direction of his master. In this manner, then, did he begin his journey, notwithstanding the incessant importunities of Don Quixote, who solicited him to stay and see some of his extravagancies: but, he had not travelled above an hundred yards, when he returned, saying, "I confess your worship was in the right, when you observed, that, in order to my swearing with a safe conscience that I have seen you perform mad pranks, it would be necessary for you to play some in my presence; although, in my opinion, I have seen a pretty good sample already in your staying here by yourself." "Did not I tell thee so, Sancho? said Don Quixote: wait a little, and I will finish them in a twinkling." So saying, he stript off his breeches in a great hurry, leaving his posteriors covered by the tail of his shirt alone, and without further ceremony, cut a couple of capers, and a like number of tumbles, with his head down and his heels up, disclosing particulars, which shocked the modesty of Sancho so much, that, in order to avoid the sight of them, a second time, he turned Rozinante, fully satisfied and pleased, that he might now honestly swear he had left his master distracted. We will, therefore, let him pursue his journey, till his return, which was more speedy than could be expected.

## C H A P. XII.

A continuation of the refinements in love, practised by Don Quixote, in the brown mountain.

**B**UT, to return to the account of what the knight of the rueful countenance executed when he found himself alone: the history relates, that, having performed the capers and the tumbles, naked, from the waist downward, and perceived that Sancho was gone, without waiting to see more of his extravagancies, he climbed to the top of a high rock, and there revolved what he had often reflected upon, without coming to any conclusion; namely, whether it was better and more for his purpose, to imitate Orlando in his outrageous, or Amadis in his melancholy madness. "It is not to be wondred at, said he within himself, if Orlando was such a stout and valiant knight as he is represented; for, he was actually enchanted, and invulnerable by every weapon but the point of a pin, thrust into his foot, upon which, he always wore a shoe with seven soles of iron: though that precaution did not avail him, against Bernardo del Carpio, who being informed of the contrivance, strangled him in his arms at the battle of Roncevalles: but, the circumstance of his valour apart, let us consider that of his losing his senses, which actually happened, when he found the tokens in the fountain, and received the information of the shepherd, by which he learned that Angelica had slept more than two afternoons with Medoro, the little Moor, with curled locks, who was Agramante's page; and truly, if he was convinced in his own mind, that his mistress had misbehaved in that manner, it was no great feat to run mad upon the discovery. But, why should I imitate him in his madness, when the occasion is not similar; for, my Dulcinea del Toboso, I dare swear, never in all the days of her life, beheld one Moor in his own likeness; and is this day, as much a virgin as the mother that bore her; I should therefore, do her a manifest injury, in imagining otherwise, and adopting that kind of madness which possessed Orlando Furioso. On the other hand, I am sensible that Amadis de Gaul, without losing his senses, or acting the madman, acquired as much, or more, fame than he, in the character of a lover; for, according to the history, all that he did, when he found himself in disgrace with his mistress Oriana, who banished him from her presence during pleasure, was to retire, in company of a hermit, to the poor rock, where he contented himself with bemoaning his misfortune, until heaven sent him succour, in the midst of his great necessity and affliction. If this circumstance, therefore, be true, as I know it is, why should I now take the trouble of stripping myself naked, or give umbrage  
to

to these trees, which have done me no harm ! or what reason have I to defile the pure stream of these rivulets, which, when I want it, will yield me pleasant drink ! Flourish then the memory of Amadis ! and let him be imitated as much as possible, by Don Quixote de la Mancha, of whom may be said, that which is \* recorded of another ; ‘ If he did not atchieve great things, at least, he died in attempting them.’ And, though I am not banished nor disdained by my Dulcinea, let it suffice, as I have already said, that I am absent from her. Come then, let us begin : recur to my remembrance, ye feats of Amadis, and initiate me in the imitation of your fame : I know his chief exercise was prayer, and in that too, will I follow his example.” So saying, he composed a rosary of the large galls of a cork-tree, which he strung together, instead of beads ; but, he found an unfurmoutable difficulty, in the want of an hermit to confess and console him : wherefore, he entertained himself in strolling about the meadow, writing and engraving verses on the barks of trees, and the smooth sand : all of them on the subject of his own melancholy, or in praise of his mistress Dulcinea : but, after he was found in this place, none, except the following, remained intelligible and entire.

## I.

YE trees and herbs, so green and tall,  
That shade this meadow, and adorn,  
If you rejoice not at my thrall,  
Give ear unto a wretch forlorn ;  
Nor, let my grief, though loud invade  
Your peace ; but, by Don Quixote, be a  
Self-offer'd tax of sorrow, paid  
In absence of his Dulcinea  
del Toboso.

## II.

These are the rocks, to which he's driven  
By her who seems not much to care for  
The truest lover under heaven :  
And yet he knows not why nor wherefore.  
By love toss'd like a tennis-ball,  
A cask of tears, will not defray a  
Whole day's expence of grief and gall,  
In absence of his Dulcinea  
del Toboso.

\* Probably alluding to the epitaph of Phaeton.

Hic situs est Phaethon, currus auriga paterni,  
Quem si non tenuit, magnis tamen excidit ausis.

## III.

Among these craggy rocks and brambles,

He hangs, alas! on sorrow's tenters;

Or curses, as alone he rambles,

The cruel cause of his misventures.

Unpitying love, about his ears,

With scourge severe began to play a

Most dreadful game that made his tears

Flow for his absent Dulcinea

del Toboso.

These verses, with the addition of del Toboso, to the name of Dulcinea, afforded infinite diversion to those who found them: for, they concluded Don Quixote had imagined, that, if he named her without this title, the stanza could not possibly be understood; and this was really the case, as he afterwards owned. Many other ditties did he compose; but, as we have already observed, none but these three stanzas could be decyphered and read. In this amusement, in fishing, invoking the fawns and filvans of those woods, the nymphs of the brooks, with the damp and doleful echo to hear, console and refund his complaints; and, in culling plants to sustain nature, he employed himself till the return of Sancho, who, had he stayed three weeks, instead of three days, the knight of the rueful countenance would have been so emaciated and disfigured, that he could not have been known by the mother who bore him.

However, it will not be amiss to leave him, engrossed by his sighs and poetry; in order to recount what happened to Sancho Panza, in the execution of his embassy. Having reached the highway, this trusty messenger took the road to Toboso, and next day arrived at the very inn where he had met with the disgraceful adventure of the blanketting. He no sooner perceived the unlucky house, than he fancied himself cutting capers in the air again; and was very loath to enter, although it was then dinner-time, and he was very much instigated by the desire of tasting something hot, as he had lived for a great many days past on cold victuals only. This inclination compelled him to ride close up to the inn, where, while he was sitting in suspense, and hesitating whether or not he should enter, two persons happened to come to the door, and knowing him immediately, the one said to the other, "Pray, Mr. licentiate, is not that man on horseback, our neighbour Sancho Panza, who, as the house-keeper told us, went out with our adventurer, in quality of squire?" "The very same, answered the licentiate, and that is the individual horse of our friend Don Quixote." And no wonder they should know him so easily; for,



for, they were no other than the curate and barber of the knight's town, by whom the scrutiny and trial of his books were held. Having therefore, recognized Sancho Panza and Rozinante, and being impatient to hear news of Don Quixote, they ran up to the squire, and the curate called him by name, saying, "Friend Sancho, where is your master?" Sancho, who recollected them also, resolved to conceal the place and condition in which he had left his master; and therefore, answered, that the knight was in a certain place, employed about a certain affair of the utmost importance, which he durst not disclose to ears of flesh and blood." "That pretence will not do, Sancho, said the barber; if you refuse to tell where he is, we shall imagine, as indeed we do, that you have robbed and murdered him, and taken possession of his horse; so, that in good sooth, you must either produce him, or in this very spot, we will—" "You have no occasion, cried Sancho interrupting him, to threaten people in this manner; I am not the man to rob or murder any person: every man must fall by his own fortune, or by the will of God that created him: my master is sound and safe, doing penance in the midst of that mountain, to his heart's content." He then, without pausing, in a breath, informed him of the condition in which he left him, recounted all the adventures which had happened to him, and told them of the letter he was carrying to my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, who was no other than Lorenzo Corchuelo's daughter, with whom his master was up to the ears in love.

They were astonished at what the squire related, and tho' well acquainted with the particular species of Don Quixote's madness, this instance afforded fresh admiration: they desired Sancho to shew them the letter for the lady Dulcinea del Toboso; and he told them it was only a rough draught, written on the leaf of a pocket-book; and that his master had ordered him to get it transcribed on a sheet of paper, with the first convenient opportunity. The curate promised to transcribe it in a fair legible hand, and again desiring a sight of it, Sancho put his hand in his bosom, in search of the book, which, however, he could not find; and indeed, had he fumbled till this time, it would have been to no purpose: for, he had left it with Don Quixote, who had forgot to give, as he, to ask it of him, before he set out. Sancho missing his charge, grew pale as death, and searching again his whole body with great eagerness, could find nothing; upon which, without more ado, he laid hold of his beard with both hands, and plucked one half of it from his chin; then, with vast dispatch and precipitation, belaboured his face and nose in such a manner, as left the whole covered with blood. The curate and barber seeing him make so free with his own person, asked what had happened to him, that made him handle himself so roughly? "What has happened to me?" cried the squire. "I have lost and let slip thro' my fingers, in an instant, three as's colts, each of which was as tall as a tower." "By what

means?" resumed the barber. "I have lost, answered Sancho, the pocket-book, in which was written the letter for Dulcinea, together with an order signed by my master's own hand, desiring his niece to deliver to me, three colts out of four or five which he has at home." At the same time, he told them how he had lost Dapple. The curate comforted him, by saying, that when he returned, his master would renew the order, and give him a bill upon paper, as the custom is, for, those written in pocket-books are never accepted or paid.

With this assurance, Sancho consoled himself, observing, since that was the case, he should not give himself much uneasiness about the loss of the letter, which, as he retained it by heart, he could cause to be transcribed where and when he pleased. The barber desired him to repeat it, telling him they would transcribe it; upon which, Sancho began to scratch his head, in order to recollect it, standing sometimes on one foot, sometimes on the other. One while, he fixed his eyes upon the ground, then lifted them up to heaven; at last, after a most tedious pause, during which he gnawed off the half of one of his nails, and kept his hearers in the most impatient suspense; "Fore God! Mr. Licentiate, said he, I believe the devil has run away with every word that I remembered of this letter: tho' I am positive it began with 'subterrene and sublime princess!' "It could not be subterrene, said the barber, but superterrene or sovereign." "You are in the right, resumed Sancho: then, if my memory does not fail me, it went on with 'the smitten, the sleepless and the sore, kisses your hands, most ungrateful and unregarded beauty:' and something or other of health and distemper which he wished her; running on at this rate, till he concluded with, Yours, till death, the knight of the rueful countenance."

The hearers were not a little diverted with this specimen of Sancho's memory, which they applauded very much; desiring him to repeat the letter again, twice over, that they might retain it, until they could have an opportunity of transcribing it. He accordingly renewed his efforts, and was guilty of as many blunders as before: he likewise gave them an account of every thing which had befallen his master; but mentioned not a syllable of the blanketting that had happened to himself, in that very inn which he refused to enter: nay, he gave them to understand, that his master, as soon as he could bring him a favourable dispatch from my lady Dulcinea del Tobofo, would put himself in the way of becoming an emperor or monarch at least, according to the plan settled between them. This he represented as a very easy matter; considering the valour of his person, and strength of his arm: and told them, that this design would be no sooner accomplished, than the knight would bestow upon him in marriage, (for by that time, he must  
of

of necessity be a widower) one of the maids of honour to the empress; a fine young lady, and heiress of a vast and wealthy estate upon the main land, without any oilands or islands, which he did not much care for.

Sancho uttered this piece of wrong-headed information with such composure, wiping his nose from time to time, that his townsmen could not help admiring anew the madness of Don Quixote, which, like a whirlpool, had sucked in and swept along with it, the understanding of this poor simpleton. They did not chuse to fatigue themselves with endeavours to convince him of his error, but, as they believed it was not prejudicial to his conscience, resolved, for their amusement, to encourage him in his folly: with this view, they advised him to pray to God, for long life and health to his master; and observed, that it was a thing both likely and feasible, that he should, in process of time, become an emperor, at least, an archbishop, or attain some station of equal dignity. To this encouragement, Sancho replied, "Gentlemen, if fortune should bring matters about, so as that my master should incline to be an archbishop rather than an emperor, I should be glad to know what archbishops-errant bestow upon their squires." The curate told him, that they commonly gave them some simple benefice, curacy, or the office of sacristan, with a good yearly income, besides the fees of the altar, which are usually reckoned at as much more. "In order to fill an employment of that kind, answered Sancho, the squire must be unmarried, and at least capable of assisting at mass; and if that be the case, what will become of me, who have not only the misfortune to be married, but am also ignorant of the first letter of the A, B, C; should my master take it in his head to be an archbishop, rather than an emperor, according to the custom of knights-errant?" "Don't make yourself uneasy about that matter, friend Sancho, said the barber; for, we will intreat and advise your master, nay, even make it an affair of conscience, for him to become an emperor rather than an archbishop, as a station more suited to his disposition, which is more warlike than studious." "I was of the same opinion, resumed Sancho, but, now, I'll venture to say, he has a capacity for every thing: and what I intend to do, is to beseech him to chuse that station which will be most for his own honour and my advantage." "You speak like a sensible man, said the curate; and in so doing, will act the part of a good christian: but, our present business is to think on some means of putting an end to this useless penance your master has imposed upon himself; and in the mean time, go into dinner." Sancho desired them to enter, saying he would wait for them at the door, and afterwards tell them why he did not go in, and wherefore it was not proper for him so to do: but, begged they would be so good as to bring out something hot for himself, and some barley for Rozinante. They accordingly went in, and in a

little time, the barber brought him out, a mess of hot victuals. After they had both maturely deliberated about the means of accomplishing their design, the curate fell upon a scheme, extremely well adapted to the taste of the knight, as well as to their purpose. He proposed to cloath himself in the dress of a lady-errant, and that the barber should disguise himself as well as he could, in the likeness of a squire; which being done, they should go to the place where Don Quixote was, and the priest, on pretence of being a damsel in distress, should beg a boon, which he, as a valiant knight-errant, could not help granting: this boon should be a request, that he would accompany her to a certain place whither she would conduct him, there to redress an injury she had received from a discourteous knight; and the boon should be attended with a humble supplication, that he would not desire her to take off her mask, nor ask any question about her affairs, until he should have done her justice upon her adversary. And as he firmly believed that Don Quixote would comply with any request made in that stile, he hoped by these means, to withdraw him from the mountain, and conduct him to his own habitation, where they would endeavour to find some remedy for his strange disorder.

## C H A P. XIII.

How the curate and barber set out on the execution of their plan; with other events worthy to be recorded in this sublime history.

**T**HIS scheme of the curate was so well relished by the barber, that they began to put it in execution immediately; by borrowing of the landlady a petticoat and tucker, for which the priest left a new cassock in pawn: while the barber made an artificial beard of the tail of a pyed ox, in which the innkeeper used to stick his comb. When the hostess asked what occasion they had for these things, the curate gave her a brief account of Don Quixote's madness, and explained the use to which they intended to put the disguise, in order to disengage him from the mountain where he then was. The innkeeper and his wife immediately discovered that this lunatic was no other than their quondam guest, who was author of the balsam, and master of the blanketed squire; and recounted to the curate, every thing that had happened, not even forgetting the circumstance which Sancho was at such pains to conceal. In short, the landlady dressed up the curate in a most curious manner: she put upon him a cloth petticoat flounced and furbelowed, with a broad border of black velvet; and a close jerkin of green velvet, garnished with robings of white fatten, which seemed to have been  
made

made in the reign of king Bamba\* : he would not suffer himself to be coifed, but covered his head with a quilted linnen night-cap, which he always carried about with him ; and bound his forehead with a garter of black taffety, making a sort of a mask with the other, which effectually concealed his countenance and beard. Over all, he flapped his beaver, which was so broad, that it might have served for an umbrella ; and wrapping himself up in his cloak, mounted his mule, sitting sideways like a woman : while the barber besfrid his own beast, with his beard flowing down to his girdle, of a white and red colour, being made, as we before observed, of a pyed ox's tail.

Thus equipped, they took leave of every body present, even the kind Martornes, who promised, tho' a sinner, to mumble a whole rosary over, in prayers to God, for the good success of that arduous and christian design they had undertaken : but, scarce had they sallied from the inn, when the curate began to think he was to blame for disguising himself ; it being in his opinion, indecent for a priest to appear in such a maner, how much soever depended upon their success. He therefore proposed, that he should exchange characters with the barber, who might act the part of the damsel in distress, while he took that of the squire, which he thought, did not so much profane the dignity of the cloth : and unless his neighbour would agree to this proposal, he assured him, that he was resolved to go no farther, even if the devil himself should carry off Don Quixote. At that instant, Sancho chanced to come up, and seeing them in such a garb, could not refrain from laughing : in short, the barber assented to every thing the other proposed, and the plan being thus altered, the curate began to instruct him touching his behaviour and speech to Don Quixote, in order to move and induce him to accompany them, and quit that place he had chosen for the scene of his vain and extravagant penance. The barber told him, that without his lessons, he knew very well how to demean himself in the character ; and as he did not chuse to put on the dress till they should be near Don Quixote, he folded it up with great care ; the priest adjusted his beard, and both together proceeded on their journey, under the direction of Sancho Panza, who, by the way, related to them what happened between his master and the madman, whom they met with in the brown mountain ; concealing nevertheless, the circumstance of the portmanteau, and its contents ; for, notwithstanding his simplicity, our youth was as covetous as wiser people.

Next day, they came to the broom boughs, which Sancho had strewed, in order to ascertain the place where he had left his master ; he no sooner

\* Bamba or Wamba, king of the Visigoths in Spain, mounted the throne in the year 672, and was famous for his success against the Arabians, as well as for his attachment to the christian religion, as a proof of which he retired into a monastery, and resigned the kingdom to Ervige.

therefore

therefore perceived his marks, than he told them that was the entrance into the mountain, and desired them to put on their dresses, if they were necessary towards the deliverance of his master: for, they had already assured him, that their travelling in such disguise, was of the utmost importance, in disengaging the knight from that disagreeable course of life he had chosen: and they had charged him, not to tell his master, that he knew who they were; and if he should ask, as doubtless he would, whether or not he had delivered the letter to Dulcinea, they advised him to answer in the affirmative, and tell him, that as she could not read it, she had sent her answer by word of mouth, commanding him, on pain of her displeasure, to appear in her presence, with all convenient speed, on an affair that was of the utmost consequence to him: for, with this answer, and other speeches they intended to make, they did not at all doubt of reconciling him to a better way of life, and prevail upon him, immediately to begin his career towards being an emperor or king; and as to the office of archbishop, Sancho had nothing to fear. The squire listened to these directions, which he carefully deposited in his memory, thanking them heartily for their intention to advise his master to accept of an emperor's crown, rather than an archbishop's mitre, as he was very sensible that emperors could do more for their squires than archbishops-errant. He also proposed to go before, in search of his master, and impart to him this answer of his lady, which, he assured them, would be sufficient to bring him out of the mountain, without their being put to any further trouble. They approved of his opinion, and resolved to stay where they were until he should return with the news of having found Don Quixote: accordingly, Sancho proceeded towards the heart of the mountain, leaving them in a spot watered by a small purling brook, and shaded in a most cool and agreeable manner, by some rocks, and trees that grew around it.

It being then the month of August, when the heat in those parts is excessive, and three in the afternoon, which is the hottest time of the day, they were the more charmed with the situation, which was so inviting, that they chose it for the place of their residence, until Sancho should return. While they lay at their ease, under the covert of this shade, their ears were saluted with the sound of a voice, which, tho' unaccompanied by any instrument, sung so sweet and melodiously, that they were struck with astonishment; little expecting to meet with such a delicious warbler in that unfrequented place: for, tho' it is usually said, that the woods and mountains abound with shepherds, who sing most enchantingly, that report is rather the fiction of poets than the voice of truth: besides, the verses which they heard, were not composed in the rustic phrase of clowns, but, in a polite and courtly strain; as may be perceived by the song itself, which follows:

## I.

Ah! what inspires my woeful strain?  
 Unkind disdain!  
 Ah! what augments my misery?  
 Fell jealousy!  
 Or, say, what hath my patience worn?  
 An absent lover's scorn!

The torments then that I endure,  
 No mortal remedy can cure:  
 For every languid hope is slain  
 By absence, jealousy, disdain!

## II.

From love, my unrelenting foe,  
 These sorrows flow!  
 My infant glory's overthrown,  
 By fortune's frown;  
 Confirmed in this my wretched state,  
 By the decrees of fate.  
 In death alone, I hope release  
 From this compounded, dire disease;  
 Whose cruel pangs to aggravate,  
 Fortune and love conspire with fate!

## III.

Ah! what will mitigate my doom?  
 The silent tomb!  
 Ah! what retrieve departed joy?  
 Inconstancy!  
 Or say, can ought but frenzy, bear  
 This tempest of despair?  
 All other efforts, then, are vain,  
 To cure this soul-tormenting pain,  
 That owns no other remedy  
 Than madness, death, inconstancy.

The hour, the season, and the solitude, conspired with the agreeable voice of the singer, to increase the wonder and satisfaction of the hearers, who listened for some time, in expectation of something else: but, the silence having continued a good while, they resolved to go in quest of the person who sung so enchantingly: and were just going to set out on this design, when they were arrested by the same voice, which again saluted their ears with this other song:

## I.

O sacred friendship! mild and gay,  
 Who to the regions of the blest  
 Hath soar'd; and left mankind a prey  
 To fraud, in thy resemblance drest.

## II.

Auspicious, hear, and hither send  
 Thy sister truth, with radiant eyes,  
 To brand the false professing friend,  
 Detected in the fair disguise.

## III.

Or, come thyself, and reinspire  
 The purpose candid and humane;  
 Else peace and order will retire,  
 While horror and confusion reign.

This sonnet was concluded with a most profound sigh, and the curate and barber began again to listen for more; but, finding the music converted into mournful sobs and interjections, they were determined to know who this melancholy person was, who sung so well, and groaned so piteously. They had not gone many paces with this intent, when turning the point of a rock, they perceived a man of the same make and appearance that Sancho described, when he related the story of Cardenio: he did not seem surpris'd at sight of them, but, stood with his head reclining upon his breast, in a very pensive posture, without lifting his eyes to look at them, after their first sudden appearance. The curate, who was a well-spoken man, concluding from the description, that this must be he whose misfortune he had been apprised of, went up, and in a short but pathetic address, exhorted and intreated him to quit that miserable course of life, which was the greatest of all misfortunes, and altogether perverted the end of his being. Cardenio, being at that time in one of his lucid intervals, intirely free of that frantic paroxysm which used so utterly to deprive him of his senses, and seeing two people so differently dressed from those he commonly met with in that solitude, could not help being somewhat surpris'd; especially, when he heard him talk of his misfortune as a circumstance with which they were well acquainted; for, the curate had mentioned it in the course of his expostulation: and therefore he answered in this manner, " I plainly perceive, gentlemen, that heaven, which is careful in succouring the good, and sometimes, even the bad, hath sent, tho' I little deserve such favour and condescension, diverse people into this unfrequented solitude, so

remote



remote from all commerce and society; in order to convince me by just and various arguments, how unreasonably I act in leading this kind of life, which they have endeavoured to make me exchange for a better; and, as they know not the reasons I have, to think that, in quitting this situation, I shall be plunged into a worse; they have perhaps looked upon me as a person of very shallow understanding, or, which is still a conjecture more unfavourable, a downright madman; and truly, it is not to be wondered at, if they entertain that opinion, for, I can easily conceive, that my misfortunes operate so intensely upon my imagination, and impair my faculties so much, that sometimes, in spite of all my endeavours to the contrary, I become like that rock, void of all sentiment and knowledge; and am convinced of my infirmity too late, when people shew me the marks of what I have done, while I was under the influence of that terrible transport: then all that I can do, is to bewail my distemper, curse my lot in vain, and in excuse of my madness, relate my sufferings to all who express the least desire of hearing them; that those of sounder judgment, knowing the cause, may not wonder at the effects; and if they cannot prevent, at least pardon my frenzy; converting their indignation at my extravagance, into compassion for my woes: and if you, gentlemen, are come with that intention which hath brought others to this place, before you proceed with your prudent admonitions, I intreat you to hear the detail of my misfortunes, which you do not yet know, and then, perhaps, you will save yourselves the trouble which you might otherwise take, in consoling an affliction that admits of no consolation."

The two friends, who desired nothing else, than to hear from his own mouth, the cause of his misfortune, earnestly begged he would recount it, and promised to attempt nothing contrary to his own inclination, in the way of remedy or comfort. Thus assured, the melancholy gentleman began his distressful story, nearly in the same words and circumstances which he had used a few days before, to Don Quixote and the goatherd, when he was interrupted, in the affair of Mr. Elisabat, by the knight's punctuality in asserting the decorum of chivalry, as the particulars of that quarrel have been already related: but, now he remained fortunately free from his paroxysm, and, of consequence, had time to finish the narration which was imperfect before. When he therefore came to the circumstance of the letter which Don Fernando had found between the leaves of Amadis de Gaul, he said he remembered the contents, and accordingly repeated them in these terms:

## Lucinda to Cardenio.

“ **I** Every day discover new qualities in Cardenio, which oblige and compel me to esteem him the more. If you are inclined to extricate me out of all suspense, you may effectuate your purpose, without the least prejudice to my honour ; for, my father, who is well acquainted with your virtues, loves me dearly, and far from tyrannizing over my affections, will cheerfully grant that which is so justly your due, if your passion is such as I wish and believe it to be.”

I resolved, as I have already told you, to demand Lucinda in marriage, upon the receipt of this letter, which not only confirmed Don Fernando's high opinion of her prudence and virtue, but also inflamed him with the desire of ruining my hopes, before I should be able to bring them to maturity. I told this faithless friend, Lucinda's father expected that mine should propose the match ; and that I durst not communicate my desire to him, lest he should refuse to comply with it : not, that he was ignorant of Lucinda's rank, virtue, beauty and qualifications, which were sufficient to ennoble any other family in Spain ; but, because I understood he was averse to my being married, until he should see what duke Ricardo would do in my behalf : in short, I told him that I would not venture to propose it, being afraid not only of this ill consequence, but also of many others which I could not foresee ; although I had a strong impression upon my mind, that my wishes would never be completed. In answer to this declaration, Don Fernando undertook to manage the affair, and prevail upon my father to propose the match to Lucinda's parents. O villain ! more ambitious than Marius, more cruel than Cataline, more savage than Sylla, more fraudulent than Galalon, more treacherous than \*Vellido, more vengeful than Julian, and more covetous than Judas ! cruel, false, vindictive traitor ! what injuries had'st thou suffered from this poor credulous wretch, who with such confidence disclosed to thee, the most secret recesses of his soul ! what offence had he given ? what words had he uttered, or what advice had he offered, that did not directly tend to thy honour and advantage ? But, unhappy that I am ! wherefore should I complain ? seeing it is a thing certain, that when once the tide of misfortune heaped up by one's malignant stars, begins to descend with violence and fury, no earthly mound can oppose, nor human industry divert its course. Who could imagine, that such an illustrious, accomplished, young gentleman as Don Fernando, who lay under obligations for the services I had

\* Who murdered Sancho I. king of Castile, while he was engaged in the siege of Zamora.

done him, and was powerful enough to obtain the gratification of his wish, whithersoever his amorous inclination pointed, should plague himself, as I may say, in attempts to rob me of my single lamb, even before I had possessed it.

But, let us lay aside these vain and unprofitable reflections, and rejoin the broken thread of my unfortunate story. Well then: Don Fernando perceiving that my presence would be an obstruction to the execution of his false and perfidious design, resolved to send me back to his elder brother, on pretence of getting money to pay for six horses, which he purposely bought that very day he undertook to speak to my father; in order to have an excuse for sending me away, that he might, in my absence, the more easily succeed in his villanous intention. Was it possible for me to prevent this treachery, or indeed conceive his design! no, surely. On the contrary, I offered, with the utmost alacrity, to set out forthwith, so pleased was I with the purchase he had made. That very night I had a private conversation with Lucinda, in which I told her the scheme I had concerted with Don Fernando, and bade her rest assured in the hope that our just and honourable desires would soon be gratified. She, as little suspicious of Don Fernando's perfidy as I was, intreated me to return with speed, believing that our wishes would be completed, as soon as my father should mention the affair to her's. I don't know upon what account, her eyes were filled with tears, when she pronounced these words; and something that seemed to swell in her throat, prevented her from uttering another syllable, though she looked as if she had something more to say. I was confounded at this new circumstance, which had never happened before: in all our former conversations, which my good fortune offered, or my diligence effected, there had been nothing but joy and satisfaction, without any mixture of tears, sighs, jealousy, dread or suspicion; all my discourse used to consist of acknowledgments to heaven, for having bestowed upon me such a mistress, whose beauty I extolled, and whose virtue and good sense I admired: while she returned the compliment, by praising those qualities in me, which she, in the partiality of her fondness, deemed worthy of applause: besides, we used to entertain each other with an account of a thousand trifling accidents that happened among our neighbours and acquaintance: and the height of my vivacity never amounted to more than the seizing of one of her delicate, white hands, and pressing it to my lips, through the narrow distance betwixt the rails that divided us. But, on that night, which preceded the fatal day of my departure, she wept, sighed and sobbed, and left me filled with confusion and surprize, and terrified at such unusual and melancholy marks of grief and affliction, in my Lucinda. But, I was flattered by my hopes,

which ascribed the whole to the strength of her passion, and that sorrow which is commonly produced by the absence of a beloved object. In fine, I set out, pensive and sad, my imagination tortured with suspicions and doubts, which my reflection could neither digest nor explain: a sure preface of the melancholy fate that awaited me.

I arrived at the place of my destination, and delivered my letters to Don Fernando's brother, who received me kindly, but, far from dispatching me immediately, desired me, to my infinite regret, to wait eight whole days in a place where his father should not see me; because his brother had writ to him, to send the money without the knowledge of the duke. But, this was altogether an invention of the false Fernando, whose brother had money enough, and could have sent me back the very same day on which I arrived. This was such an order as I was scarce able to obey; for, I thought it impossible to support life for so many days, in the absence of Lucinda, considering the sorrow in which I had left her. Yet, notwithstanding, I resolved to do my duty like a faithful servant, though I very well foresaw, that my obedience must be at the expence of my peace. Four days of the eight were not yet elapsed, when a man came in search of me, and gave me a letter, the superscription of which I no sooner beheld, than I knew it to be written by Lucinda's own hand. I opened it with fear and trembling, believing, that there must be something very extraordinary in the case, which induced her to write to me in my absence; though, while I was present, she had been so sparing of her speech. But, before I read a syllable, I asked the messenger, who had put it into his hands; and how long he had been upon his journey? He answered, that passing through a certain street, about noon, he was stopt by a very beautiful young lady, who called to him from a window, saying, with great earnestness, while the tears trickled from her eyes; "Brother, if you are a christian, as you seem to be, I intreat you, for God's sake, to carry this letter to the place and person for whom it is directed; they are both well known; and in so doing, you will render a piece of service acceptable to the Lord. That you may not want conveniencies upon the road, here is something to defray the expence of your journey." So saying, she threw down a handkerchief, in which were tied an hundred rials, this gold ring, and the letter I have delivered. Then, without waiting for a reply, she went from the window, after having seen me take up the handkerchief and the letter, and make signs that I would do as she desired. Accordingly, finding myself so well paid for the trouble I should be at, and seeing, by the direction, that you was the person to whom it was sent, (and I know you perfectly well;) induced, moreover, by the tears of that beautiful young lady, I resolved to trust no other messenger, but come  
and

and deliver it with my own hand ; and in sixteen hours, which are past, since I received it, I have travelled to this place, which, as you know, is about eighteen leagues from our town." While I listened attentively to the information of this grateful and extraordinary courier, my legs shook under me, in such a manner, that I could scarce stand upright. At length, however, I ventured to read the letter, which contained these words :

" **T**HE promise which Don Fernando made, to prevail upon your father, to propose a match to mine, hath been performed more to his inclination than your advantage. Know, Cardenio, that he hath asked me in marriage for your pretended friend ; and, my father, swayed by the advantage which he thinks Don Fernando has over you in point of fortune, hath given his consent so much in earnest, that two days hence, the nuptials are to be celebrated so privately, that none but heaven and some people in the family, are to be present at the marriage. My situation you may guess. If it be in your power, return with all speed, and the event of this affair will shew whether I love you tenderly or not. Heaven grant that this may come to your hand, before mine shall be presented to him who so ill performs the duty of a friend."

This, which was the sum of what the letter contained, made me set out immediately, without waiting for any answer, or the money for which I had come. For, by that time, I plainly perceived, that it was not the purchase of the horses, but his own treacherous intention, which had induced Don Fernando to send me out of the way. The indignation I conceived against him, together with the fear of losing the jewel which I had acquired, and treasured up with such unwearied services and care, added wings to my speed, and conveyed me to the place of my habitation, just at the hour and minute proper for my going to visit Lucinda. I entered the town privately, and leaving my mule in the house of the honest man who brought the letter ; I went to the rail, which was the constant witness of our love, and there was so far favoured by fortune, as to find Lucinda. We knew each other presently : though not as we ought to have known each other. But, who is he, who can arrogate praise to himself, for having fathomed and discerned the capricious sentiments and fickle disposition of woman ? surely no man on earth—But, this apart. Lucinda, perceiving me, " Cardenio, said she, I am now in my bridal dress, and this moment expected in the hall, by the traitor Don Fernando, my covetous father, and some other people, who shall bear witness to my death, sooner than to my marriage. Be not confounded, my friend, but endeavour to be present at the sacrifice, which, if I cannot prevent by my  
declaration,

declaration, I wear a dagger concealed, which can obstruct a more vigorous determination, and, by putting an end to my life, begin to convince thee of the sincere passion I have always entertained, and still retain for my Cardenio." Afraid I should want time to answer her, I replied with great hurry and confusion, " Let your words be verified by your deeds, madam. If you have a dagger to assert your love, I wear a sword to defend it; or, should fortune prove our foe, to rid myself of life." I believe she did not hear all that I said, because she was called away, in a hurry, to the bridegroom who waited for her.

Thus deepened the night of my distress; thus set the sun of my happiness! I remained without light to my eyes, or reflection to my mind for some time: I could neither resolve to enter her father's house, nor remove to any other place; at length, however, considering of what consequence my presence might be, in case any thing extraordinary should happen, I recollected myself, as well as I could, and went in, without being perceived, as I was well acquainted with all the passages and corners of the house, and was favoured by the confusion which then prevailed in it, on account of the nuptials. Thus entering, unseen, I found means to conceal myself in the hollow of a window in the hall, that was covered by the meeting of two pieces of tapestry, from behind which I could, without being perceived, observe every thing that happened.

How shall I describe the throbbings and palpitations of my heart, the images that occurred to my fancy, the reflexions that I made, while I remained in that situation! they were such, as I neither can nor ought to describe. Let it suffice to say, the bridegroom came into the hall, without any other ornaments than his usual dress, attended by a first cousin of Lucinda, in quality of bridesman, no other person being present, except some servants of the family. A little while after, Lucinda came in, from her closet, accompanied by her mother and two waiting-women; and as richly dressed and adorned as her rank and beauty deserved, or as the perfection of gaiety and gallantry could invent. The suspense and transport of my soul, would not allow me to observe and mark the particulars of her dress; I could only take notice of the colours, which were carnation and white; and the blaze of jewels that adorned her, which was even excelled by the singular beauty of her golden locks, that struck the eye with more splendor than all the precious stones, together with the light of four torches that burned in the hall. O memory! thou mortal enemy of my repose! to what purpose dost thou now represent to my fancy, the unparalleled beauty of that adorable foe? cruel remembrance! rather recal to my view the particulars of what then happened, that incensed by such a manifest injury, I may take vengeance, if not upon her,

at

at least upon my own life. But you, gentlemen, must be tired with these digressions: though my misfortune is such as neither can, nor ought to be superficially or succinctly related; because, every circumstance, in my opinion, requires a full discussion." The curate answered, that far from being tired, they were very much entertained by those minute particulars, which he thought deserved as much attention as the principal events of the story.

"I say then, resumed Cardenio, that the parties being assembled in the hall, the curate of the parish entered, and taking them both by the hand, in order to perform his function, he said, "Madam Lucinda, are you willing to take Don Fernando here present, for your lawful spouse, as holy mother church ordains? At this question, I thrust out my whole head and neck from behind the tapestry, and with the utmost attention and disorder of soul, listened to Lucinda's answer, which I expected, as either the sentence of my death or confirmation of my life. O! that I had then boldly advanced, and called aloud, Ah Lucinda! Lucinda! take care what you do; reflect upon your duty to me, remember you are mine, and can never belong to any other husband. Consider, that my life must end the moment you answer, Yes. Ha! treacherous Don Fernando! robber of my glory! death of my life! what are thy intentions! what wouldst thou have! remember that, as a christian, thou canst not fulfil thy desires; for I am Lucinda's husband, and she is my lawful wife! Fool that I am! now, when I am absent, and far removed from the danger, I can reflect upon what I ought to have done. Now, that I am robbed of all that was dear to my soul! accursed by the robber, on whom I might have taken vengeance, had my heart supplied me with courage, as it now affords inclination to complain. In fine, as I then acted like a booby and a coward, it is but reasonable, that I should now die of madness, sorrow and shame. The priest waited for the reply of Lucinda, who declined it a good while; and when I expected she would either unsheath her dagger to vindicate her love, employ her tongue in the cause of truth, or utter some ingenious fraud that should tend to my advantage, I heard her pronounce with a weak and faltering voice, "Yes, I will." Don Fernando repeated the same words, and the ring being put upon her finger, they were united in the indissoluble bond of marriage: then he embraced his new-married spouse, who laying her hand on her heart, fainted away in the arms of her mother. It now remains to describe my own situation, when I heard and saw my hopes thus baffled by Lucinda's breach of promise; and found myself rendered incapable of ever retrieving the happiness I had that instant lost: I remained without sense or reflection, abandoned, as I thought, by heaven, and a declared enemy to that earth on  
which

which I lived. The air refused breath for my sighs, the water denied moisture for my tears, fire alone increased within me, to such a degree, that I was scorched with jealousy and rage! Lucinda's swooning threw the whole company into confusion, and her mother opening her breast to give her air, found in it, a folded paper, which Don Fernando taking, read by the light of one of the torches, and then sat down in a chair, and leaned one side of his head upon his hand, in a pensive attitude, without minding the remedies they were applying for the recovery of his spouse.

I seeing the whole family in confusion, ventured to come out, cost what it would, resolving, should I be seen, to do some desperate action, that would convince the whole world of my just indignation, in chastising the false Don Fernando, and the fickle, fainting traitress. But fate, that reserved me, if possible, for greater misfortunes, ordained that I should then abound in reflection, which hath since failed me; and resolve rather than take vengeance upon my greatest enemies, who, as they had no suspicion of me, were then at my mercy, to turn upon myself that resentment which they so justly deserved to feel; and, perhaps, with more rigor than I should have exercised upon them, had I, at that time, sacrificed them to my rage, because sudden death is infinitely more easy than that which is lengthened out by lingering torments. In short, I quitted the house, and went to the place where I had left my mule, which being saddled, I mounted her, and without taking leave of my host, sallied out of town, dreading, like another Lot, to look behind me. When I found myself alone in the open field, shrouded by the darkness of the night, and invited by the silence, to complain, without caution, or fear of being overheard or known, I raised my voice, and gave a loose to my indignation, in venting curses upon Lucinda and Don Fernando, as if those vain exclamations could have atoned for the injury they had done me. I bestowed upon her the epithets of cruel, false, perfidious and ungrateful, but, above all, avaricious; since the wealth of my rival had shut the eyes of her love, detached her from me, and swayed her inclination towards him to whom fortune had shewn herself more kind and liberal. Yet, in the midst of these reproaches and invectives, I could not help excusing her, observing, it was no wonder, that a damsel educated under restraint, in the house of her parents, bred up, and always accustomed to obey them, should comply with their will and pleasure, in marrying a young gentleman of such wealth, rank and qualifications, that her refusal might have been thought to proceed either from want of sense, or a passion for some other man, which would have been a suspicion equally prejudicial to her virtue and reputation: then I argued on the other side of the question, saying, had she owned that I was her husband, her parents would have  
seen



seen she had not committed an unpardonable crime in making such a choice: since, before the offer of Don Fernando, they themselves could not have desired, had their desires been bounded by reason, a better match than me for their daughter; and consequently, before she complied with that compulsive injunction of giving her hand to another, she might have told them, that she had already given it to me; in which case, I would have appeared and confirmed the truth of every thing she should have feigned for the occasion: In fine, I concluded that superficial love, slender understanding, vast ambition and thirst after grandeur, had obliterated in her memory, those professions by which I had been deceived, cherished and supported in the unshaken hope of my honourable desires.

In this exclamation and anxiety, I travelled all night, and in the morning found myself in one of the passages to this mountain, in which I proceeded three days more, without high-road or by-path, till I stopt at a small meadow, that lies either on the right or left of these rocks; there I enquired of some goatherds, whereabouts the most craggy part of the mountain, was; and, according to their directions, thither I rode, resolving to put an end to my life. When I arrived among those ragged rocks, my mule fell down dead of weariness or hunger; or, as I rather believe, to disencumber herself of such a useless load as then burthened her; and I remained on foot, quite spent and famished, without having or desiring any support. In this situation, I know not how long I continued stretched upon the ground: but, at length, I got up without feeling any cravings of hunger, and found myself in the midst of some shepherds, who, doubtless, had relieved my necessity. Indeed they told me in what condition I had been found, uttering such incoherent and extravagant expressions, as clearly demonstrated, that I had lost my senses. Since that time, I have frequently perceived my intellects so crazy and unsound, that I perform a thousand mad actions, tearing my cloaths, bellowing through these unfrequented places, cursing my fate, and repeating, in vain, the beloved name of my fair enemy, without any connected sentences, or indeed any other intent than that of putting an end to my life by violent outcries; and when I recover the use of my senses, I find myself so weak and exhausted, that I scarce can move. My usual habitation is the hollow of a cork-tree, large enough to contain this miserable carcass; the cow and goatherds who frequent these mountains, maintain me out of charity, by leaving food upon the road, or rocks, on which they think I may chance to find it: and, even while I am deprived of my understanding, natural instinct teaches me to distinguish this necessary nourishment, awakening my appetite and desire of seizing it for my use. They tell me too, when they meet with me in one of my lucid intervals, that at other

times, I fall out upon the highway, and take it by force, from the shepherds, as they are bringing it from their cots, although they offer it of their own accord. In this manner, I lead my woeful and wretched life, until heaven shall be pleased to put a period to it, or give me grace to forget the beauty and falsehood of Lucinda, together with the wrong I have suffered from Don Fernando. If this shall happen before I die, my intellects will return into their right channel; otherwise, there is nothing to be done, but to supplicate heaven to have mercy on my soul: for, I find I have neither virtue nor strength to extricate myself out of this extremity into which I was voluntarily plunged.

This, gentlemen, is the bitter story of my misfortune: tell me, if you think it could have been rehearsed with less concern than I have shewn; and pray, give yourselves no trouble in offering to me such persuasions and advice, as your reason prompts you to think will do me service: for, they can have no other effect upon me, than the prescription of a celebrated physician, upon a patient who will not receive it. I will have no health without Lucinda, and since she, who is, or ought to be, mine, hath attached herself to another, I, who might have been the child of happiness, am now the votary of woe. She, by her inconstancy, wants to fix my perdition, and I welcome it, in order to gratify her desire; and be an example to posterity, of one who wanted that consolation, which almost all the wretched use; namely, the possibility of bettering their fate. A consideration that increases my misery, which, I fear, will not end, even with death."

Thus did Cardenio wind up the long thread of his amorous and unfortunate story; and, just as the curate was about to give him his best advice and consolation, he was prevented by a voice that saluted his ears, and in mournful accents pronounced what will be rehearsed in the fourth book of this narration; for, in this place, the third is concluded by the sage and attentive historian Cid Hamet Benengeli.

---

---

THE  
LIFE and ATCHIEVEMENTS

Of the SAGE and VALIANT KNIGHT

DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA.

B O O K IV.

C H A P. I.

Of the new and agreeable adventure that happened to the curate and barber, in the brown mountain.

**T**HREE happy and fortunate was that age which produced the most audacious knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, in consequence of whose honourable resolution, to restore and revive the lost, and, as it were, buried order of knight-errantry; we of these times, enjoy the agreeable entertainment, not only of his own true and delightful adventures; but, also the intervening episodes, which are no less real, artful and delicious, than the main history itself, the twisted, reeled and ravelled thread of which is continued thus.

Just as the curate was ready to offer some consolation to Cardenio, he was prevented by a voice that saluted his ears in these mournful accents: "Would to God! I could find a place to serve as a private tomb for this wearisome burthen of life, which I bear so much against my inclination! this very spot will yield me what I ask, if I can trust the solitary appearance of these mountains. Alas! how much more agreeable is the company of these rocks and thickets, which give me opportunities of complaining to heaven, than that of faithless man! since nature hath not created one of whom I could reasonably expect advice in difficulty, comfort in affliction, or remedy in distress!"

This exclamation was distinctly overheard by the priest and his company, who concluding that the person who spoke must be hard by, arose to make further inquiry, and had not gone twenty paces, when behind the fragment of a rock they perceived a boy sitting under an ash-tree, in the habit of a peasant, who, as he stooped in order to wash his feet in a brook that murmured by him, could not perceive their approach, which was managed with softness and silence, while his whole attention was employed in bathing his legs, that seemed two crystal pillars, which had been produced among the pebbles in the rill. They were surprized at the whiteness and beauty of his feet, which they could not believe had been formed to tread the clods, and follow the cattle or plough, as his dress would have seemed to intimate; and the curate, who went foremost, finding himself still unperceived by the youth, made signs to the rest to crouch down, or hide themselves behind a neighbouring rock. This being done, all three stood gazing attentively at the apparition, which was clad in a double-skirted grey jacket, girt about the middle with a white napkin, and wore breeches and hose of the same cloth, with a grey hunting-cap upon his head; the hose being pulled up to the middle of his leg, which actually seemed of white alabaster. Having washed his delicate feet, he wiped them with an handkerchief, which he took out of his cap, and in so doing, lifted up his head, shewing to the by-standers, a face of such exquisite beauty, that Cardenio said in a whisper, to the curate, "Since that is not Lucinda, it can be no earthly, but some celestial being!" The youth taking off his cap, and shaking his head, a large quantity of hair, that Apollo himself might envy, flowed down upon his shoulders, and discovered to the spectators, that the supposed peasant was no other than a woman, the most delicate and handsome that the curate and barber had ever beheld; or even Cardenio, had he not seen and been acquainted with Lucinda, who alone, as he afterwards owned, could contend with her in beauty. Her golden locks fell down in such length and quantity, as not only covered her shoulders, but also concealed every other part of her body except her feet: and, instead of a comb, she made use of her hands, which, if her feet looked like crystal in the brook, appeared among her hair like moulds of drifted snow. All these circumstances increasing the desire of the bye-standers, to know who she was, they resolved to shew themselves, and at the stir they made in advancing, the beauteous phantom raised her head, and parting her locks with both hands, to see what occasioned the noise she heard, no sooner perceived them than she started up, and, without staying to put on her shoes, or tie up her hair, seized a bundle that lay by her, and betook herself to flight, full of consternation and surprize: but, she had not run six yards, when her delicate feet, unable





able to bear the roughness of the stones, failed under her, and she fell to the ground. This accident being perceived by the other three, they ran to her assistance, and the curate approaching her first, "Stay, madam, said he, whosoever you are; those whom you see have no other design than that of doing you service: therefore, there is no necessity for your attempting such a precipitate flight, which neither your own feet nor our inclination will allow." To this address she made no reply, being quite astonished and confus'd; but, the priest taking her by the hand, proceeded in this manner: "Madam, tho' your dress concealed, your hair hath discovered manifest signs, that it must be no slight cause which hath shrouded your beauty in such unworthy disguise, and brought you to this solitude, where it is our fortune to find you; and to offer, if not a certain remedy for your misfortune, at least our best advice: for, no grievance can harass or drive the afflicted to such extremity, while life remains, as to make them shut their ears against that counsel which is given with the most humane and benevolent intention. Wherefore, madam, or sir, or what you please to be, recollect yourself from the confusion in which the sight of us hath thrown you, and tell us the particulars of your good or evil fortune, in full assurance of finding us altogether, or each by himself, dispos'd to sympathize with your affliction."

While the curate pronounced these words, the disguised damsel stood wrapt in attention, gazing at them all round, without moving her lips, or uttering one syllable, like a country villager gaping at rarities which he had never seen before: but, the priest enforcing what he had said, with other arguments to the same effect, she heaved a profound sigh, and broke silence, saying, "Since these solitary mountains have not been able to conceal me, and my loose dishevelled hair allows me not to disguise the truth, it would be in vain for me to feign such things as your reason could not believe, tho' your courtesy might excuse them. On that supposition, I thank you, gentlemen, for your humane offer, which lays me under the obligation of giving you all the satisfaction you desire; tho' I am afraid, that the relation I shall make of my misfortunes, will, instead of compassion, excite your disgust; for, you will find it impossible either to cure my woes, or teach me to bear them with fortitude: but, nevertheless, that my reputation may not suffer in your opinion, as you have discovered me to be a woman, and a young one, alone, and in this disguise; circumstances, which considered either together or apart, might prejudice my good name in this world; I will freely disclose to you, those things, which, if possible, I would have willingly concealed."

All this preamble was uttered in a breath by the beautiful apparition, with such volubility of tongue, and sweetness of voice, that they admired her good sense as much as her beauty; and repeating their proffers of service,

service, as well as their intreaties, that she would perform her promise; she, without further importunity, put on her shoes with great modesty, adjusted her hair, and sat down in the midst of her three hearers, upon a seat in the rock, where, after having endeavoured to repress a few tears that started in her eyes, she, with a clear and deliberate voice, began the story of her life, in this manner:

“ In this province of Andaloufia, there is a place, from whence a certain duke, one of those who are called grandees of Spain, derives his title: he hath two sons, the eldest of whom is heir to his estate, and, in all appearance, to his good qualities; but, the younger inherits nothing that I know, but the treachery of Vellido and falsehood of Galalon. To this nobleman my parents are vassals, and tho’ low in pedigree, so considerable in wealth, that if their descent was equal to their fortune, they would have had nothing more to desire; nor I the mortification of seeing myself in this distress: for, I believe my misfortunes proceed from their defect in point of birth, which tho’ not so mean as to make them ashamed of their origin, is not splendid enough to overthrow my conjecture about the source of my affliction: in short, they are farmers, of a plain honest family, without the least intermixture of moorish blood, but, as the saying is, old, rusty christians; ay, and so rusty, that by their riches and opulent way of living, they are gradually acquiring the title of gentlefolks, nay of quality too; tho’ what they prized above all riches and title, was their happiness in having me for their daughter; and therefore, as they had no other child to inherit their estate, and were naturally the most affectionate of parents, I was beloved and indulged by them, with the utmost degree of parental fondness. I was the mirror in which they beheld themselves, the staff of their age, and shared with heaven their whole attention and desires, with which, as they were pure and unblemished, my own perfectly corresponded: and therefore, I was mistress of their affection as well as their wealth. By my advice, they received and dismissed their servants: the tale and account of what was both sowed and reaped, passed thro’ my hands. I managed the oil-mills, the vineyards, the herds and flocks, the beehives, and every thing that such a rich farmer as my father, may be supposed to possess: in short, I was steward and mistress, and acted with such care and œconomy, that I should not find it easy to exaggerate the pleasure and satisfaction which my parents enjoyed. Those parts of the day that remained, after I had given all due attention to the herdsmen, overseers, and other day-labourers, I employed in exercises equally decent and necessary for young women, such as lace-making, needle-work, and spinning; and, if at any time, I interrupted these employments, in order to recreate the mind, I entertained myself with some religious book, or diversified my amusement with the harp; being convinced  
by



by experience, that music lulls the disordered thoughts, and elevates the dejected spirits. Such was the life I led in my father's house; and if I have described it too minutely, it is not thro' ostentation, in order to display our riches, but, with a view of manifesting how innocently I forfeited that happy situation, and incurred the misery of my present state. While I passed my time in these occupations, my retirement was such as almost equalled that of a nunnery; being seen by no body, as I thought, but the servants of the family; for, I went to mass early in the morning, accompanied by my mother and the maids; and veiled with such reserve, that my eyes scarce beheld the ground on which I trod: yet, nevertheless, I was perceived by those of love, or rather libertinism, which even exceeds the lynx in penetration, and then possessed the faculties of Don Fernando, younger son of the duke whom I have already mentioned.

She no sooner mentioned the name of Don Fernando, than Cardenio changed colour, and began to sweat with such agitation, that the curate and barber perceiving it, were afraid he would be seized with one of those fits of distraction which, as they had heard, assaulted him from time to time: but, after some drops of sweat had burst out upon his skin, he remained quiet, and looking earnestly at the farmer's fair daughter, immediately guessed who she was; while she, without observing the emotions of Cardenio, went on with her story, in these words: "And he no sooner beheld me, than, as he afterwards protested, he deeply felt the power of love, which indeed his behaviour clearly evinced: but, to shorten the account of my misfortune, which is lengthened beyond all comfort, I will pass over in silence, the industrious schemes that Don Fernando planned, for opportunities of declaring his passion: he bribed every servant in the family, and even made presents and proffers of service to my relations: there was nothing but gaiety and rejoicing all day long in our street; and all night, it was impossible to sleep for serenades. The letters which, thro' an unknown channel, came to my hand, were without number, filled with the most amorous flights and professions, and vows and promises in every line: but, all these efforts, far from soothing, hardened me against him, as much as if he had been my mortal foe; and all the stratagems he practised, in order to subdue my coyness, had a quite contrary effect: not, that I was disgusted at the gallantry of Don Fernando, or enraged at his importunities; for, I felt a certain kind of pleasure, in being courted and beloved by such a noble cavalier: neither did I take umbrage at seeing myself praised in his letters; for, it is my opinion, that all women, let them be never so homely, are pleased to hear themselves celebrated for beauty: but, to all these artifices, I opposed my own virtue, together with the repeated advices of my parents, who plainly perceived the passion of Don Fernan-

do; because he himself took no care to conceal it from the world. They assured me, that in my virtue and prudence alone, they confided and deposited their own honour and reputation: they bade me consider the inequality between Don Fernando and me, which was a convincing proof that his love, tho' he himself asserted the contrary, tended more to his own gratification than my advantage; and said, if I could throw any obstruction in his way, to make him quit his unjust pretensions, I should be married immediately, according to my own choice, either to one of the principal persons of our own town, or to some gentleman in the neighbourhood, as I had abundance of lovers, attracted by their wealth and my reputation. With these assurances, the truth of which I could not doubt, I fortified my integrity, and would never send any reply to Don Fernando, that could in the most distant manner, flatter him with the hope of accomplishing his wish: but, all my reserve, which he ought to have looked upon as the effect of disdain, served only to whet his libidinous appetite, which is the true name of the passion he professed; for, had it been genuine love, you would not now be listening to my story, which I should have had no occasion to recount.

In fine, Don Fernando got notice that my parents intended to bestow me in marriage, that they might deprive him of all hope of possessing me, or, at least, provide me with more guards to protect my virtue; and this piece of news alarmed him so much, that he put in practice an expedient to retard the dreaded match. One night, while I sat in my apartment, attended by my maid only, the doors being all fast locked, that thro' negligence my virtue might not be in danger, without knowing or comprehending the means of his conveyance, he appeared before me, in the midst of this reserve, precaution, solitude, silence and retreat! At sight of him, I was so much confounded, that the light forsook my eyes, and my tongue denied it's office; so that being deprived of the power of utterance, I could not cry for help, neither, I believe, would he have suffered me to exclaim; for, he instantly seized me in his arms, my confusion being such, that I had not strength to defend myself, and began to pour forth such protestations, that I cannot conceive how falsehood is able to ape truth so exactly. The traitor's tears gave credit to his words, and his sighs confirmed the honesty of his intention. I being a poor young creature by myself, altogether unexperienced in those affairs, began, I know not how, to believe his false professions; but, not so as to be moved to weak compassion, either by his vows or artful sorrow; on the contrary, my first surprise being over, I recollected my dissipated spirits, and with more courage than I thought myself possessed of, said to him, "Signor, if, instead of being within your arms, as I now am, I was in the paws of a fierce lion, and my deliverance entirely depended upon my doing or saying any thing prejudicial to my virtue, it  
would

would be as impossible for me to comply with these terms, as it is impossible for that which is, to lose its existence: wherefore, tho' you keep my body confined within your arms, I am in full possession of my soul, with all her chaste desires, which are intirely opposite to yours, as you will plainly perceive, if you resolve to proceed in gratifying your wishes by force. I am your vassal, but not your slave: the nobility of your blood neither has, nor ought to have, the power of dishonouring or despising the lowliness of mine; and my character is as precious to me, tho' I am but a plebeian farmer's daughter, as yours can be to you, who are a nobleman and cavalier. All your strength shall not effect your purpose; neither am I to be influenced by your riches, deceived by your words, or melted by your sighs and tears. Any of these expressions in a man, to whom my parents should give me in marriage, would gain my consent and reciprocal inclination; nay, if my honour were safe, I could sacrifice my satisfaction, and voluntarily yield what you, signor, now attempt to obtain by force: this I observe, that you may rest assured, I will never grant any favour to him who is not my lawful spouse."

"If that be your sole objection, charming Dorothea (for, that is the name of this wretched creature) said the perfidious cavalier, behold I here present my hand, in pledge, of being yours for ever; and may heaven, from which nothing is concealed, together with that image of the blessed virgin, bear witness to the sincerity and truth of this declaration." Cardenio, when she called herself Dorothea, was surpris'd anew, and confirm'd in his first conjecture; but, unwilling to interrupt the story in which he expected to hear the issue of what he already knew, he only said, "Is your name Dorothea, madam? I have heard of one of that name, to whose misfortunes yours bear a great resemblance: but pray proceed; the time will come when I shall tell you such things as will equally excite your terror and affliction." Dorothea, surpris'd at the discourse of Cardenio, as well as at his strange and ragged attire, intreated him, if he knew any thing of her affairs, to communicate it immediately; saying, that if fortune had left her any thing of value, it was the courage to endure any disaster that might befall her; tho' she was almost certain, that what she had already suffered, could admit of no addition. "Madam, replied Cardenio, I would not be the means of impairing that fortitude, by telling you what I know, if my conjecture be right; neither is there any opportunity lost, nor is it of any consequence to you, whether you hear it or not." "Be that as it will, answered Dorothea, I will go on with the sequel of my story. Don Fernando addressing himself to the image he found in my apartment, invoked the blessed virgin to bear witness to our nuptials, and avowed himself my husband with the most binding and solemn oaths: tho', before he proceeded so far, I desired

him to reflect upon what he was going to do, and consider how much his father might be incensed at his conduct, when he should find him married to the daughter of his own farmer and vassal. I cautioned him against being blinded by my beauty, such as it was, telling him it would be far from being a sufficient excuse for his error; and begged, if he had any love and regard for me, he would manifest it, in leaving me to a fate more adequate to my rank and circumstances; observing, that such unequal matches were seldom blessed with a long duration of those raptures with which they begin.

All these reflections I repeated to him, with many more which I do not remember; but, they had no effect in diverting him from the prosecution of his purpose; for, he was like a man who, in making a bargain, never boggles at the price of the commodity, because he never intends to pay it. At the same time, I held a short conference with my own breast, saying within myself, "Neither shall I be the first, who by marriage, has risen from a low station, to rank and grandeur; nor will Don Fernando be the first nobleman whom beauty, or rather blind affection, hath induced to share his greatness with a partner of unequal birth. Since therefore, I neither make a new world nor a new custom, it is but reasonable in me to embrace this honour that fortune throws in my way; and altho' the affection he professes should not survive the accomplishment of his wish, I shall nevertheless, in the sight of God, remain his true and lawful wife. Besides, should I treat him with disdain, I see he is determined to transgress the bounds of duty, and avail himself of force; in which case, I shall be dishonoured and inexcusable in the opinion of those who do not know how innocently I have incurred their censure; for, where shall I find arguments to persuade my parents, that this cavalier entered my apartment, without my knowledge and consent?"

All these reflexions, which my imagination revolved in an instant, began to sway me towards that which (tho' I little thought so) proved my ruin; especially when aided and enforced by the oaths of Don Fernando, the powers he called to witness, the tears he shed, and, in short, by his genteel carriage and agreeable disposition, accompanied by such marks of real passion, as might have melted any other heart as soft and unexperienced as mine. I called my maid to be a joint evidence with the powers of heaven; Don Fernando repeated and confirmed his oaths; took other saints to witness his integrity; imprecated a thousand curses on his head, in case he should fail to fulfil his promise; had recourse to sighs and tears again, straining me still closer in his arms, from which he had never released me: by these means, and the departure of my maid, I forfeited that name, and he became a false and finished traitor.

The

The morning that succeeded this night of my misfortune, did not arrive so soon, I believe, as Don Fernando could have wished; for, when once a man hath satisfied his rage of appetite, his chief inclination is to quit the scene of his success. This I observe, because Don Fernando seemed impatient to be gone, and, by the industry of my maid, who had conducted him to my chamber, found himself in the street before day: when he took his leave, he told me, tho' not with such violence of rapture as he expressed on his first coming, that I might depend upon his honour, and the sincerity of the oaths he had sworn, as a further confirmation of which, he took a ring of value from his finger, and put it upon mine: in short, he vanished, leaving me in a situation which I can neither call joyful nor sad. This I know, that I remained in a state of confusion and perplexity, and, as it were, beside myself, on account of what had happened; but I either wanted courage or memory to quarrel with my maid for the perfidy she had had been guilty of, in conducting Don Fernando to my apartment: indeed, I could not as yet determine, whether the adventure would redound to my advantage or misfortune. I told him, at parting, that now I was his wife, he might see me every night, by the same means he had used to procure this first interview, until he should think proper to make our marriage public: but, excepting the following night, I could never set eyes on him, either in the street or at church, during a whole month which I spent in the utmost anxiety of expectation; altho' I knew he was in town, and almost every day employed in the chace, an exercise to which he was greatly addicted. Those were doleful and distracting hours and days to me, for, then I began to doubt, and afterwards to disbelieve the faith of Don Fernando: then was my maid exposed to those rebukes for her presumption, which she had never heard before: then was I obliged to husband my tears, and wear composure on my countenance, that I might not give occasion to my parents, to ask the cause of my discontent; and be put to the trouble of inventing falsehoods to deceive them. But, all this constraint was banished by an event, the knowledge of which trod down all other respects, put an end to all my prudent measures, and by destroying my patience, published my misfortune to the world. This was no other than a report that soon after prevailed in our town, by which I learned that Don Fernando was married, in a neighbouring city, to a young lady of exceeding beauty, and distinguished birth, tho' her parents could not give her a portion suitable to such a noble alliance. I understood her name was Lucinda, and that several surprising accidents had happened at their nuptials."

Cardenio hearing Lucinda's name, tho' he said nothing, shrugged up his shoulders, bit his lips, contracted the skin of his forehead, and discharged from his eyes two fountains of tears: but, notwithstanding, Dorothea con-

tinued her story, saying, " This melancholy piece of news no sooner reached my ears, than, instead of freezing, it inflamed my heart with such rage and fury, that I had well nigh run out into the streets, and published aloud the falsehood and treachery he had practised upon me: but, my rage was restrained for that time, by a plan which I conceived, and actually put in execution that very night. I dressed myself in this garb, which I received from one of the swains belonging to the house, to whom I disclosed my whole design, intreating him to attend me to the city, where I understood my adversary was. After having disapproved of the attempt, and blamed my resolution, seeing me determined, he offered to keep me company, as he said, to the world's end: that moment I packed up my woman's dress in a pillow-case, together with some jewels and money, as a resource in time of need; and in the dead of that very night, without giving the least hint to my perfidious maid, left my father's house, and accompanied by my servant, and a thousand strange imaginations, set out for that city on foot, winged with the desire of finding Don Fernando; and resolved, tho' I could not prevent what was already done, to demand with what conscience he had done it.

In two days and an half, I arrived at the city, and enquiring for the house of Lucinda's parents, the first person to whom I put the question, told me more than I desired to hear: he said, that on the night of their nuptials, after she had pronounced the Yes, by which he became her husband, Lucinda was seized with a violent fit; that Don Fernando opening her breast to give her fresh air, found in it a paper written with her own hand, importing that she could not lawfully espouse Fernando, being already the wife of Cardenio, who, as the man told me, was one of the principal cavaliers of that town; and that she had now pronounced the fatal Yes, meerly because she would not swerve from the obedience she owed to her parents: in short, he said the contents of the paper plainly gave them to understand, that she intended to make away with herself, immediately after the ceremony, induced by the reasons which were there contained; and this resolution was confirmed by a poignard which they found concealed in some part of her dress. Don Fernando perceiving, by what happened, that Lucinda had baffled, scorned and undervalued his addresses, ran to her before she had recovered the use of her senses, and with the poignard they had found, would have stabbed her to the heart, had he not been prevented by her parents and the rest of the company. Next day, when she recovered from her swoon, she declared to her father and mother, that she was the true and lawful wife of that same Cardenio, who, it seems, was present at the ceremony; and who, when he saw her actually married, contrary to his former belief and firm expectation, quitted the city in despair, having first left a writing, that declared the wrong she had done him, and signified his intention, to banish  
himself

himself for ever from the society of mankind. All this transaction was so notorious and public in the city, as to furnish discourse for every body; and the subject was not diminished when it was known, that Lucinda was not to be found either in her father's house, or in any other part of the town, which was searched all over by her parents, who had almost run distracted, not knowing what other method they should take to retrieve her. This information revived my hopes a little, for, I was better pleased to have missed Don Fernando than to have found him married to another; thinking, that every gate of comfort was not yet shut against me; and that heaven, perhaps, had thrown that impediment in the way of his second marriage, with a view of making him reflect upon what he owed to the first; and reminding him of his being a christian, consequently more interested in the care of his soul than in any other human concern. All these things I revolved in my imagination, and as I had no real comfort, consoled myself with the most feeble and distant hope, in order to support a life which I now abhor.

While I remained in this city, undetermined what course to take, as I could not find Don Fernando; I heard a public cryer describe my person and dress, and offer a considerable reward to any one that should discover where I was. Nay, it was said, that I had seduced from my father's house, the young man who attended me; a circumstance that touched me to the very soul: finding my credit fallen so low, that they were not satisfied with publishing my escape, but, must needs also mention my attendant, a creature so mean and unworthy of my attention and regard; as soon as I heard myself proclaimed, I quitted the town, accompanied by my servant, who already began to give marks of staggering in his promised faith and fidelity; and that night, reached the most woody part of this mountain, urged by the fear of being discovered: but, as it is commonly observed, one mischance invites another, and the end of one misfortune is often the beginning of a worse; this was literally my case: my trusty servant, who had hitherto behaved with such zeal and fidelity, seeing me in this solitary place, and instigated by his own villainy, rather than any beauty of mine, attempted to avail himself of the opportunity which he thought this desert offered; and with great impudence, contempt of heaven, and disregard to me, began to talk of love; when, finding that I rejected his immodest proposals with just indignation and disdain, he laid aside intreaties for the use of those who might please to use them, and began to employ force for the accomplishment of his will: but, just heaven, who seldom or never abandons the righteous intention, favoured and assisted mine so effectually, that with the little strength I have, and no great trouble, I pushed him over a precipice, unknowing whether or not he survived the fall; then, as nimbly as my wea-

riness.

ness and terror would allow, I penetrated farther into the mountain, without any other thought or intention, than that of keeping myself concealed from my father, and those whom he had employed to find me out.

I know not how many months I have lived in this place, where I met with a grazier, who took me into his service, and carried me to his house, which stands in the very heart of the mountain. Him I have served all this time, in quality of a cowherd, endeavouring to be always in the field, that I might the more easily conceal that hair which hath now so unexpectedly discovered my sex: yet, all my care and industry were vain; for, my master having found me out to be a woman, was seized with the same desire that took possession of my own servant: but, fortune with the evil, does not always send the remedy; for, I could neither find rock nor bog, by which I might have disabled my master, as I had before punished my man; and therefore, as the least inconvenience, I have left his house, and chosen to hide myself again among these thickets, rather than try my strength against him, in defence of my innocence. I say, I returned to these woods, in hopes of finding a place in which I might, without impediment, implore heaven with sighs and tears, to have compassion upon my misery, and give me industry and grace to overcome it, or give up the ghost in this solitude, without leaving behind me the least trace or remembrance of this forlorn wretch, who, without any fault of her own, hath afforded so much matter for conversation and censure both at home and abroad.

## C H A P. II.

Of the beautiful Dorothea's discretion; with other pleasant and entertaining particulars.

**T**HIS, gentlemen, is the genuine detail of my tragic story: consider, therefore, and judge whether or not, I have sufficient cause to heave more sighs than I have vented, utter more complaints than you have heard, and shed more tears than have flowed from mine eyes; and when you shall have deliberated upon the quality of my misfortune, you will perceive how vain all consolation must be; as the disease admits of no remedy. I only ask what you easily can, and ought to grant, namely, that you would inform me where I can pass my life, without being harrassed by the surprize and fear of being found by those who are in search of me. For, though I am well assured, that my parents, out of their great love and affection, would receive me again into their favour, such is the shame and confusion I feel at the bare thought of their having altered their opinion  
to



to my prejudice, that I would rather conceal myself from their sight for ever, than appear in their presence, under the suspicion of having acted contrary to the expectations they entertained from my virtue." So saying, she stood silent, and her face was overspread with a blush that plainly denoted the sentiments and confusion of her soul. Those who had heard her story, were equally surprized and afflicted at her misfortune; to which the curate was going to offer some consolation and advice, when Cardenio took her by the hand, saying, "It seems then, madam, you are the beauteous Dorothea, only daughter of Cleonardo the rich!" She was astonished to hear her father's name pronounced by one of such a miserable appearance; for we have already observed, how wretchedly Cardenio was clothed, and said to him, "And who are you, brother, who know so well my father's name, which, if I remember aright, I have not once mentioned in the whole course of my unfortunate story?"

"I am, replied Cardenio, that unfortunate man, to whom, as you have observed, Lucinda said she was married. I am that miserable Cardenio, whom the villainy of him who reduced you to your present situation, hath brought to this deplorable condition in which you now see me, ragged, half-naked, destitute of all human comfort, and, which is still worse, deprived of my understanding, except at certain short intervals, that I enjoy by the permission of heaven. I, Dorothea, am the person who was present at the perfidy of Don Fernando, and heard Lucinda pronounce the fatal Yes, by which she accepted him for a husband. I am he who wanted resolution to wait the issue of her swoon, or stay and see the result of that paper which was found in her bosom: for, my soul could not sustain the shock of such accumulated misfortune; and therefore, I quitted the house, already abandoned by my patience, and leaving a letter with my host, whom I charged to deliver it into Lucinda's own hand, betook myself to these desarts, with an intention here to finish the life which from that instant I have abhorred as my most inveterate foe. But, fate hath not been pleased to grant my wish, contenting itself with having deprived me of my judgment, with a view, perhaps, of reserving me for better fortune; which I begin to hope, may proceed from this lucky meeting with you, since, if that which you have recounted be true, as I believe it is, there is a possibility that heaven may have in store for us both, a more favourable termination of our disasters, than we imagine; for, supposing that Lucinda, who is already my wife, as she hath openly declared, cannot be married to Don Fernando, nor he lawfully wed her, being already espoused to you, I think we have room to hope, that heaven will one day, restore what mutually belongs to us; as it is neither alienated, ruined, nor irretrievable. And since this consolation still remains,

sprung

sprung from hopes that are not very remote, and founded on expectations which are not the effects of a disordered imagination, I entreat you, madam, in the purity of your sentiments, to change your present resolution, as I intend to alter mine, and accommodate yourself to the hopes of better fortune ; for, I swear upon the faith of a gentleman and a christian, that I will never abandon you, until I see you in the arms of Don Fernando, whom, if I cannot by reasonable arguments, bring to a true sense of his duty towards you, I will then use that privilege to which every gentleman is intitled, and, in single combat, demand satisfaction for the injury he has done you, without minding my own wrongs, which I will leave to the vengeance of heaven, that I may the sooner revenge yours upon earth."

This speech of Cardenio put an end to the surprize of Dorothea, who being at a loss how to thank him for his kind and generous offer, stooped in order to kiss his feet ; but, this piece of condescension he would by no means allow. The priest answering for both, approved of Cardenio's declaration, and, in a particular manner, intreated, advised and persuaded them to accompany him to the village where he lived, in order to provide themselves with what they wanted ; and there consult some scheme either for finding Don Fernando, or for carrying Dorothea back to her parents, or, in short, for doing that which should seem most necessary and convenient. Cardenio and Dorothea thanked him for his courteous offer, which they immediately embraced ; and the barber, who had been silent and attentive all this time, having joined the curate in his compliments and hearty proffers of service, briefly recounted the cause which had brought them thither ; namely, the strange madness of Don Quixote ; observing, that they were then waiting for the return of his squire, whom they had sent in quest of his master. Cardenio immediately, as if it had been the faint impression of a dream, recollected and related the quarrel which had happened between the knight and him, though he could not remember the cause of the dispute.

At that instant they heard and recognized the voice of Sancho, who not finding them in the place where he had left them, hollowed aloud ; upon which, they went to meet him, and inquiring about Don Quixote, were told by the squire, that he found him naked to the shirt, wan, meagre, half-famished, and fighting for his mistress Dulcinea ; that, when Sancho told him she had commanded him to quit that place, and go immediately to Toboso, where she waited with impatience to see him, he had answered, that he was determined never to appear before her, until he should have performed such achievements as would render him worthy of her favour ; and Sancho observed, that if this resolution should hold,

hold, it was possible he might never attain to the rank of an emperor, as he was in duty bound, nor even to that of an archbishop, which was the least he could expect. He desired them, therefore, to consider some means of disengaging the knight from his solitude. The priest bad him be under no concern, for, they would fall upon a method to remove his master, whether he would or no.

Then he explained to Cardenio and Dorothea, the plan he had laid, to cure Don Quixote of his madness, or, at least, bring him back to his own house. This Dorothea no sooner understood, than she told him, that she was more proper than the barber for acting the part of the distressed damsel; especially, as she had cloaths along with her, that would answer the purpose; and bad them trust to her, for representing every part of the character, which should be necessary towards the success of their design; for, she had read a great many books of chivalry, and was perfectly well acquainted with the state in which afflicted damsels were wont to beg boons of knights-errant. "If that be the case, said the curate, let us not delay the execution of our scheme: for, without doubt, heaven seems to favour my endeavours; not only, in opening a door, so unexpectedly, towards the cure of your misfortunes, but also in making you subservient in facilitating our success. Dorothea then pulled out of her pillow-case, a gown and petticoat of very rich stuff, with a beautiful green mantelet, and opening a little casket, took out a rich necklace and other jewels, with which she instantly dressed herself to such advantage, that she appeared like a lady of the first rank and fortune. All these and other ornaments, she said, she had carried off from her father's house, in case of what might happen; though hitherto, she had met with no opportunity of using them. Every one present was charmed with her graceful mien, easy deportment, and exceeding beauty; and passed sentence on Don Fernando, as a person of little taste and discernment, for having abandoned such excellence. But, the admiration of Sancho was superior to that of all the rest; for, he actually thought, and indeed it was true, that in all the days of his life, he had never seen such a beautiful creature; and accordingly, asked the curate, with great eagerness, who that handsome lady was, and what she looked for in these by-places. "Friend Sancho, answered the curate, that handsome lady, to say no more of her, is heiress, in the direct male line, of the kingdom of \*Micomicon, come hither to beg as a boon of your master, that he would redress a wrong and grievance done to her by a discourteous giant: for, such is the fame and reputation of that excellent knight Don Quixote, through the whole extent of Guinea, as to induce this princess to come from thence in quest

\* As if he had said Ape-land: *Mico* signifying an ape.

of him." "Blessed quest! cried Sancho, and happy finding, say I! especially, if my master should be so fortunate as to right the wrong, and redress the grievance, by killing that son of a whore of a giant that your worship mentions: and kill him he certainly will, if they should once meet, provided he be not a phantome; for, you must know, my master has no power over phantomes. But, one thing among many others, I must beg of you, Mr. Licentiate, and that is, to put my master out of conceit of an archbishopric, for, I am afraid his inclination leans that way, and advise him to marry this princess out of hand, a match which will make it impossible for him to receive holy orders; and therefore he will the more easily arrive at the seat of empire, and I at the end of my wish. For, I have carefully considered the affair, and by my reckoning, I shall not find my account in his being an archbishop, as I am altogether unfit for the church, by reason of my being married; and for me, who have a wife and children, to be petitioning for dispensations to hold livings, would be an endless talk. Wherefore, signor, the point is this: let my master immediately take to wife that same lady, whose name I do not know; for, indeed, I never saw her grace before this blessed minute." "She is called the princess Micomicona, replied the curate, because, her kingdom being Micomicon, 'tis plain her name must be Micomicona." "Yes, to be sure, said Sancho, I have known several people take a surname and addition from the place of their nativity, calling themselves, for example, Pedro d'Alcala, Juna de Ubeda, Diego de Valladolid; and I suppose they have the same custom in Guinea, where the queens take their names from the kingdoms they rule." The priest confirmed Sancho's opinion, and promised to use his utmost influence to promote the marriage of the knight. With this assurance Sancho rested as much satisfied as the other was surprized at his simplicity, when he perceived how carefully he cherished, in his imagination, the same extravagant whims that possessed his master, who, he firmly believed, would one day become an emperor.

By this time, Dorothea being mounted on the curate's mule, and the barber's face accommodated with the ox's tail, by way of beard, they desired Sancho to guide them to the place where Don Quixote was, and cautioned him against pretending to know the licentiate and his companion, assuring him that his master's becoming an emperor entirely depended upon his professing ignorance of their persons. Yet neither the curate nor Cardenio would accompany them; because the presence of this last might recal to the knight's memory, the quarrel which had happened between them; and it was not yet proper that the priest should appear: for which reasons, they let the rest proceed by themselves, and they followed at a  
small





J. Hayman inv. & Pinx.

G. Scottin Sculp.

small distance, after the curate had given her cue to Dorothea, who desired him to make himself perfectly easy on her account; for, she would act the part assigned to her, without having the least occasion for a prompter, in the true stile and spirit of knight-errantry.

Having travelled about three quarters of a league, they discovered Don Quixote already cloathed, though still unarmed, sitting in the midst of a labyrinth of rocks; and Dorothea no sooner understood it was he, in consequence of Sancho's information, than she whipt up her palfrey, close attended by the well-bearded barber, who, when she approached the knight, threw himself from his mule, and ran to help his lady to alight. But, she, dismounting with great agility, went and fell upon her knees before Don Quixote, whom, in spite of his repeated endeavours to raise her, she accosted in these words:

“ Never will I rise from this posture, most valiant and invincible knight, until your benevolence and courtesy grant me a boon, which will not only redound to the honour and applause of your own person, but also to the advantage of the most injured and disconsolate damsel that ever the sun beheld; and, if the valour of your mighty arm corresponds with the voice of your immortal fame, you are obliged to favour the unfortunate, who, attracted by the odour of your celebrated name, come from far distant regions, in quest of your assistance.” “ Beauteous lady, replied Don Quixote, I will not answer one word, nor hear one circumstance of your affairs, until you rise from the ground.” “ I will not rise, signor, answered the afflicted damsel, until I shall have obtained from your condescension, the boon I beg.” “ I condescend and grant it, resumed the knight, provided in so doing, I act neither to the detriment nor derogation of my king, my country, and her who holds my heart and liberty enslaved\*.” “ Your compliance, worthy signor, replied the mourning lady, shall in no ways affect the exceptions you have made.”

At that instant Sancho came up, and whispered softly in his master's ear; “ Your worship may safely grant the boon she asks, which is a meer trifle; no more than slaying a giantish sort of a fellow; and she who begs it, is the high and mighty princess Micomicona, queen of the great empire of Micomicon in Æthiopia.” “ Whosoever she is, answered Don Quixote, I will do what I am in duty bound to perform, and act accord-

\* When a knight had once granted a boon in this manner, it was impossible for him to retract, let the request be never so extravagant. We are told by Joinville, that the queen of St. Lewis, being big with child, and in the utmost terror of falling alive into the hands of the infidels at Damietta in Ægypt, fell upon her knees before an old knight turned of fourscore, and conjured him to grant her boon: The old man having promised to comply, on the faith of his knighthood, she told him the favour she so pressingly solicited, was, that he would cut off her head, before she should fall into the hands of the enemy; provided the Saracens should become masters of the town. The senior answered without hesitation, that she might depend upon his sword; and owned he had taken that resolution even before she signified her request.

ing to the dictates of my own conscience, and conformable to the order I profess." Then turning to Dorothea, " Rise, most beautiful lady, said he, the boon you ask is granted." " Then, what I ask is this, resumed the damsel, that your magnanimity would immediately accompany me to the place from whence I came, and promise to attempt no other adventure, nor grant any other request, until you shall have taken vengeance on a traitor who hath usurped my crown, contrary to all right human and divine." " I grant your request, madam, answered Don Quixote: henceforth you may dispel that melancholy with which you are depressed, and let your fainting hope resume new strength and vigour; for, with the assistance of God and this my arm, you shall, in a short time, see yourself restored to your kingdom, and seated on the throne of your royal ancestors, in defiance and despite of all those evil-designing persons who mean to oppose you: let us set hands to the work then, for, according to the common observation, Delay breeds danger.

The distressed damsel struggled with great perseverance, to kiss his hand; but, Don Quixote, who was in all respects a well-bred knight, would by no means allow such humiliation; on the contrary, raising her up, he embraced her with great politeness and cordiality, ordering Sancho to secure Rozinante's girths, and help him to arm with all expedition. The squire taking down the armour, which hung on a tree, in the manner of a trophy, and adjusting the horse's girths, in a twinkling, equipped his master, who finding himself armed, " Now, said he, let us go, in the name of God, to the assistance of this high-born lady." The barber, who was all this time on his knees, at infinite pains to preserve his gravity and his beard, the fall of which, perhaps, would have utterly ruined their laudable design, when he found the boon was granted, and saw with what eagerness the knight undertook to fulfil it, rose up, and, with the assistance of Don Quixote, helped his lady upon her mule again; then her protector bestrode Rozinante, and he himself mounted his own beast, while Sancho Panza being left on foot, felt the loss of Dapple, anew: but, this he contentedly bore, believing that his master was now in the right road, and almost at the very point of being an emperor; for, he assured himself that the knight would wed that princess, and so become king of Micomicon at least: the only uneasiness he felt, was, on account of that kingdom's being in the land of negroes, so that all his servants and vassals must be black; but, his imagination supplied him with a remedy for this inconvenience, and he said within himself, " Suppose my vassals are negroes, what else have I to do, but transport them to Spain, where I can sell them for ready money, with which I may purchase some title or post that will maintain me, unmarried, all the days of my life! No, to be sure, sleep on,



on, void of all invention or ability to dispose of your ware, and sell thirty or ten thousand slaves in the turning of a straw. Before God! I'll make them fly, little and big, or just as I may; and, blacks as they are, turn them all into white and yellows. Let me alone to suck my own fingers." With these conceits he was so much engrossed, and so well satisfied, that he actually forgot the pain of travelling on foot.

Cardenio and the curate saw every thing that passed from behind some bushes where they were hid, and could fall upon no method of joining them conveniently, until the priest, who was an excellent schemer, thought of an expedient for the purpose: having a pair of scissars about him, he cut off the beard of Cardenio, with infinite dispatch, and giving him a grey jacket, with his own black cloak, he himself remaining in his doublet and hose, the tattered cavalier was so much altered in point of appearance, that he would scarce have known himself had he looked in a glass. Although the others were jogging on, while they disguised themselves in this manner, they easily reached the highway, before the knight and his company, whose beasts were retarded by the bushes and rockyness of the ground: and taking their station just at the mouth of the entrance to the mountain, no sooner perceived the knight and his attendants come forth, than the curate looked earnestly at him a good while, as if he had been recollecting a person whom he knew, then ran to him with open arms, crying aloud, "Blessed be this meeting with the mirror of chivalry, my worthy compatriot Don Quixote de la Mancha, the flower and cream of gentility, the protector and physician of the distressed, and quintessence of knights-errant!" So saying, he embraced the left knee of Don Quixote, who being astonished at the words and action of the man, began to consider his features with great attention, and at length, recollecting him, was struck dumb with admiration, at seeing him in that place, and made many efforts to alight, which when the priest opposed, "Give me leave, Mr. Licentiate, said he, it is not seemly, that I should remain on horseback, when such a reverend person as you travels on foot." "I will, by no means, answered the curate, consent to your alighting; since, on horseback, your mighty arm hath atchieved the greatest exploits and adventures that this age hath seen: it shall suffice for me, who am but an unworthy priest, to get up, with permission, behind this gentleman who travels in your worship's company; and then I shall imagine myself mounted upon Pegasus, a Zebra, or that fiery courser that carried the famous moor Muzaraque, who still lies enchanted in the vast mountain Zulema, at a little distance from the great Compluto." "I did not think of that expedient, Mr. Licentiate, resumed the knight, but, I know that my lady the princess will, out of regard to me, be pleased to order her squire to accommodate

accommodate you with the saddle of his mule, and he himself may ride upon the crupper, if the beast will carry double." "I believe she will, said the princess; and I am sure, there will be no occasion to lay my commands upon my squire, who is too courteous and polite, to suffer an ecclesiastic to travel on foot, when it is in his power to provide him with a beast." "Your majesty is in the right," answered the barber, who instantly alighting, complimented the curate with the saddle, which was accepted without much intreaty."

But, the misfortune was, when the squire attempted to get up behind, the mule, which was an hireling, consequently mischievous, lifted up her hind legs, and kicked with such fury, that had they lighted on the head or breast of Mr. Nicholas, he would have had reason to curse the hour on which he set out in quest of Don Quixote: such, however, was his confusion, that he came to the ground, and his beard being neglected, fell off; so that he could find no other method to prevent a discovery, than to clap both hands to his face, with great expedition, and roar out that his teeth were demolished. Don Quixote, seeing that huge mass of beard torn from the jaw, without blood, and lying at a good distance from the squire's face; "Good heavens! cried he, what a wonderful phenomenon is this! the beard is taken off and shaved as clean by the heel of the mule, as if it had been done by the hand of a barber." The curate, seeing the risk he ran of being detected in his scheme, snatched up the tail, and running with it to Mr. Nicholas, who still lay bellowing for help, pulled his head to his breast with one jerk, and clapping it on again, muttered some words, which he said, were an infallible charm for fixing on beards, as they should presently see; accordingly, when the affair was adjusted, he quitted the squire, who now seemed as well bearded and as found as ever: a circumstance that, above measure, surprized the knight, who begged, that the curate, at a proper opportunity, would impart to him the charm which, he imagined, must contain more virtues than that of cementing beards; because it was plain, that where the hair was torn off, the skin and flesh must be lacerated and hurt; and if the application could heal these wounded parts, it was good for something more than meer mustachios." The curate confirmed his conjecture, and promised to disclose the secret to him, with the first proper opportunity: then it was agreed, that the priest should mount the mule by himself, and, with the other two, ride her by turns, until they should arrive at the inn, which was about two leagues off.

Don Quixote, the princess, and the curate being thus mounted, and Cardenio, the barber, and Sancho Panza following on foot, the knight told the damsel, that her highness might conduct him whithersoever she pleased;

pleased; but, before she could make any reply, the priest interposed, saying, "Towards what kingdom is your majesty journeying? I am much mistaken in my notions of kingdoms, if you are not bound for Micomicon?" She, who had been well instructed in her cue, concluding, that she must answer in the affirmative, said, "Yes, signor, that is the place of my destination." "Then you must pass through our village, answered the curate, and take your route to Carthagena, where your highness may happily embark, and if you meet with no hurricane, but be favoured with a fair wind and smooth sea, in something less than nine years, you may get sight of that vast lake Meona, I mean Meotides, which is a little more than one hundred days journey from your majesty's kingdom." "Your worship must be mistaken, said the princess, for, two years are not yet elapsed, since I set out from thence; and though the weather has been always bad, I have already obtained what I so much longed after, namely, the sight of signor Don Quixote de la Mancha, whose fame reached mine ears, as soon as I landed in Spain, and induced me to come in quest of him, that I might solicit his courtesy, and trust my righteous cause to the valour of his invincible arm." "Enough, madam, said Don Quixote; spare your encomiums; for, I am an utter enemy to all sorts of adulation; and although you are not to be suspected of flattery, my chaste ears are always offended at that kind of discourse. What I can safely affirm, is this: Whether I have valour or not, here is he, valiant or pusillanimous, who will exert himself to the last drop of his blood, in the service of your highness. But, this apart; pray, Mr. Licentiate, what cause hath brought you hither alone, where I am really astonished to find you so ill attended, and so slightly clothed."

"In that particular you shall soon be satisfied, answered the curate: your worship must know that I and our friend Mr. Nicholas the barber, set out for Sevil, to recover a sum of money, which was sent to me by a relation of mine that went to the Indies, a good many years ago: no less than sixty thousand pieces of eight in good silver, which make no inconsiderable sum; and yesterday, passing through this place, we were set upon by four highwaymen, who stripped us even to our very whiskers, and that in such a manner as obliged the barber to wear artificial ones; and you may see, pointing to Cardenio, how they have despoiled the face of this young man who accompanied us; and the cream of the story is, that, according to the public report, which prevails in this neighbourhood, those who robbed us were galley-slaves, that, almost in this very place, were set at liberty by a man so valiant, as to let them all loose, in spite of the commissary and his guards. Without all doubt, he must have been deprived of his senses, or as great a villain as any of those he freed,

or

or some person void of all conscience and feeling, who could thus turn loose the wolf among the lambs, the fox among the poultry, and the flies among the honey-pots; defrauding justice, and rebelling against his king and rightful sovereign, by acting contrary to his just commands, in depriving the gallies of their hands, and putting in confusion the holy brotherhood, which hath continued so many years in undisturbed repose: in short, he hath done a deed that may tend to the perdition of his own soul as well as body."

Sancho had before, recounted to them, the adventure of the galley-slaves, which he had achieved with so much glory; and therefore, the curate urged it home, in order to observe the behaviour of Don Quixote, who changed colour at every word, without daring to own himself the deliverer of that worthy crew. "Those, added the priest, were the persons who rifled us; and God of his infinite mercy forgive the man who prevented the punishment they so richly deserved."

### C H A P. III.

The pleasant artifice practised to extricate our enamoured knight from the most rigorous penance he had imposed upon himself.

SCARCE had the curate pronounced this apostrophe, when Sancho blundered out, "Then, in good faith, Mr. Licentiate, he who performed this exploit was no other than my master; not, that I neglected to tell and advise him beforehand, to consider what he was about, and think what a sin it would be to let loose those who were going to the gallies, for the most grievous enormities." "You blockhead, cried Don Quixote incensed, it neither concerns, nor belongs to knights-errant, to examine whether the afflicted, the enslaved and oppressed, whom they meet on the highway, are reduced to these wretched circumstances by their crimes, or their misfortunes; our business is only to assist them in their distress, having an eye to their sufferings, and not to their demerits. I chanced to light upon a string of miserable and discontented objects, in behalf of whom, I acted according to the dictates of my religion, without minding the consequence; and he who takes umbrage at what I have done, saving the sacred character and honourable person of Mr. Licentiate, is, I insist upon it, utterly ignorant of chivalry, and lies like the base-born son of a whore; and this assertion I will make good with my sword, in the most ample manner." So saying, he fixed himself in the stirrups, and cocked his beaver; the barber's basin, which he mistook for Mambrino's helmet hanging useless at the saddle-bow, until the damage it received from the galley-slaves could be repaired.

Dorothea,

Dorothea, who was equally prudent and witty, understanding that every body present, except Sancho, diverted themselves with the extravagant humour of Don Quixote, was willing to have her share of the entertainment, and accordingly, perceiving that his indignation was raised, "Sir knight, said she, I hope your worship will remember your promise to me, by which, you are restricted from engaging in any other adventure, howsoever pressing it may be. Subdue your resentment therefore, and be assured, that had Mr. Licentiate known the galley-slaves were set at liberty by that invincible arm, he would have taken three stitches in his mouth, and bit his tongue three times, rather than have uttered one word that should redound to the prejudice of your worship." "That I swear I would have done, said the curate, ay, and have plucked off one of my whiskers to boot." "Madam, answered the knight, I am silent. I will restrain the just indignation which begins to rise within me, and proceed in the utmost peace and quiet, until I shall have fulfilled the boon I promised to your highness: but, in recompence for this my kind intention, I beseech you, if it be not too much trouble, to make me acquainted with the nature of your misfortune; and tell me the number, quality and condition of those persons on whom I am to take just satisfaction and full vengeance, in your behalf." "With all my heart, answered Dorothea, tho' I am afraid of tiring you with a recital of my woes and misfortunes." The knight assured her, that would be impossible; and she resumed, "Well then, be so good as to favour me with your attention."

At these words, Cardenio and the barber went up close to her, in order to hear what story she, in her discretion, would invent; and Sancho Panza, who was as much deceived as his master, followed their example. After she had seated herself firmly in the saddle, cleared her pipes with a hem or two, and made other preliminary gestures, she, with great sprightliness, thus began:

"In the first place, gentlemen, you must know, that my name is——" Here she made a full stop, having forgot how the curate had christened her: but, this defect was soon remedied; for, immediately conceiving the cause of her hesitation, he said, "It is no wonder, madam, that your highness is disturbed and disordered at the recollection of your misfortunes, which are often so great, as to impair the memory to such a degree, that the afflicted cannot even remember their own names: this effect they have had upon you, madam, who have forgot that you are the princess Micomicona legitimate heiress of the great kingdom of Micomicon. With the assistance of this hint, your highness will easily recal the whole thread of your story, to your sorrowful remembrance." "You are in the right, replied the damsel;

and I believe I shall be able to bring my true narrative to a happy conclusion, without further prompting.

The king, my father, whose name was Tinacrio the sage, forefaw, by his profound skill in magic, that my mother, who was called queen Xaramilla, would die before him, and that, as he himself must quit this life soon after, I should be left an helpless orphan : but, this consideration, he said, did not give him so much pain and confusion, as the certain foreknowledge, that a monstrous giant, lord of a great island that bordered on our kingdom, called Pandafilando of the gloomy aspect : (for, it is affirmed, that altho' his eyes are, like any other person's, placed in the middle of his face, he always looks askance, as if he squinted ; and this obliquity the malicious tyrant practises, in order to surprize and intimidate those who behold him :) I say, my father forefaw by his art, that this giant, informed of my being an orphan, would invade me with a great army, and deprive me of my whole kingdom, without leaving so much as a village for my retreat ; and that nothing could prevent this ruin and misfortune, unless I would consent to marry him : tho', so far as he could learn, it would never come into my thoughts, to make such an unequal match : and truly his conjecture was well founded ; for, it never entered into my head, to wed any giant, or other person, howsoever tall and unmeasurable he might be. My father, therefore, advised me, that when, after his death, I should get notice that Pandafilando was beginning to invade my kingdom ; I should not stay to put myself in a posture of defence, which would prove my destruction, but, freely leave him the possession of my realms, if I was resolved to avoid my own death, and to prevent the total destruction of my good and faithful subjects ; for, it would be impossible to defend myself against the infernal force of the giant : but, that I should immediately set out for Spain, where I would find a remedy for all my misfortunes, in the person of a certain knight-errant, whose fame would be, at that time, spread over the whole kingdom, and whose name, if I right remember, would be Don Hackfot or Kickfot." " Don Quixote, your ladyship would say, cried Sancho interposing, alias the knight of the rueful countenance." " The very same, replied Dorothea ; he told me moreover, that this knight would be a tall man, with a long meagre visage, and have on his right side, below his left shoulder, or thereabouts, a grey mole garnished with hairs, which bear some resemblance to a hog's bristles."

Don Quixote hearing this circumstance, said to his squire, " Come hither, son Sancho, and help me to strip ; for, I want to see if I am actually the knight of whom that sage king foretold." " Why should your worship strip ?" said Dorothea, " In order to satisfy myself about that mole which your royal father mentioned. " You need not give yourself that trouble, said Sancho,

Sancho, I know your worship hath just such a mole on the middle of your back-bone, which is a sign of strength." "That assurance is sufficient, resumed Dorothea, for, among friends, we ought not to stand upon trifles; and it is of very little consequence whether the mole be upon the shoulder or the back-bone; provided there is really such a mark on any part of your body, which is all composed of the same flesh: without doubt, my worthy father was right in every thing he prognosticated; and I have exactly followed his directions, in recommending my cause to the protection of signor Don Quixote, who is certainly the individual knight my father described; since his features correspond with his fame, which fills not only Spain, but, likewise the whole province of la Mancha\*; for, scarce had I landed at Ossuna, than hearing of his vast exploits, my mind suggested that he must be the very person I came in quest of." "How could your highness, said Don Quixote, land at Ossuna, which is not a sea-port."

Before she had time to make a reply, the curate took the task upon himself, saying, "The princess must mean, that after she landed at Malaga, Ossuna was the first place in which she heard of your worship." "That was my meaning, said Dorothea." "There is nothing more plain, answered the priest, and now, your majesty may proceed." "I have nothing more to say, resumed the princess, but that, at length, destiny has been so favourable to me, in my finding Don Quixote, I reckon, and look upon myself as queen again, and mistress of my whole realms, since out of his great courtesy and magnificence, he hath promised, in consequence of the boon I asked, to go with me, whithersoever I shall conduct him; and my intention is no other than to bring him face to face, with Pandafilando of the gloomy aspect, that he may, by putting him to death, restore me to the possession of that which he so unjustly usurps: and all this will literally happen, as it was prophesied by my worthy father Tinacrio the sage, who hath also left it written in Chaldean or Greek characters, for, I cannot read them, that if the knight mentioned in the prophecy should, after having cut off the giant's head, demand me in marriage, I must instantly accept of him as my lawful husband, without the least hesitation, and give him immediate possession of my person and throne."

Don Quixote hearing this circumstance, cried, "What d'ye think now, friend Sancho? d'ye hear what passes? and did not I tell thee as much? Observe now, whether or not, we have not a queen to marry, and a kingdom to govern." "Adzookers! it is even so, cried the squire, and plague upon the son of a whore who refuses to marry her, as soon as Mr. Pandahilado's

\* This is a diverting example of the Bathos, not unlike that anticlimax repeated in the art of sinking.

Nor Alps, nor Appenines could keep us out,  
Nor fortified redoubt!

weazond is cut: then, what a delicate morsel the queen is! odd! I wish all the fleas in my bed were such as she!" So saying, he cut a brace of capers, with marks of infinite satisfaction, then running up, and taking hold of the bridle of Dorothea's mule, made her halt, while he, falling down on his knees before her, besought the princess to let him kiss her hand, in token of his receiving her as his queen and mistress. Which of the company could behold the madness of the master, and the simplicity of the man, without laughing! Dorothea actually gave him her hand, and promised to make him a grandee, as soon as, by the favour of heaven, she should be restored to the possession of her kingdom; and he thanked her in terms which redoubled the mirth of all present.

"This, gentlemen, added the damsel, is my story, and nothing now remains, but to tell you, that of all the people who attended me when I left my own country, not one survives, except this well-bearded squire; all the rest having perished in a dreadful storm that overtook us after we were within sight of land: he and I miraculously floated to the shore on two planks; and indeed the whole course of my life, as you may have observed in my narration, hath been full of mystery and wonder. If I have in any thing exceeded the bounds of credibility, or been less accurate than I ought, I hope you will impute it to that cause assigned by the Licentiate, in the beginning of my story, namely, the continual and extraordinary affliction which often impairs the memory of the unfortunate." "But, mine shall not be impaired, most high and virtuous lady! said Don Quixote, by all the misfortunes I shall undergo in your service, let them be never so great and unprecedented: therefore, I again confirm the boon I have promised, and swear to attend you even to the world's end, until I get sight of that ferocious adversary of yours, whose proud head I hope to slice off, with the assistance of God, my own arm, and the edge of this (I will not say good) sword; thanks to Gines de \* Passamonte who run away with my own:" (this last apostrophe he muttered between his teeth, and then proceeded, aloud, saying) "And after I shall have deprived him of his head, and put you in peaceable possession of your throne, you shall be at free liberty to dispose of your person, according to your own will and pleasure; for, while my memory is engrossed, my will enslaved, and my understanding subjected to her who—I say no more, but, that it is impossible I should incline, or have the least thought towards marrying any other person, tho' she were a perfect phoenix."

Sancho was so much disgusted at this last declaration of his master, refusing the marriage, that raising his voice, he cried, with great indigna-

\* If the knight was robbed of his own sword by Gines; where did he find that which he wore on this occasion?



tion, " Signor Don Quixote, I vow and swear your worship is crazy, else you would never boggle at marrying such a high-born princess as this! Do you imagine that fortune will offer such good luck at every turn, as she now presents? or pray, do you think my lady Dulcinea more handsome than the princess? I am sure she is not half so beautiful, and will even venture to say, that she is not worthy to tie her majesty's shoe-strings. How the plague shall I ever obtain the earldom I expect, if your worship goes thus a fishing for mushrooms at sea? Marry her, marry her, in the devil's name, without much ado; lay hold on this kingdom that drops, as it were, into your hand; and, after your coronation, make me a marquis or lord lieutenant, and then the devil, if he will, may run away with the rest."

Don Quixote was enraged, when he heard such blasphemies uttered against his mistress Dulcinea, and lifting up his lance, without speaking a syllable, or giving the least notice of his intention, discharged two such hearty blows upon the squire, as brought him instantly to the ground, and had not Dorothea called aloud, and begged of him to forbear, would certainly have murdered poor Sancho on the spot. " Do you think, (said he, after some pause) you plebeian scoundrel, that I will always stand with my hands in my pockets; and that there is nothing to be done, but for you to misbehave, and for me to forgive you? I'll teach you better manners, you excommunicated rascal, for such to be sure you are, else you would not wag your tongue against the peerless Dulcinea. Don't you know, you grovelling beggarly villain, that were it not for the valour with which she inspires this arm, I should not have enough to kill a flea? Tell me, you viperish scoffer, what you think hath won this kingdom, cut off the giant's head, and made you a marquis, for all this I look upon as already done and determined? Is it not the valour of Dulcinea that makes use of my arm as the instrument of her exploits? In me she fights and overcomes; in her I live, breathe, and have my being. O thou whoreson, ungrateful ruffian, who see'st thyself raised from the dust of the earth, to the rank of nobility, and repayest the obligation by flandering thy benefactors."

Sancho, was not so roughly handled but he heard every syllable that his master spoke, and starting up as nimbly as he could, ran behind Dorothea's palfrey, from whence, he said to the knight, " Pray, Sir, if your worship is determined against marrying this great princess, is it not plain, that the kingdom cannot be yours; and if that be the case, what favours can you bestow upon me? This is what I complain of. I would your worship would, once for all, marry this queen, who is, as it were, rained down from heaven upon us; and then you may converse with my lady Dulcinea, according to the custom of some kings who keep concubines. As to the affair of beauty, I will not intermeddle, but, if the truth may be told, I like them

them both very well, tho' I never saw my lady Dulcinea in my life." "How! not seen her? blasphemous traitor! cried Don Quixote; have you not just brought a message from her?" "I say, answered Sancho, that when I saw her, I had not an opportunity of examining the particulars of her beauty and good qualities one by one; but altogether, she pleased me very much." "Now, Sancho, said Don Quixote, I exculpate thee, and thou must forgive what I did in my wrath; for, no man can command the first emotions of his passion." "That I can plainly perceive, answered the squire, and therefore, the desire of speaking is always the first motion in me; and truly, when once my tongue begins to itch, I cannot for my blood keep it within my teeth." "For all that, friend Sancho, said the knight, I would have you consider before you speak; for, tho' the pitcher goes often to the well—I need not mention what follows:" "In good time, replied the squire, there is a God above, who sees the snare, and will judge which of us is most to blame; I in speaking, or your worship in doing evil." "Let there be no more of this, Sancho, said Dorothea, but run and kiss your master's hand, and beg his pardon; and henceforth, set a better guard upon your praise, and disparagement: above all things, beware of saying any thing to the prejudice of that lady Tobosa, whom I know by nothing else than my inclination to serve her: and if you put your trust in God, you will not fail of acquiring some estate, by which you will live like a prince."

Sancho took her advice, and, hanging his head, went to beg a kiss of his master's hand, which was granted with great solemnity of deportment; nay, the knight gave him his blessing also, desiring he would attend him while he rode on a little before the rest of the company, that he might have a better opportunity of asking a few questions, and conversing with him about affairs of the utmost importance. Sancho obeyed the order, and the two having advanced a good way before the rest, "Since thy return, said Don Quixote, I have had neither time nor convenience, to enquire about many particular circumstances of thy embassy, with the answer thou hast brought: and now, that fortune favours us with a fit opportunity, thou must not deny me the pleasure I shall receive from thy agreeable information." "Your worship, answered the squire, may ask as many questions as you please: I hope my answers will make the end answer the beginning of your content; but, I intreat your worship, dear Sir, not to be so revengeful for the future: "Why do'st thou call me revengeful," said the knight? "Because, resumed the squire, those blows I was just now honoured with, were more owing to the quarrel the devil picked between us, t'other night, than to any thing I said against my lady Dulcinea, whom I love and reverence as a relic, tho' she be not one, merely, because she appertains to your worship." "No more of these reflexions, on thy  
life,

life, said Don Quixote; else thou wilt give me fresh umbrage: I freely forgave thee at that time, and thou knowest, that, according to the common observation, Every new fault, deserves a new penance."

While this conversation passed between them, they perceived a man riding towards them on an ass; and, when he came a little nearer, discerned him to be a gypsie: but, Sancho Panza, who sent his soul abroad with his eyes, to examine every ass that appeared, no sooner beheld the rider, than he recognised Gines de Passamonte, and by the thread of the gypsie discovered the clue of his own ass; for, it was actually Dapple that carried Passamonte, who, for the better convenience of selling the beast, had disguised himself in the dress of a gypsie, whose language, with many others, he could speak as fluently as his mother tongue. Sancho saw and recollected him, and no sooner had he seen and recollected him, than he bellowed forth, "Ah villain Ginesillo! restore my goods—give me back the comfort of my life—rob me not of my heart's content—give me my ass—give me my darling—fly, thief—skip, robber; and seek not to preserve that which is none of thy own."

There was no need of all this exclamation and reproach; for, Gines leaped off at the first word, and at a pretty round trot, which might have passed for a gallop, made the best of his way, and vanished in a twinkling. Sancho running to his ass, embraced it with great affection, saying, "How hast thou been, my dear Dapple? my trusty companion and joy of my eyes!" Then kissed and caressed it as if it had been a christian; while Dapple very peaceably received these demonstrations of love and kindness, without answering one word. The whole company wished him joy of his recovery; particularly Don Quixote, who assured him, that altho' he had retrieved Dapple, the promise of the three colts should not be annulled; and Sancho thanked him for his generosity.

While the master and man were conversing by themselves, the curate told Dorothea, that she had behaved with great discretion in her story, both with regard to the matter and brevity of it, as well as the resemblance it bore to those legends that are found in books of chivalry. She observed that she had employed a good part of her leisure time in reading such romances, but, being ignorant of the situation of different provinces and sea-ports, she had spoke at random, when she mentioned her landing at Ossuna." "I thought so, resumed the priest, and made all haste to adjust matters by what I said: but, is it not very strange, to see with what facility this poor unfortunate gentleman swallows all those lies and fictions, meerly, because they are delivered in the stile and manner of his nonsensical books?" "So very strange and singular, said Cardenio, that I question if there be any genius whatever so fertile as to frame such a character by the meer force of invention:"

vention:" "And what is a very remarkable circumstance, replied the curate, waving those extravagancies which this worthy gentleman utters upon the subject of his disorder, he can discourse upon other topics with surprizing ability, and appears to be a man of great knowledge and intellects: so that, if you do not touch upon chivalry, his hearers must look upon him as a person of excellent understanding.

While they were engaged in this conversation, Don Quixote proceeded in his with Sancho, to whom he said, "Come, friend Sancho, let us forget what is past, with regard to animosity, and tell me, without any ingredient of rancour and resentment, where and how you found Dulcinea? What was she doing? What did she say? What answer did she make? How did she look when she read my letter? Who transcribed it for her perusal? These particulars, and every other circumstance of the affair, which you think worthy to be known, asked and answered, I expect you will explain, without seeking to increase my pleasure with false additions, much less to diminish it by malicious omission." "Signor, answered Sancho, if the truth must be told, no body transcribed the letter; because I had no letter to be transcribed." "That is very true, replied the knight; for, two days after thy departure, I found the pocket-book in which it was written; a circumstance that gave me infinite pain, as I could not conceive what thou wouldst do, when the mistake should appear; indeed I always imagined thou wouldst have returned hither immediately upon the discovery." "That would certainly have been the case, said the squire, if, when your worship read it to me, I had not retained it in my memory, so perfect as to be able to dictate it to a parish clerk, who, as I repeated, transcribed it so exactly, that he said, in all the days of his life, tho' he had read many letters of excommunication, he had never seen such a clever letter as yours." "And dost thou still retain it," said Don Quixote. "No, Sir, replied Sancho. For, after I had repeated it to the clerk, I thought there was no further occasion to retain it, and therefore let it slip out of my remembrance; or, if any part remains, it is that of the subterrene—I mean sovereign lady, and the conclusion, Yours till death, the knight of the rueful countenance; with about three hundred souls, and lives, and pigfnies, which I set down in the middle."

## C H A P. IV.

The savoury conversation that passed between Don Quixote and his squire Sancho Panza ; with many other incidents.

“ **A**LL this is pretty well ; proceed, said Don Quixote : how was that queen of beauty employed, when you arrived ? I dare say, you found her stringing pearls, or embroidering some device for this her captive knight, with threads of gold.” “ No, truly, answered the squire ; I found her winnowing two bushels of wheat, in the yard.” “ Then you may depend upon it, resumed the knight, the grains of that wheat, were converted into pearls by the touch of her hand : and didst thou observe, my friend, whether it was of the finer or common sort ?” “ Why neither, said Sancho, it seemed to be as it were, red wheat.” “ But, since it was winnowed by her fair hands, answered Don Quixote, I dare affirm, it will make the whitest bread in Spain. Go on with thy information. When the letter was delivered did she not kiss it, and place it upon the crown of her head, in token of respect ? did she not perform some ceremony worthy of the sender ? pray how did she receive it ?” “ When I presented the letter, answered Sancho, she was in a main hurry, winnowing a large heap of wheat that was in her sieve ; and said to me, Friend, lay down the letter on that sack ; for I can’t pretend to read it, until I have made an end of my work.” “ Discreet lady ! cried the knight ; her intention certainly was to read it at her leisure, that she might recreate herself with the contents.—Proceed, Sancho—and while she was thus employed, what conversation passed between you ? what questions did she ask concerning me ? and what answers didst thou make ? Recount the whole, without leaving one syllable untold.”

“ She asked me no questions, replied the squire ; but, I told her, how I had left your worship doing penance for love of her, skipping among those rocks, naked from the waste, upwards, like a meer savage, sleeping on the bare ground ; neglecting to eat your food like a christian, or to comb your beard like a decent man, but whining, and weeping, and cursing your fortune.” “ If you said I cursed my fortune, you misrepresented me, said Don Quixote ; for, I bless my fate, and will bless it all the days of my life, for having made me worthy to aspire to the love of such an high lady as Dulcinea del Toboso.” “ High indeed ! answered Sancho, for, in faith she is a good hand taller than I am.” “ How, hast thou been measured with her, Sancho ?” said the knight. “ I’ll tell you how, answered the squire ; while I was helping her to lay a load of corn upon

an afs, we came fo clofe together, that I could eafily perceive ſhe over-topped me by a full hand." " That may be true, ſaid Don Quixote; tho' her tallneſs is accompanied and adorned by a myriad of mental graces. But, this you will not deny, Sancho, that while you was fo near her, your noſtrils were regaled by a ſabæan odour, an aromatic fragrance, a certain delicious ſenſation, for which there is no name. I mean a ſcent, a perfume, ſuch as fills the ſhop of ſome curious glover." " All that I can ſay, answered Sancho, is, that I was ſenſible of a ſort of rammish ſmell, which I believe, was owing to her being in a muck ſweat with hard work." " That is impoſſible, cried the knight; thy ſenſe muſt have been depraved; or that ſmell muſt have proceeded from thy own body; for, I am perfectly well acquainted with the odour of that roſe among briars, that lilly of the valley, that liquid amber." " It may be ſo, ſaid Sancho: I have often known ſuch ſmells come from myſelf, as then ſeemed to come from my lady Dulcinea: but that is not to be wondered at; becauſe, as the ſaying is, every fiend may ſtink of brimſtone." " Well then, added Don Quixote, ſhe hath now winnowed the wheat, and ſent it to the mill, how did ſhe behave after ſhe had read my letter." " The letter, answered Sancho, was not read at all: for, as ſhe could neither read nor write, ſhe choſe to rend and tear it to pieces, rather than give it to any body who might publiſh her ſecrets, in the village; ſaying, ſhe was very well ſatiſfied with the information I gave her, by word of mouth, concerning your worſhip's love for her, and the extraordinary penance I left you doing on her account. Finally, ſhe bad me tell you, that ſhe kiſſed your worſhip's hands, being much more deſirous of ſeeing than writing to you, and therefore ſhe intreated and commanded your worſhip, by theſe preſents, to quit this deſart, and leave off playing the fool, and forthwith ſet out on your journey to Toboſo, provided that ſomething elſe of greater importance ſhould not happen; for, ſhe longed very much for a fight of your worſhip: and laughed heartily when I told her, that you had taken the name of the knight of the rueful countenance. When I aſked, if the Biſcayan had been lately with her, ſhe answered, Yes; and that he was very much of a gentleman: but, when I inquired about the galley-ſlaves, ſhe ſaid, ſhe had as yet, ſeen none of them."

" Hitherto, all goes well, ſaid the knight; but, pray tell me, what jewel ſhe gave you at parting, for the news you had brought of me her lover; for, it is an ancient practice and cuſtom among knights-errant and their miſtreſſes, to beſtow upon their ſquires, damſels or dwarfs, who bring them news of each other, ſome rich jewel, as a reward and acknowledgment for the meſſage." " It may be ſo, ſaid Sancho, and I think it an excellent cuſtom; but, that muſt have been in times paſt: for, in this

age, it is customary to give nothing but a piece of bread and cheese, which was all the present I received from my lady Dulcinea, who reached it over the yard wall, when I took my leave; by this token, that the cheese was made of ewe's milk." "She is liberal to excess, said the knight; and if she omitted giving thee a jewel, it must certainly have been owing to her not having any by her; but all in good time\*: I shall see her soon, and then every thing will be set to rights. Yet, there is one thing, Sancho, which overwhelms me with astonishment. You seem to have travelled thro' the air; for, you have spent little more than three days in your journey; though Toboso is more than thirty leagues distant from hence. From this extraordinary expedition, I conjecture, that the sage, who is my friend, and interests himself in my affairs, and such there certainly is, and must be, else I should be no true knight-errant: I say, this enchanter must have assisted thee in thy journey, tho' thou didst not perceive it; for, some there are of that class, who will take up a knight-errant while he is asleep in his bed, and without his knowing any thing of the matter, he shall awake next morning in some place more than a thousand leagues from the house where he took up his lodging the night before; and without such sudden transportations, it would be impossible for knights to succour each other in distress; as they frequently do. A knight-errant, for example, happens to be fighting in the deserts of Armenia, with some fierce dragon, dreadful goblin, or rival knight; and being worsted, and just at the point of being slain, behold, when he least expects it, there suddenly appears in a cloud or fiery chariot, another knight, a friend of his, who, but a minute before, resided in England, and who assists and delivers him from death: then that same knight, finds himself supping at his ease, in his own house, which is often two or three thousand leagues from the field of battle: and all this is effected by the industry and art of sage enchanters, who take those valiant knights under their protection.

Wherefore, friend Sancho, I can easily believe, that thou hast in so little time, travelled from hence to Toboso and back again; because, as I have already observed, some friendly sage must have carried thee through the air, though thou didst not perceive it." "Not unlikely, replied the squire, for, in good faith, Rozinante went like a gypsy's ass, with quicksilver in his ears." "With quicksilver, cried the knight; ay, and a legion of demons to boot, who are beings that travel themselves, and make other people travel as fast as they please, without tiring.

\* Literally, Sleeves are good even after Easter, i. e. Though a good thing comes late, it is never unreasonable.

But, waving this subject, how do'st thou think I ought to regulate my conduct, now that my mistress commands me to appear in her presence! for, although I find myself obliged to comply with her orders, I am utterly incapacitated by the boon I have granted to this princess: and, I am bound, by the laws of chivalry, to fulfil my promise, before I indulge my inclination. On one hand, I am persecuted and harrassed by the desire of seeing Dulcinea; on the other, I am incited and invited by my honour, and the glory I shall acquire in this enterprize. I am therefore determined to travel with all expedition, until I arrive at the place where the giant resides, and when I shall have restored the princess to the peaceful possession of her kingdom, after having shortned the usurper by the head, I will return to the rays of that beauty which enlightens my thoughts; and excuse myself in such a manner as to obtain her forgiveness, as she will plainly perceive, that my delay tended to the increase of her glory and fame: seeing all my reputation in arms, past, present or to come, proceeds from her favour and inspiration." "Lord! cried Sancho, how your worship is concerned about a parcel of potsheards. Pray tell me, sir, do you intend to make this journey for nothing; and to let such a rich and noble marriage as this slip through your fingers, while the dowry is no less than a kingdom, which, I have actually heard, is more than twenty thousand leagues, round, plentifully stored with every thing that is needful for the sustenance of mortal man, and larger than Portugal and Castile put together? Hold your tongue, a God's name, and take shame to yourself, for what you have said: pardon my freedom, take my advice, and marry in the first place where we can find a curate; or make use of our friend the licentiate, who will buckle you handsomely. Take notice, therefore, that I am of an age to give good counsel, and this that I offer will fit you to a hair; for, a bird in hand is worth two in the bush; and, as the saying is, He that hath good in his view, and yet will not evil eschew, his folly deserveth to rue."

"Sancho, answered Don Quixote, if thou adviseest me to marry, with a view of seeing me king, after I shall have killed the giant, that I may have an opportunity of rewarding thee with what I have promised, thou must know, that I can easily gratify thy wishes, without wedding the princess; for, before I engage in the combat, I will covenant, that provided I come off conqueror, and decline the marriage, I shall have it in my power to dispose of one part of the kingdom, as I shall think proper; and to whom should I give it but to thee?" "That is very plain, replied the squire; but, I beseech your worship to make choice of the sea-coast, because, if I should happen to dislike the country, I may ship off my black slaves, and sell them as I have already hinted. Wherefore, without troubling



bling yourself, at present, about my lady Dulcinea, I would have you go and slay the giant, and conclude that affair, from which, before God! we shall certainly reap much honour and advantage." "I tell thee, Sancho, said Don Quixote, thou art in the right, and I will follow thy advice, so far as it regards my attendance upon the princess, before I visit Dulcinea. But, say not a word to any body, even those of our company not excepted, of this conversation; for, as she is so reserved and careful of concealing her sentiments, it would be inexcusable in me, if I, or any other thro' my means, should disclose them." "Since that is the case, said the squire, why does your worship command all those that are vanquished by your arm, to go and present themselves before my lady Dulcinea? You may as well give it under your hand, that you are her true and trusty lover: for, if you compel them to fall upon their knees before her, and say they are sent by your worship, to pay homage to her, how is it possible, that the sentiments of either you or her can be concealed?"

"What an ignorant and simple fellow thou art! resumed the knight, canst thou not see that all this redounds to her praise and exaltation?--- Thou must know, that in our stile of chivalry, it is deemed a great honour for a lady to be admired by a great many knights, whose wishes extend no farther than to the desire of serving her for her own sake, without expecting any other reward for their great and manifold services, than the glory of being admitted into the number of her knights." "In like manner, said Sancho, I have heard a priest in the pulpit, observe, that we must love our Saviour for his own sake, without being moved thereto, by any fear of punishment or hopes of applause: though, for my own part, I am inclined to love and serve him, on account of his power." "Now, the devil take the clown! cried Don Quixote, he sometimes makes such shrewd observations, that one would think he had actually studied!" "And yet, upon my conscience, answered the squire, I know not so much as my letters." At that instant, master Nicholas calling aloud to them, to stop a little, that the rest might have time to drink at a spring which they found in the way; Don Quixote turned back, to the no small satisfaction of Sancho, who was already tired with telling lies, and afraid of being detected by his master; for, although he knew that Dulcinea was the daughter of a peasant at Toboso, he had never seen her in his life. By this time Cardenio had put on the cloaths which Dorothea wore, when they found her, and though they were none of the most elegant, he made a much better figure than with his tattered dress, which he now threw away. The whole company sat down by the spring, where, while they appeased the keen hunger that possessed them all, with what the curate had brought from the inn, a lad chanced to pass that way, who, looking earnestly at

the

the whole company, at length ran up to Don Quixote, and embracing his knees, began to blubber most heartily, saying, " Ah! signor, don't you know me? look at me again; I am that same individual young man, called Andrew, whom your worship delivered from the tree to which I was tied." " The knight recollected his features, and taking him by the hand, addressed himself to the company, in these words :

" That you may see of what importance knight-errantry is, to redress the wrongs and grievances which are daily committed by the insolent and wicked wretches who live upon this earth, know, that as I passed by a wood some time ago, I heard the screams and woeful cries of some afflicted creature, in the utmost distress; and, in consequence of my oath and obligation, riding towards the place from which the lamentation seemed to come, I found this very young man tied to an oak tree; and, I am glad from my soul, that he is here in person, to bear witness to the truth. I say, he was bound to an oak, naked from the waist, upwards; and, a peasant, who, I afterwards understood, was his master, stood scourging him with the reins of a bridle. When I enquired into the cause of this barbarous treatment, the rustic answered, that he only whipped his own servant, for being guilty of some neglect that savoured more of knavishness than simplicity. The boy protested he had done nothing but asked his wages: to this affirmation, the master replied, by some asseverations which I have forgot, but, though I heard his excuses, I would not admit of them. In short, I ordered the peasant to untie the youth, and made him swear, that he would carry him home, and pay him his wages in ready cash, nay, and pay him in rials that should be perfumed. Is not this literally true, son Andrew? didst thou not observe, with what authority I commanded, and with what humility he promised to comply with every thing that I imposed, suggested and desired? Answer without perturbation, or doubt, and tell this honourable company what passed, that they may see, and be convinced, of what use it is, as I said, to have knights-errant continually upon duty.

" All that your worship hath told, is very true, answered the young man; but, the end of the business was quite the reverse of what you imagined." " How! the reverse! cried the knight; has not the peasant paid thee thy wages?" " Far from paying me my wages, said Andrew, your worship was no sooner out of the wood, and we by ourselves again, than he bound me a second time, to the same oak, and lashed me so severely, that I remained like St. Bartholomew, flead alive; and, at every stripe, he jeered and scoffed and made game of your worship in such a manner, that if it had not been for the excessive pain I felt, I could not have refrained from laughing at what he said. In short, he treated me so cruelly, that

'till

'till this very day, I have been in the hospital, for the cure of the wounds I received from that mischievous farmer : and, truly your worship was the cause of all that I suffered ; for, if you had followed your own road, without going where nobody called you, or meddling with other people's affairs, my master would have been satisfied with giving me a cool dozen or two, and then loosed and paid me my due. But, when your worship abused him so unseasonably, and called him so many bad names, his choler was inflamed, and as he could not be revenged upon you, as soon as you was gone, he discharged the storm of his wrath upon me, in such a manner, that I shall never be my own man again."

" The misfortune, said the knight, was in my leaving him, before I had seen thee paid ; for, I ought to have known, by long experience, that no peasant will keep his word, if he thinks it his interest to break it. But, thou mayst remember, Andrew, that I swore, if he did not perform his promise, I would return, and search for him, until he should be found, even if he should hide himself in the whale's belly." " Very true, replied Andrew ; but that threat signifies nothing." " Thou shalt presently see what it signifies, resumed Don Quixote, who getting up hastily, ordered Sancho to bridle Rozinante, who was following their example, in refreshing himself with grass.

When Dorothea asked what he intended to do, he replied, he was going in quest of the peasant, to chastise him for his villainous behaviour, and make him pay Andrew to the last farthing, in despite and defiance of all the rustics upon earth." To this declaration, she answered, by desiring him to consider that, according to the promised boon, he could not engage in any enterprize, until her affair should be finished ; and since this stipulation was known to himself better than to any other person, she intreated him to repress his resentment, till his return from her kingdom. " That is very true, resumed the knight, and Andrew must wait with patience for my return, as your majesty observes ; but, I repeat my oath and my promise, never to desist until I shall have seen his wages paid, and his injuries revenged." " I don't trust to those oaths, said Andrew, and would rather, at present, have wherewithal to bear my expences to Sevil, than all the revenge in the world : be so good, if you have any victuals, to give me something to eat upon my journey, and the Lord be with your worship and all knights-errant, who, I wish, may always err as much in their own affairs, as they have done in mine." Sancho, taking a luncheon of bread and cheese from the store, gave it to the young man, saying, " Here, brother Andrew, take this : and now we have all shared in your misfortune." When Andrew asked, what share of it had fallen to him, he replied, " That share of bread

bread and cheefe which I have given you: and God knows whether I shall not feel the los of it; for, you must know, friend, that we squires of knights-errant are subject to many a hungry belly, with other misfortunes which are more easily felt than described."

Andrew accepted of the bread and cheefe, and seeing that no body offered him any thing else, made his bows, and as the saying is, took his foot in his \* hand. True it is, before he departed, he addressed himself to Don Quixote, saying, "For the love of God! Sir knight-errant, if ever you meet me again, spare yourself the trouble of coming to my assistance, even tho' you should see me cut into minced meat, but leave me to my misfortune, which cannot be so great, but that it may be increased by the succour of your worship, whom God confound, together with all the knights-errant that ever were born." Don Quixote started up, in order to chastise him, but, he ran away with such nimbleness, that no body attempted to pursue him; and the knight was so ashamed of his exploit, that the company were at great pains to contain their laughter, to prevent his being quite out of countenance.

#### C H A P. V.

Which treats of what happened to Don Quixote and his company at the inn.

**T**HEIR sumptuous meal being ended, they saddled their beasts, and without meeting any thing worthy of mention, arrived next day at the very inn which was so much the dread and terror of Sancho; but, unwilling as he was to enter, he could not avoid going into it. The innkeeper, his wife, daughter and Maritornes, seeing Don Quixote and Sancho at the gate, went out to receive them, with great demonstrations of joy; and the knight returned their compliments with grave deportment and solemn approbation, desiring them to prepare a better bed for him than that which he had occupied before. To this demand, the landlady answered, that, provided he would pay better than he did before, he should lye like a prince: he promised to see her satisfied, and they immediately made up a tolerable bed, in the same garret where he had formerly lodged, in which, he laid himself down, very much disordered, both in body and mind. He was no sooner locked up in his chamber, than the landlady attacked the barber, and seizing him by the beard, cried, By my faith! you shall no longer use my tail for a beard. Give me my tail, I say, for, it is a shame to see how my husband's thing is bandied about for want of it; I mean the comb that he

\* Literally, Took the road in his hands,

used to stick in my tail." But, the barber would not part with it, for all her tugging, until the priest desired him to restore it; because there was no further occasion for the disguise, as he might now appear in his own shape, and tell the knight, that after he had been robbed by the galley-slaves, he had fled to that inn; and if he should enquire for the princess's gentleman usher, they would tell him, she had dispatched him away before her, to advertise her friends and subjects, that she was upon the road, accompanied by the deliverer of them all. Thus satisfied, the barber willingly restored the landlady's tail, and every thing else they had borrowed, with a view of disengaging Don Quixote from the mountain; and all the people of the inn were astonished at the beauty of Dorothea, as also at the genteel mien of the swain Cardenio. The curate ordered them to get ready something to eat; and the innkeeper, in hope of being well paid, dressed, with all dispatch, a pretty reasonable dinner, but, they did not think proper to waken Don Quixote, who, they believed, stood at that time more in need of sleep than of food.

The discourse at table, in presence of the innkeeper, his wife, daughter, Maritornes, and all the other lodgers, happening to turn upon the uncommon madness of the knight, and the condition in which they found him; the hostess recounted to them, what had happened in her house, between him and the carrier; then looking round the room, and seeing Sancho was not present, she told the whole story of the blanketting, to the no small entertainment of the company. The curate observing that Don Quixote's understanding was disordered by the books of chivalry he had read, the innkeeper replied, "I cannot conceive how that is possible; for, really, in my opinion, they are the best reading in the world: I have now in my custody two or three of them, together with some other papers, which, I verily believe, have preserved not only my life, but also that of many others; for, in harvest time, a great number of reapers come hither, to pass the heat of the day; and there being always, one among them, who can read, he takes up a book, and we, to the number of thirty or more, forming a ring about him, listen with such pleasure, as were enough to make an old man grow young again; at least, I can say for myself, when I hear him read of those furious and terrible strokes that have been given by certain knights, I am seized with the desire of being at it myself; and could listen to such stories whole nights and days without ceasing." "I wish you would, with all my heart, replied the wife; for, I am sure, I never enjoy a quiet minute in the house, except when they are reading, and then you are so bamboozled with what you hear, you forget to scold for that time." "That is the very truth of the matter, said Maritornes; in good faith, I myself am hugely diverted, when I hear those things; they are so clever, especially when they

tell as how yon t'other lady lay among orange trees, in the embraces of her knight, while a duenna half dead with envy and surprize, kept sentry over them—odd! all these things make my chops water."

"And what is your opinion of the matter, my young mistress, said the priest to the innkeeper's daughter?" "Truly, signor, I don't well know, she replied; but, listen among the rest, and really, tho' I do not understand it, I am pleased with what I hear: yet, I take no delight in those strokes that my father loves; but, in the lamentations made by the knights, when they are absent from their mistresses, which in good sooth, often make me weep with compassion." "Then you would soon give them relief, if they mourned for you, my pretty maid, said Dorothea?" "I don't know what I should do, answered the girl; but, this I know, that some of those ladies are so cruel, their knights call them lions, tygers, and a thousand other reproachful names. Jesus! I can't conceive what sort of folks those must be, who are so hard-hearted and unconscionable as to let a man of honour die, or lose his senses, rather than take the least notice of him: why should they be so coy? if their suitors court them in an honest way, let them marry, and that is all the men desire." "Hold your peace, child, said the landlady; methinks, you are too well acquainted with these things: young maidens, like you, should neither know nor speak so much." The daughter said, as the gentleman asked her the question, she could do no less than answer him; and the curate demanding a sight of the books, "With all my heart," replied the innkeeper, who going to his own chamber, brought out an old portmanteau secured with a chain, which being opened, the priest found in it three large volumes, and some manuscripts written in a very fair character.

The first book they opened appeared to be Don Cirongilio of Thrace, the second, Felixmarte of Hyrcania, and the third was the history of that great captain Gonçalo Hernandez de Cordova, with the life of Diego Garcia de Paredes. The curate having read the titles of the two first, turned to the barber, saying, "We now want our friends the housekeeper and cousin." "Not at all, answered Mr. Nicholas, I myself can convey them to the yard, or rather to the chimney, where there is actually a special good fire." "What! you intend to burn these books, then, said the innkeeper?" "Only these two, answered the curate, pointing to Don Cirongilio and Felixmarte." "I suppose then, resumed the landlord, my books are heretic and flegmatic?" "You mean schismatic, honest friend, and not flegmatic, said the barber." "Even so, replied the landlord; but, if any of them be burnt, let it be the history of that great captain, together with Diego Garcia; for, I would rather suffer you to commit my son to the flames, than to burn e'er a one of the rest." "Heark ye, brother, said the curate, these

these two books are stuffed with lies, vanity and extravagance; but, that of the great captain is a true history, containing the exploits of Gonçalo Hernandez de Cordova, who, by his numerous and valiant achievements, acquired all the world over, the epithet of the great captain, a renowned and splendid appellation, merited by him alone: and that Diego Garcia de Paredes was a noble cavalier, born in the city of Truxillo in Estremadura, a most valiant soldier, and endowed with such bodily strength, that with a single finger, he could stop a mill-wheel in the heat of its motion; and being once posted at one end of a bridge, with a two-handed sword, he alone prevented a vast army from passing over it: he performed a great many actions of the same kind, which he himself hath recounted with all the modesty of a gentleman who writes his own memoirs; whereas, had they been committed to writing, by any other free and dispassionate author, they would have eclipsed all the Hectors, Achillefes and Orlandos that ever lived." "You may tell such stuff to my grannam, said the innkeeper. Lord! how you are surpris'd at the stopping of a mill-wheel! before God! I advise your worship to read, as I have done, the history of Felixmarte of Hyrcania, who, with a single backstroke, cut five giants thro' the middle, as easily as if they had been made of beans, like the figures with which the boys divert themselves. Another time, he engaged a most infinite and powerful army, consisting of a million and six hundred thousand soldiers, all armed capapee, whom he totally routed, as if they had been flocks of sheep. Then what shall we say of the most excellent Don Cirongilio of Thrace, who was so valiant and couragious, as may be seen in the book of his history, that while he was sailing on a river, a fiery serpent rose above the water, which he no sooner saw, than leaping on its back, he fastened himself astride upon its scaly shoulders, and seized it by the throat, with both hands, so forcibly, that the serpent feeling itself well nigh strangled, could find no other remedy but to dive to the bottom, with the knight, who would not quit his hold, and when he had descended a great way, he found himself in a palace situated in the midst of a garden that was wonderfully pleasant; and then the serpent turned itself into an ancient man, who told him such things as you would rejoice to hear—Say no more, signor, if you was to hear it, you would run stark mad for joy—so that, a fig for your great captain, and that same Diego Garcia you talk of."

Dorothea hearing this harrangue, whispered to Cardenio, "Our host wants not much to make the second edition of Don Quixote." "I think so too, answered Cardenio; for, by his discourse, he seems to take it for granted, that every thing which is recounted in these books, is neither more nor less than the truth; and all the capuchins in Spain will not be able to alter his belief." "Consider, brother, resumed the curate, that there never

ver was upon earth, such a person as Felixmarte of Hyrcania, nor Don Cirongilio of Thrace, nor any other of such knights as are celebrated in books of chivalry. The whole is a fiction composed by idle persons of genius, for the very purpose you mentioned, namely pastime, which was the aim of your reapers; for, I swear to you, no such knights ever existed, nor were any such exploits and extravagancies ever performed in this world." "You must throw that bone to some other dog, replied the landlord, as if I did not know that two and three make five; or where my own shoe pinches. Your worship must not think to feed me with pap, for, egad I am no such suckling: a good joke, faith! You would make me believe that all the contents of these books are madness and lies, altho' they are printed by licence from the king's council; as if they were persons who would wink at the printing of such lies, battles and enchantments as turn people's brains." "Friend, replied the curate, I have already told you, that they are designed for the amusement of our idle hours; and as in every well-governed commonwealth, the games of chess, billiards and tennis, are licensed for the entertainment of those who neither can nor ought to work; in like manner, those books are allowed to be printed; on the supposition, that no body is so ignorant as to believe a syllable of what they contain; and if I was now permitted, or the company required it, I could give some hints towards the improvement of books of chivalry, which perhaps might be both serviceable and entertaining; but, I hope, the time will come, when I may have an opportunity of imparting my suggestions to those who can convert them to general use: mean while, Mr. Publican, you may depend upon the truth of what I have said; take your books away, and settle the affair of their truth or falsehood, just as your own comprehension will permit; much good may they do you, and God grant that you may never halt on the same foot of which your lodger Don Quixote is lame." "I hope, answered the innkeeper, I shall never be mad enough to turn knight-errant, as I can easily perceive that the customs now-a-days are quite different from those in times past, when, as it is reported, those famous heroes travelled about the world."

Sancho, who had come into the room, about the middle of this conversation, was very much confounded and perplexed, when he heard them observe, that there was no such thing as knight-errantry in the present age, and that all the books of chivalry were filled with extravagance and fiction: he therefore determined within himself, to wait the issue of his master's last undertaking; and if it should not succeed as happily as he expected, to leave him, and return, with his wife and children, to his former labour.

When the innkeeper took up the portmanteau with the books, in order to carry them away, "Stay, said the curate, until I examine these papers which



which are written in such a fair character." The landlord accordingly pulled out a manuscript, consisting of eight sheets of paper, intitled, in large letters, \* The novel of the Impertinent Curiosity. The priest having read three or four lines, within himself, said, "Really the title of this novel pleases me so much, that I have a strong inclination, to peruse the whole." To this observation, the innkeeper replied, "Then your reverence may read it aloud; for, you must know, the reading of it hath given great satisfaction to several lodgers at this inn, who have earnestly begged the copy: but, that request I would not comply with, because I expect that the person who left the portmanteau with the books and papers, in a mistake, will return, on purpose to fetch them; or, you know, he may chance to travel this way, on other business; and tho' I should miss them heavily, in faith, they shall be restored; for, tho' an innkeeper, I am still a christian." "Friend, said the curate, you are very much in the right; but for all that, if I like the novel, you shall give me leave to transcribe it." "With all my heart, replied the landlord." While this discourse passed between them, Cardenio having taken up the manuscript, and begun to read, was of the curate's opinion, and intreated him to read it aloud, that the whole company might hear it. "I will, answered the priest, if you think we had not better spend the time in sleeping than in reading." "For my own part, said Dorothea, it will be a sufficient refreshment for me, to listen to some entertaining story; for, my mind is not composed enough to let me sleep, even if I stood in need of repose." "If that be the case, resumed the curate, I will read it out of curiosity, at a venture, and perhaps, it will yield us some entertainment into the bargain." Master Nicholas earnestly joined in the request, and Sancho himself expressed a desire of hearing it; upon which, the licentiate finding he should please the whole company, as well as himself; "Well then, said he, listen with attention, for the novel begins in this manner:"

\* The original, which is *Curioso impertinente*, signifies one who is impertinently curious, not a curious impertinent.

## C H A P. VI.

The novel of the impertinent curiosity.

**I**N Florence, a rich and celebrated city of Italy, situated in the province called Tuscany, lived Anselmo and Lothario, two wealthy and noble cavaliers, so strictly united in the bands of amity, that every body who knew them, called them by way of excellence and epithet, the Two Friends: and indeed, being both batchelors, and their age and education so much alike, it was not to be wondered at, if a reciprocal affection sprung up between them: true it is, Anselmo was rather more addicted to amorous pastime than Lothario, whose chief delight was in hunting; yet, upon occasion, Anselmo could quit his own amusements to pursue those of his friend; and Lothario could postpone his favourite diversion, in order to practise that of Anselmo: in this manner, their inclinations proceeded so mutually, that no clock ever went with more regularity. Anselmo happened to fall desperately in love with a young lady of rank and beauty, in the same city, descended from such a noble family, and so amiable in herself, that he determined, with the approbation of his friend, without which he did nothing, to demand her of her parents, in marriage; and accordingly, put his resolution in practice. Lothario was intrusted with the message, and concluded the affair so much to the satisfaction of his friend, that in a very little time, Anselmo saw himself in possession of his heart's desire; and Camilla thought herself so happy in having obtained such a husband, that she was incessant in her acknowledgments to heaven and Lothario, by whose mediation her happiness was effected.

During the first two days after marriage, which are commonly spent in feasting and mirth, Lothario, as usual, frequented the house of his friend, with a view of honouring his nuptials, and endeavouring, as much as in him lay, to promote the joy and festivity attending all such occasions: but, the wedding being over, and the frequency of visits and congratulations abated, he began carefully and gradually to absent himself from Anselmo's house, thinking, as every prudent person would naturally conclude, that a man ought not to visit and frequent the house of a friend after he is married, in the same manner as he had practised, while he was single; for, tho' suspicion should never find harbour with true and virtuous friendship, yet the honour of a married man is so delicate, as to be thought subject to injury, not only from a friend, but even from a brother. Anselmo perceived Lothario's remissness, and complained of it loudly, saying, that if he had thought his marriage would have impaired their former correspondence, he never would have altered

tered his condition ; and begged, that as by the mutual friendship which inspired them while he was single, they had acquired such an agreeable title as that of The two friends, he would not now suffer that endearing and celebrated name to be lost, by a scrupulous adherence to meer form and punctilio. He therefore intreated him, if he might be allowed to use the expression, to be master of his house, and to come in and go out as formerly, assuring him that the inclinations of Camilla, in that respect, were exactly conformable to his own ; and that, knowing the perfect friendship which subsisted between them, she was extremely mortified at his late shyness.

To these and many other arguments used by Anselmo, to persuade his friend to frequent his house as usual, Lothario answered with such prudence, force and discernment, that the other was convinced of his discreet conduct ; and it was agreed betwixt them, that Lothario should dine with him twice a week, besides holidays ; but, notwithstanding this agreement, he resolved to comply with it no further than he should see convenient for the honour of Anselmo, which was dearer to him than his own. He said, and his observation was just, that a man on whom heaven hath bestowed a beautiful wife, should be as cautious of the men he brings home to his house, as careful in observing the female friends with whom his spouse converses, abroad : for, that which cannot be performed, nor concerted in the street or the church, or at public shews and diversions, with which a husband must sometimes indulge his wife, may be easily transacted in the house of a female friend or relation, in whom his chief confidence is reposed. Wherefore, Lothario observed, that every married man had occasion for some friend to apprize him of any omission in her conduct ; for, it often happens, that he is too much in love with his wife, to observe, or too much afraid of offending her, to prescribe limits to her behaviour, in those things, the following or eschewing of which, may tend to his honour or reproach : whereas, that inconvenience might be easily amended by the advice of a friend. But, where shall we find such a zealous, discreet trusty friend, as is here required ? I really know not, except in Lothario himself, who consulting the honour of Anselmo, with the utmost care and circumspection, was at great pains to contract, abridge and diminish the number of the days on which he had agreed to frequent his house ; that the idle vulgar, and prying eyes of malice, might not indulge their love of slander, when they perceived a genteel young man of such birth, fortune, and accomplishments as he knew himself possessed of, go into the house of such a celebrated beauty as Camilla ; for, although his virtue and honour might be a sufficient check to the most malevolent tongue, he would not expose his own character, or that of his friend, to  
the

the smallest censure ; and therefore, employed the greatest part of those days on which he had agreed to visit Anselmo, in such things as he pretended, were indispensable : so that when they were present, a great deal of time was consumed by the complaints of the one, and the excuses of the other. One day, however, as they were walking through a meadow, near the suburbs of the city, Anselmo addressed himself to Lothario in these terms :

“ You believe, my friend Lothario, that I can never be thankful enough to heaven, for the blessings I enjoy, not only in the most indulgent parents, and in the abundance of those things which are called the goods of nature and fortune ; but, also in a friend like you, and a wife like Camilla ; two pledges which I esteem, if not as highly as I ought, at least, as much as I can. Yet, though I possess all those benefits which usually constitute the happiness of mankind, I find myself one of the most disgusted and discontented men alive. I have been for these many days, so harrassed and fatigued with such an odd unaccountable desire, that I cannot help being amazed at my infatuation, for which I often blame and rebuke myself, endeavouring to suppress and conceal it from my own reflexion : but, I find it as impossible to keep the secret, as if I had industriously published it to the whole world ; and since it must actually be disclosed to some body, I would have it deposited in the most secret archives of your heart ; in full confidence, that by the diligence which you, as a trusty friend, will exert in my behalf, when you know it, I shall soon see myself delivered from that anxiety to which it hath reduced me ; and by your assiduity be raised to a pitch of joy, equal to the degree of vexation which my own folly hath intailed upon me.”

Lothario was astonished at this discourse of Anselmo, as he could not comprehend the meaning of such a long preface and preamble ; and endeavoured, by revolving every thing in his imagination, to find out what this desire could be, that preyed so much upon the spirits of his friend ; but, finding himself always wide of the mark, he was willing to ease himself immediately of the excessive pain his suspense occasioned ; and with this view, told Anselmo, that he did a manifest injury to the warmth of his friendship, in going about the bush, seeking indirect methods to impart his most secret thoughts, since he was well assured, that he might entirely depend upon him, either for advice to suppress, or assistance to support them. “ I am well convinced of the truth of what you say, answered Anselmo ; and in that confidence will tell you, my friend, that the desire with which I am possessed, is to be certain, whether or not my wife Camilla is as virtuous and perfect as I believe her to be : and this truth I shall never be fully persuaded of, until the perfection of her nature appear  
upon

upon trial, as pure gold is proved by fire : for, it is my opinion, that there is no woman virtuous, but in proportion to the sollicitation she hath withstood ; and, that she only is chaste, who hath not yielded to the promises, presents, tears and continual importunities of persevering lovers. And pray, where is the merit in a woman's being chaste, when nobody ever courted her to be otherwise ? what wonder, that she should be reserved and cautious, who has no opportunity of indulging loose inclinations, and who knows her husband would immediately put her to death, should he once catch her tripping ? Wherefore, I can never entertain the same degree of esteem for a woman who is chaste out of fear, or want of opportunity, as I would for her who hath triumphed over perseverance of sollicitation : so that, for these and many other reasons I could urge to sanction and enforce my opinion, I desire that my wife Camilla may undergo the test, and be refined in the fire of importunate addresses, by one possessed of sufficient accomplishments to inspire a woman with love ; and, if she comes off, as I believe she will, victorious, in the trial, I shall think my own happiness unparalleled. I shall then, be able to say, that my wishes are fulfilled ; and that she hath fallen to my lot, of whom the wise man saith, " Who hath found her ?" And even, if the contrary of what I expect, should happen, the satisfaction of seeing my opinion confirmed, will help me to bear with patience that which would otherwise prove such a costly experiment. Supposing then, that nothing you can say, in opposition to this desire of mine, can avail in diverting me from my purpose, I expect and intreat that you, my friend Lothario, will condescend to be the instrument with which I execute this work of my inclination. I will give you proper opportunities, and supply you with every thing I see necessary for solliciting a woman of virtue, honour and disinterested reserve : and, what, among other things, induces me to entrust you with this enterprize, is the consideration, that should Camilla's scruples be overcome, you will not pursue your conquest to the last circumstance of rigour, but only suppose that done, which for good reason, ought to remain undone ; so that I shall be injured by her inclination alone, and my wrongs lie buried in the virtue of your silence, which, I know, in whatever concerns my welfare, will be eternal as that of death. Wherefore, if you would have me enjoy what deserves to be called life, you will forthwith undertake this amorous contest, not with lukewarmness and languor, but with that eagerness and diligence which corresponds with my wish, and the confidence in which I am secured by your friendship."

Such was the discourse of Anselmo, to which Lothario listened so attentively, that, except what he is already said to have uttered, he did not open his lips, until his friend had finished his proposal ; but, finding he

had nothing more to alledge, after having, for some time, gazed upon him as an object hitherto unseen, that inspired him with astonishment and surprize: "I cannot be persuaded, Anselmo, said he, but what you have said was spoke in jest, for, had I thought you in earnest, I should not have suffered you to proceed so far, but, by refusing to listen, have prevented such a long harangue. Without doubt, you must either mistake my disposition, or I be utterly unacquainted with yours; and yet, I know you to be Anselmo, and you must be sensible that I am Lothario: the misfortune is, I no longer find you the same Anselmo you wont to be, nor do I appear to you the same Lothario as before; your discourse favours not of that Anselmo who was my friend; nor is what you ask, a thing to be demanded of that Lothario who shared your confidence. Good men, as a certain poet observes, may try and avail themselves of their friends, *Usque ad aras*; but, not presume upon their friendship, in things contrary to the decrees of heaven. Now, if a heathen entertained such ideas of friendship, how much more should they be cherished by a christian, who knows, that no human affection ought to interfere with our love to God: and, when a person stretches his connexions so far, as to lay aside all respect for heaven, in order to manifest his regard for a friend he ought not to be swayed by trifles or matters of small consequence, but by those things only on which the life and honour of a friend, depend. Tell me then, Anselmo, which of these is in danger, before I venture to gratify your wish, by complying with the detestable proposal you have made? Surely, neither: on the contrary, if I conceive you aright, you are desirous, that I should indefatigably endeavour to deprive you and myself also, of that very life and honour, which it is my duty to preserve: for, if I rob you of honour, I rob you of life; since a man without honour, is worse than dead; and I being the instrument, as you desire I should be, that entails such a curse upon you; shall not I be dishonoured, and of consequence, dead to all enjoyment and fame. Listen, with patience, my friend Anselmo, and make no answer, until I shall have done with imparting the suggestions of my mind, concerning the strange proposal you have made; for, there will be time enough for you to reply, and me to listen in my turn." "With all my heart, cried Anselmo; you may speak as long as you please."

Accordingly, Lothario proceeded, saying, "In my opinion, Anselmo, your disposition is at present like that of the Moors, who will not suffer themselves to be convicted of the errors of their sect, by quotations from the holy scripture, nor with arguments founded on speculation, or the articles of faith; but, must be confuted or convinced by examples that are palpable, easy, familiar, and subject to the certainty of mathematical demonstration:

monstration : for instance, if from equal parts, we take equal parts, those that remain are equal. And if they do not understand this proposition verbally, as is frequently the case, it must be explained and set before their eyes, by manual operation, which is also insufficient to persuade them of the truth of our holy religion. The self-same method must I practise with you, whose desire deviates so far from every thing that bears the least shadow of reason, that I should look upon it as time mispent, to endeavour to convince you of your folly, which is the only name your intention seems to desire : nay, I am even tempted to leave you in your extravagancy, as a punishment for your preposterous desire : but, I am prevented from using such rigour by my friendship, which will not permit me to desert you in such manifest danger of perdition. But, to make this affair still more plain, tell me, Anselmo, did not you desire me to solicit one that was reserved, seduce one that was chaste, make presents to one that was disinterested, and assiduously court one that was wise ? Yes, such was your demand. If you are apprised, then, of the reserve, virtue, disinterestedness and prudence of your wife, pray, what is your aim ? if you believe that she will triumph over all my assaults, as undoubtedly she will, what fairer titles can you bestow upon her, than those she possesses already ? or how will she be more perfect after that trial, than she is at present ? You either do not believe she is so virtuous as you have represented her, or know not the nature of your demand. If you think she is not so chaste as you have described her, you should not hazard the trial, but rather, according to the dictates of your own prudence, treat her as a vicious woman : if you are satisfied of her virtue, it would be altogether impertinent to make trial of that truth, which from the test, can acquire no additional esteem. From whence we may reasonably conclude, that for men to execute designs which are clearly productive of more hurt than benefit, is the province of madness and temerity ; especially, when they are not incited or compelled to these designs by any sort of consideration ; but, on the contrary, may at a greater distance, perceive the manifest madness of their intention. Difficulties are undertaken, either for the sake of God, of this world, or of both. The first are incurred by holy men, who live the life of angels here on earth ; the second, by those who traverse the boundless ocean, visiting such a diversity of climates and nations, with a view of acquiring what are called the goods of fortune : and such undertakings as equally regard God and man, fall to the share of those valiant soldiers, who no sooner behold, in the wall of an adverse city, a breach, though no bigger than that which is made by a single cannon ball, than, laying aside all fear, and overlooking with unconcern, the manifest danger that menaces them, winged with desire of signalizing their

valour in behalf of their king, country and religion, throw themselves, with the utmost intrepidity, into the midst of a thousand deaths that oppose and await them. These are the enterprizes which are generally undertaken, and, though full of peril and inconvenience, attended with glory, honour and advantage; but that which you have planned, and purpose to put in execution, neither tends to your acquiring the approbation of God, the goods of fortune, nor the applause of mankind: for, granting that the experiment should succeed to your wish, it will make you neither more happy, rich, or respected than you are; and should it turn out contrary to your expectation, you will find yourself the most miserable of all mortals. It will then, give you little ease to reflect, that your misfortune is unknown: for, the bare knowing it yourself, will be sufficient to plunge you in affliction and despair. As a confirmation of this truth, you must give me leave to repeat the following stanza, written by the celebrated poet Lewis Tansilo, at the end of the first part of the tears of St. Peter.

When Peter saw the approach of rosy morn,  
 His soul with sorrow and remorse was torn,  
 For, though from ev'ry mortal eye conceal'd,  
 The guilt to his own bosom stood reveal'd:  
 The candid breast will self-accusing, own  
 Each conscious fault, tho' to the world, unknown:  
 Nor, will th' offender 'scape internal shame,  
 Though unimpeach'd by justice or by fame.

Wherefore, secrecy will never assuage your grief, but, on the contrary, you will incessantly weep, not tears from your eyes, but drops of blood, from your heart, like that simple doctor, whom our \* poet mentions, who made trial of the vessel, which the prudent Reynaldo, with more discretion, refused to touch: and although this be a poetical fiction, it nevertheless contains a well-couched moral worthy of notice, study and imitation; especially, as what I am going to say will, I hope, bring you to a due sense of the great error you want to commit.

Tell me, Anselmo, if heaven or good fortune had made you master and lawful possessor of an exquisite diamond, the brilliancy of which was admired by all the lapidaries who had seen it, and unanimously allowed to be the most perfect of it's kind; an opinion, which, as you knew nothing to the contrary, was exactly conformable to your own; would it be wise or pardonable in you, to put that jewel betwixt an anvil and a hammer, and by meer dint of blows and strength of arm, try if it was as hard and

\* Ludovico Ariosto, author of Orlando Furioso.



perfect as it had been pronounced? for, supposing that the diamond should resist the force of this foolish experiment, it would thereby acquire no addition of value or fame; and if it should be broke to pieces, a thing that might easily happen, would not all be lost? Yes, for certain; and the owner be universally deemed a fool. Consider then, my friend, that Camilla is an exquisite diamond, not only in your estimation, but in that of every one who knows her, and it would be highly unreasonable to expose her to the least possibility of being broke; for, even should she remain intire, her reputation will receive no increase; but, should she fail in the trial, reflect upon what you must feel, and the reason you will then have to complain of yourself, for having been the fatal cause of her perdition and your own despair. Consider, that no jewel upon earth is comparable to a woman of virtue and honour; and, that the honour of the sex consists in the fair characters they maintain. Since, therefore, the reputation of your wife is already as high as it possibly can be, why would you bring this truth into question? Remember, my friend, that woman is an imperfect creature, and that, far from laying blocks in her way, over which she might stumble and fall, we ought to remove them with care, and clear her paths from all obstructions, that she may, without trouble, proceed smoothly, in attaining to that perfection which she may still want, namely, immaculate virtue. We are informed by naturalists, that the ermin is a little animal, covered with a fur of excessive whiteness, and that the hunters use this artifice to catch it: being well acquainted with the places through which it chuses to pass in its flight, they daub them all over with mud, and as soon as they get sight of the creature, drive it directly thither. The ermin finding itself thus barricaded, stands still, and is taken; chusing captivity, rather than by passing through the filth, to stain and sully the whiteness of its fur, which it prizes above liberty, and even life itself. A chaste and virtuous wife is like the ermin, her character being more pure and white than drifted snow; but he, who would guard and preserve it, must use a method quite different from that which is practised upon the little animal, and beware of clogging her way with the mud of entertainments, and the addresses of importunate lovers; lest perhaps, nay, without a perhaps, she should not possess such virtue and resolution as are sufficient of themselves, to surmount those obstructions. It is therefore necessary to remove them, and place before her, the purity of virtue, and the beauty of an unblemished reputation. A virtuous woman also resembles a bright transparent mirror, which is liable to be stained and obscured by the breath of those who approach too near it. A virtuous woman, like reliques, ought to be adored at a distance. She ought to be preserved and esteemed as a beauti-

beautiful garden full of flowers and roses, the owner of which will suffer nobody to handle them or pass through it, permitting them only, to enjoy its fragrance and beauty afar off, through the iron rails that surround it. In fine, I will repeat a few verses that I just now recollect, from a modern comedy, because they seem to have been composed upon the very subject of our present discourse. A sage old man advising his friend, who is blessed with an handsome daughter, to lock her up, and watch over her with the utmost vigilance and care, among other reasons, cautions him with these.

## I.

WOMAN is form'd of brittle ware ;  
 Then, wherefore rashly seek to know  
 What force, unbroken she will bear,  
 And strike, perhaps, some fatal blow.

## II.

Though easily to fragments tore,  
 'Twere equally absurd and vain,  
 To dash in pieces on the floor,  
 What never can be join'd again.

## III.

This maxim, then, by facts assur'd,  
 Should henceforth be espous'd by all ;  
 Where'er a Danae lies immur'd,  
 The tempting show'r of gold will fall.

All that I have hitherto suggested, Anselmo, regards yourself ; and now it is but reasonable you should hear something that concerns me ; and if I should be prolix in my observations, you must excuse me, because it is absolutely necessary to expatiate on the subject, in order to extricate you from the labyrinth in which you are involved, and from which you desire to be disengaged by my assistance. You consider me as your friend, and yet, seek to deprive me of my honour ; a desire opposite to all friendship or regard ; nay, even endeavour to make me rob you of your own. That you want to destroy mine, is plain ; for, Camilla finding herself exposed to my solicitations, as you desire, will certainly look upon me as a man void of all principle and honour ; because I attempt to succeed in a design so contrary to the dignity of my own character, and the friendship subsisting between us. That you desire I should rob you of yours, is not to be doubted ; because Camilla, seeing herself importuned by my addresses, will think I must have observed some levity in her conduct, which hath encouraged me to disclose my vitious inclinations, and think herself dis-

honoured

honoured accordingly ; so that you will be as much concerned in her dishonour, as if it was your own. Hence springs the common observation, that the husband of a lewd woman, though he neither knows, nor hath given the least occasion for the misconduct of his wife ; and, though his misfortune was neither owing to his want of prudence or care, is notwithstanding pointed at, and distinguished by a name of scandal and reproach ; being looked upon, by those who know the frailty of his wife, with an eye of disdain, instead of compassion, which he certainly deserves, as his disgrace proceeds not from any fault of his, but from the loose inclinations of his worthless spouse. I will now explain the reason, why the husband of a bad woman is justly dishonoured, though he neither knows, nor hath been in any shape accessory to her backslidings ; and you must hear me with patience, because my remarks will, I hope, redound to your own advantage.

When God created our first parent in the terrestrial paradise, we are told by the holy scripture, that he was thrown into a deep sleep, during which, the Almighty took a rib from his left side, and of this, Eve being formed, Adam no sooner awoke and beheld her, than he cried, “ This creature is flesh of my flesh and bone of my bone.” Nay, God himself, pronounced, “ For this shall a man leave father and mother, and they two shall be one flesh.” Then was instituted the divine sacrament of marriage, consisting of such ties as death alone can unbind ; and endowed with such miraculous virtue and power, as to unite two different persons in one flesh ; nay, what is still more wonderful, to combine two souls, so as to produce but one will ; provided the union be happily effected. From hence, it follows, that the flesh of the wife being the same with that of the husband, whatever stains or blemishes are imbibed by the first, must equally affect the other, although, as I have already observed, he is, in no manner, accessory to the misfortune. Wherefore, as the whole person is affected by the pain of the foot or any other member of the human body ; and the head, though no way concerned in the cause, be a fellow-sufferer with the ankle when it is hurt ; by the same rule, an husband, being a part of the same whole, must bear a share of his wife’s dishonour ; for, as all the honours and disgraces of this life proceed from flesh and blood ; the infamy of a vicious woman, being of the same origin, must be shared by her husband, who ought to be looked upon as a dishonoured person, though he be utterly ignorant of the guilt. Reflect, therefore, Anselmo, on the danger into which you bring yourself, by seeking to disturb the peace and tranquillity of your virtuous wife. Reflect upon the vanity and impertinence of that curiosity, which prompts you to awaken and stir up those humours, that now lie tamed and quiet in the bosom of your chaste spouse.

spouse. Consider, that in this rash adventure, your gain must be very small, but your loss may be so great, that I leave it unmentioned, because I want words to express its estimation. On the whole, if what I have said, be insufficient to divert you from your mischievous design, I desire you will chuse some other instrument of your misfortune and disgrace; for, I will not undertake the office, though, by my refusal, I should even lose your friendship, which is dearer to me than any thing upon earth."

Here the virtuous and prudent Lothario left off speaking, and Anselmo remained in such confusion and perplexity, that, for some time, he could not answer one word: at length, however, he broke silence, saying, "I have listened, my friend Lothario, as you may have perceived, with great attention to all you had to say, and by your arguments, examples and comparisons, am fully convinced, not only of your great discretion, but also of that perfection of friendship to which you have attained; I see also, and own, that in refusing your counsel, and following my own, I avoid the good and pursue the evil." This truth being acknowledged, you must consider me as a person afflicted with that infirmity, which induces some women to swallow earth, chalk, coals, and other things of a worse nature, which, if loathsome to the sight, how much more disagreeable must they be to the taste. Wherefore, there is an absolute necessity for using some method of cure, which you may easily effect, by beginning to solicit the love of Camilla, though coldly and feignedly; and sure, she cannot be so frail as to surrender her virtue at the first encounter. With this slight attempt I shall rest satisfied, and you fulfil the duty of friendship, not only in giving me new life, but also, in dissuading me from being the cause of my own dishonour. Nay, you are obliged to comply with my request, by this other consideration, that, determined as I am to put my design in execution, you ought not to allow me to communicate this extravagant resolution to any other person, lest I run the risk of losing that honour which you endeavour to preserve: and, as to your suffering in the opinion of Camilla, by attempting to seduce her, that is a reflection of small importance, because, when her integrity is proved, you can soon inform her of our whole contrivance, consequently, regain and repossess the former place you held in her esteem. Since therefore, by adventuring so little, it is in your power to give me so much satisfaction; I hope, you will not refuse the office, even if it was attended with more inconvenience; for, I have already told you, that I shall look upon the affair as concluded, whenever you shall have made the first attempt."

Lothario seeing him fixed in his resolution, even after he had exhausted all his rhetoric to dissuade him from it; and fearing he would execute his threat of imparting his unhappy design to some other person, determined

termined to prevent a greater misfortune, by complying with his desire: purposing, however, to manage the business in such a manner, as to satisfy Anselmo, without altering the sentiments of his wife. With this view, he told Anselmo, that he should have no occasion to communicate his intention to any other man; for he, Lothario, would undertake the affair, and begin as soon as he pleased. Anselmo, embracing his friend with great tenderness and affection, thanked him as much for his compliance, as if he had granted him some vast favour; and it was concerted between them, that Lothario should begin the enterprise the very next day, when Anselmo would give him time and opportunity of being alone with Camilla, that he might speak to her with freedom; and also supply him with money and jewels, that with such presents he might promote his suit: he, moreover, advised him to attempt her by music, and write verses in her praise; or, if that would be too much trouble for the gallant, he himself would compose them for the purpose. Lothario undertook every thing, but with a very different intention from what Anselmo supposed; and the agreement being made, they returned to the house of this last, where they found Camilla waiting with great anxiety, for her husband, who had that day tarried longer than usual, abroad. Lothario soon after, went home to his own lodgings, leaving his friend as happy as he himself was perplexed how to contrive a scheme for bringing this affair to a fortunate issue: but, that night, he fell upon an expedient to deceive Anselmo, without giving offence to his wife.

Next day, he went to dine with his friend, and was very kindly received by Camilla, who entertained him with great cordiality, as her husband's intimate companion. Dinner being ended, and the table withdrawn, Anselmo rising up, desired Lothario to stay with Camilla till his return from an indispensable piece of business, that would detain him an hour and an half. Camilla intreated him to defer it until another time, and Lothario offered to go along with him; but, he was deaf to both, pressing Lothario to let him go, while he should wait at his house till he came back, for he wanted to talk with him upon a subject of the last importance; at the same time, desiring Camilla to keep Lothario company till his return: in short, he so well feigned the necessity, or rather folly, of his absence, that no body could have suspected the deceit. He accordingly went out, and left Camilla and his friend by themselves; for, the rest of the family had gone to dinner: so that Lothario seeing himself within the lists, according to Anselmo's desire, with his fair enemy, whose beauty alone was powerful enough to overcome a whole squadron of armed knights, it may be easily conceived what reason he had to fear: yet all he did, was to lean the side of his head on his hand, while his elbow rested upon the arm of the chair in which he sat, and after having begged pardon for his ill-manners, to tell

Camilla, he would take a nap till Anselmo's return. She said, he would be more at his ease in a couch than in the chair, and advised him to walk into a chamber where he would find one. This offer, however, he declined, and slept where he was till the return of his friend, who finding Camilla in her own apartment, and Lothario asleep, concluded, that by his long stay, he had given them time, not only to speak, but also to take their repose; and was impatient for Lothario's waking, that he might carry him out to walk, and inquire about his own fortune.

Every thing succeeded to his wish: when his friend awoke, they went forth together, and he put every question to him that his curiosity suggested: Lothario answered, that thinking it improper to explain himself, on the first occasion, he had done nothing but praised Camilla's beauty, which, together with her discretion, he told her, engrossed the conversation of the whole city: this, he imagined, was the most prudent beginning, as it might prepossess her in his favour, and dispose her to listen to him another time, with pleasure; being the same artifice which is practised by the devil, who, when he would seduce those who are on their guard, transforms himself from an imp of darkness into an angel of light, and flattering them with specious appearances, at length discovers his cloven foot, and succeeds in his design, provided his deceit be not detected in the beginning. This declaration was altogether satisfactory to Anselmo, who said he would give him the same opportunity every day, without quitting the house, in which he would employ himself so artfully, that Camilla should never suspect his design. Many days passed, in which, tho' Lothario never opened his mouth on the subject to Camilla, he told Anselmo that he had made many efforts, but, could never perceive in her the least tendency to weakness, or obtain the least shadow of hope; on the contrary, that she had threatened, if he did not lay aside his wicked design, to disclose the whole affair to her husband. "Very well, said Anselmo, hitherto she is proof against words; we must now try whether or not she can resist works also: to-morrow, you shall have two thousand crowns in gold, for a present to her; and as much more to purchase jewels for a bait: these are things with which all beautiful women are captivated; for, be they ever so chaste, they love finery and gay apparel; if she withstands that temptation, I will rest satisfied, and give you no further trouble."

Lothario promised to go thro' with the enterprize, now that he had begun, tho' he was persuaded he should be fatigued and baffled in the execution. Next day, he received four thousand crowns, and as many perplexities along with them; for, he did not know what lie he should next invent: however, he determined to tell his friend, that Camilla was as invincible to presents as to words; and that he should give himself no further vexation,

since

since all his endeavours were thrown away to no purpose: but, fortune, which conducted matters in another manner, ordained, that Anselmo, one day, after having, according to custom, left Lothario and his wife by themselves, and gone to his own chamber, should peep thro' the key-hole, and listen to their conversation: it was then, he perceived, that in half an hour and more, Lothario did not speak one word; neither would he have opened his mouth, had he remained a whole age in the same situation. From hence he concluded, that every thing his friend had told him of Camilla's replies, was meer fiction: but, to be still more assured, he came out of his chamber, and calling Lothario aside, asked what news he had, and how Camilla stood affected to him? He replied, that he was resolved to drop the business intirely; for, she had checked him with such bitterness and indignation, that he had no mind to return to the charge. "Ah Lothario! Lothario, said Anselmo, how much you have failed in the duty of friendship, and abused the confidence I have reposed in your affection! I have been all this time, looking thro' the key-hole of that door, and perceived that you have not spoken one word to Camilla; from whence, I suspect, that your first declaration is yet to come; and if that be the case, as without doubt it is, wherefore have you thus deceived me; and in so doing, prevented me from other means to satisfy my desire?" He said no more, but this was sufficient to cover Lothario with shame and confusion; who thinking his honour concerned, in being convicted of a lie, swore to Anselmo, he would, from that moment, take the charge of giving him the satisfaction he required, without the least equivocation, as he might perceive, by watching him narrowly; tho' there would be no occasion for using such diligence, because, his future behaviour in that affair, would acquit him of all suspicion.

Anselmo gave credit to his protestation, and that his opportunities might be more secure, and less subject to interruption, resolved to absent himself from his own house, for eight days, during which he proposed to visit a friend who lived in a village not far from the city; and whom he desired to invite him to his house with the most earnest intreaties, that he might excuse himself to Camilla for his absence—Unfortunate and imprudent Anselmo! what art thou doing? what art thou contriving and concerting? consider that thou art acting against thyself, planning thy own dishonour and perdition. Your wife Camilla is virtuous and sober, and you possess her at present, in quiet; enjoying uninterrupted pleasure: her inclinations never ramble beyond the walls of your own house; you are her paradise upon earth, the goal of her desires, the accomplishment of her wishes, and the standard by which she measures her will, adjusting it, in all respects, according to your pleasure and the directions of heaven. Since the mine of her honour, beauty, modesty and virtue, yields thee, without trouble, all

the riches which it contains, or thou can'st desire; why would'st thou, by digging in search of a new and unheard-of treasure, risk the fall or destruction of the whole, which is sustained by the feeble props of female constancy? remember, it is but just, that he who builds on impossibilities, should be denied the privilege of any other foundation; as the poet hath better expressed it, in the following couplets:

In death, I sought new life to find,  
 And health, where pale distemper pin'd:  
 I look'd for freedom in the jail,  
 And faith where perjuries prevail:  
 But fate supreme, whose stern decree  
 To sorrow match'd my destiny,  
 All possible relief withdrew;  
 Because th' impossible I kept in view.

Next day, Anselmo went to the country, after having told Camilla, that, in his absence, Lothario would take charge of the family; and desired her to treat him with all the respect due to his own person. Camilla, being a woman of honour and discretion, was disgusted at this order, and bad him consider how unseemly it was, for another man to sit at the head of his table in his absence; at the same time, begging, that if his directions proceeded from his diffidence in her capacity, he would for once put her management to the trial, and be convinced, by experience, that she was equal to a more important charge. Anselmo replied, that such was his pleasure, and her province was to bow the head and obey; upon which, she, tho' unwillingly, submitted. Next day he set out accordingly, and Lothario went to his house, where he met with a very kind and honourable reception from Camilla, who never gave him an opportunity of being alone with her, but always went about the house among her servants, generally attended by her own maid, whose name was Leonela, for whom her mistress had a particular affection, because they had been brought up together from their infancy, in the house of Camilla's parents, and when she married Anselmo, she accompanied her to his house in quality of waiting-woman.

During the first three days, Lothario did not declare himself, altho' he had opportunities immediately after the table was uncovered, while the servants were at dinner, which Camilla always ordered them to finish with all expedition. Nay, she gave directions to Leonela, to dine every day, before the cloth was laid for herself, that she might always be in waiting; but her maid's thoughts were too much engrossed by her own amusements, the enjoyment of which required such time and opportunity, as often hindered her



her from obeying the commands of her mistress; so that she frequently behaved as if she had received orders to leave them alone—But, the dignified presence of Camilla, the gravity of her countenance, and awfulness of person were such, as effectually bridled Lothario's tongue: yet the energy of virtue, in having this very effect, redounded the more to the disadvantage of them both; for, tho' his tongue was restricted, his thoughts had a full and free opportunity of contemplating, at leisure, the charms both of her mind and person, which were sufficient to captivate not only an heart of flesh, but, even a statue of stone.

Lothario, by gazing at her, during those opportunities, beheld how worthy she was to be beloved; and this conviction, began gradually to sap his regard for his friend; so that he made a thousand resolutions to quit the city, and go where he should never more be seen by Anselmo, or be exposed to danger from the beauty of his wife; but, all these were baffled by the pleasure he had already felt, in seeing and admiring her charms: he constrained himself, and combated his own inclinations, in order to expel and efface that satisfaction; when he was alone, he condemned his own madness, and reproached himself as a false friend and worthless christian; he made a thousand reflections and comparisons between himself and Anselmo, and they all terminated in this conclusion, that the madness and rash confidence of his friend, greatly exceeded his own infidelity; and that, if he could excuse himself to heaven, for what he intended to do, as easily as to mankind, he had no reason to dread any punishment for the crime: in short, the beauty and other accomplishments of Camilla, together with the opportunity which the ignorant husband put into his hands, intirely overthrew the integrity of Lotharia; who, giving way at once, to the dictates of his passion, began, at the end of three days, during which he had been at continual war with his desires, to address himself to Camilla with such disorder, and amorous discourse, that she was utterly astonished, and rising up, went to her own chamber, without answering one word: but, this coyness did not abate Lothario's hope, which always increases with a man's love; on the contrary, he redoubled his efforts, while she, perceiving him behave so wide of expectation, did not well know what conduct to espouse: but, thinking it would be both unseemly and unsafe in her, to grant him another opportunity, she determined that very night, to send a message to her husband, and actually dispatched a servant to him, with the following letter:

## C H A P. VII.

The continuation of the novel called the Impertinent curiosity.

“IT is a common observation, that an army without a general, and a garrison without a chief, make but a very indifferent appearance: but, I say, that a young married woman without a husband, makes a worse, especially when his absence is not the effect of absolute necessity: for my own part, I find myself so uneasy, and unable to support our separation, that if you do not return immediately, I must go and pass my time at my father’s house; tho’ I should leave yours without a guard; for, I believe, he that you left, if he was designed for that purpose, hath more regard to his own pleasure than to your advantage; and since you are wise, I have nothing more to say, nor is it proper I should.”

When Anselmo received this letter, he was convinced that Lothario had begun the enterprize, and that his wife had behaved according to his wish; rejoiced beyond measure at this information, he answered by a verbal message, that she should, by no means, leave the house; for, he would return in a very little time. Camilla was astonished at this reply, which perplexed her more than ever; as she durst neither stay in her own house, nor go to her father’s; for, in staying at home, she endangered her honour, and in going to her parents, she transgressed the commands of her husband. In fine, she resolved upon that which was worst of all; namely, to remain where she was, determined not to avoid Lothario, that the servants might not observe her situation; and she was already sorry for what she had written to Anselmo, being afraid he would imagine Lothario had perceived some levity in her conduct, which encouraged him to lay aside the decorum he ought to have preserved. Confident of her own virtue, she trusted to God and her conscious prudence, by the help of which she thought she could, in silence, resist all the solicitations of Lothario, without giving her husband any further information, lest it should involve him in some trouble or dangerous dispute: nay, she was even industrious in inventing some excuse for Lothario, in case Anselmo should ask the reason that induced her to write such a letter.

With these sentiments, which were more honourable than prudent and advantageous, she, next day, sat listening to Lothario, who exerted himself in such a manner, as to shake her fortitude, which, with all her virtue, was barely sufficient to hinder her eyes from giving manifest indications  
of

of the amorous compassion that his tears and addresses had awakened in her breast. All this tenderness, which Lothario observed, inflamed his passion the more; and thinking there was a necessity for shortening the siege, while this opportunity of Anselmo's absence, lasted; he assaulted her pride with the praises of her beauty; for, nothing sooner succeeds in overthrowing the embattled towers of female vanity, than vanity itself, employed by the tongue of adulation: in short, he so assiduously undermined the fortress of her virtue, and plied it with such irresistible engines, that tho' she had been made of brass, she must have surrendered at mercy: he wept, intreated, promised, flattered, feigned and importuned, with such earnest expressions of love, as conquered all her reserve; at last, he obtained a complete triumph, which, tho' what he least expected, was what of all things, he most ardently desired: she yielded—the chaste Camilla yielded! But, what wonder? since even Lothario's friendship gave away. A clear and incontestible proof, that love is to be conquered by flight alone; and that no person whatever, ought to engage such a powerful adversary, hand to hand; because nothing but force divine can subdue that human power.

Leonela alone was privy to the weakness of her mistress, which the two new lovers and false friends could not possibly conceal from her knowledge: and Lothario did not choose to tell Camilla, the contrivance of Anselmo, who had given him the opportunity of accomplishing his design; that she might not undervalue his love, by supposing, that he courted her by accident, without being at first, really enamoured of her charms. Anselmo returning in a few days, did not perceive the loss of that, which, tho' he preserved with the least care, he prized above all other possessions: but, going in quest of Lothario, whom he found in his own lodging, after a mutual embrace, he desired he would tell him the news that must determine his life or death. “The news which I have to give you, my friend, said Lothario, are these: you have a wife who truly deserves to be the pattern and queen of all good women. The expressions I used to her were spent in the air, my promises were despised, my presents rejected, and some tears that I feigned, most heartily ridiculed: in short, Camilla is the sum of all beauty, and the casket in which are deposited honour, affability, modesty, and all the qualifications that dignify and adorn a woman of virtue. Here, take back your money, which I have had no occasion to use: the chastity of your spouse is not to be shaken by such mean considerations as those of promises and presents: be satisfied, Anselmo, and make no more unprofitable trials; since you have dry-shod crossed the sea of those doubts and suspicions, which are and may be entertained of women, seek not to plunge yourself anew into the dangerous gulf of fresh difficulties, by using another pilot to make a second trial of the strength and tightness of the vessel, which  
you.

you have received from heaven, to perform the voyage of this life: but, consider yourself as in a safe harbour, where you ought to secure yourself with the anchor of sound reflection, and remain until you are called upon to pay that tax from which no human rank can exempt you."

Anselmo was infinitely rejoiced at this information of Lothario, which he believed as implicitly as if it had been pronounced by an oracle: but, nevertheless, he besought him to continue his addresses, merely for curiosity and amusement, tho' not with the same eagerness and diligence which he had used before: he desired him to write verses in praise of Camilla, under the name of Chloris, promising to tell his wife, that he, Lothario, was in love with a lady whom he celebrated under that fictitious name, in order to preserve the decorum due to her character: and he assured him, that if Lothario did not choose to take the trouble of making verses, he himself would compose them for the occasion. "You shall not need, said Lothario; the muses are not quite so averse, but they visit me sometimes: you may tell Camilla what you have mentioned, concerning my pretended love; and as for the verses, if not adequate to the subject, they shall, at all events, be the best I can make."

This agreement being concerted between the impertinent husband and treacherous friend, Anselmo returned to his own house, and asked Camilla, what she wondered he had not mentioned before; namely, the meaning of that letter which she had dispatched to him in the country. She answered, that she fancied Lothario once looked at her with more freedom than he used to take when Anselmo was at home; but, now she was undeceived, and convinced of its being no more than mere imagination; for, he had of late, avoided all occasions of being alone with her. Anselmo said she might make herself intirely easy, from that quarter; for, he knew that Lothario was in love with a lady of fashion in the city, whom he celebrated under the name of Chloris; and even, if he was free of any such engagements, there was nothing to be feared from the honour of Lothario, and the friendship subsisting between them. If Camilla had not been previously advertised by her secret gallant, of this supposed love of Chloris, with which he intended to hoodwink her husband, that he might sometimes indulge himself in her own praise, under the cover of that name; she would, without doubt, have been distracted with jealousy, but, thus instructed, she heard him without surprize or concern.

Next day, while they were at dinner, Anselmo intreated his friend to repeat some of the verses he had composed in praise of Chloris, who being utterly unknown to Camilla, he might securely say what he pleased: "Tho' she were of her acquaintance, answered Lothario, I should not think myself bound to conceal my passion; for, when a lover praises the beauty, and

at

at the same time, bewails the cruelty of his mistress, her reputation can suffer no prejudice: but, be that as it will, I own, I yesterday wrote a song on the ingratitude of Chloris, which you shall hear.

## I.

WHEN night extends her silent reign,  
And sleep vouchsafes the world to bless,  
To heav'n and Chloris, I complain  
Of dire and affluent distress.

## II

When Phœbus, led by rosy morn,  
At first, his radiant visage shews,  
With tears, and sighs and groans, forlorn,  
My soul the bitter plaint renews.

## III.

When from his bright meridian throne,  
The rays descend in dazzling rain,  
With aggravated grief I moan,  
And night brings back the woeful strain.  
Thus, to my vows and pray'rs, I find  
My Chloris deaf, and heav'n unkind.

The song was approved by Camilla, and much more so by her husband, who applauded it to the skies, and observed that the lady must be excessively cruel who could resist such a true and pathetic complaint. "What! said Camilla, is every thing true that we are told by the poets when they are in love?" "What they rehearse as poets, answered Lothario, is not always truth; but, what they affirm as lovers, is always from the heart." "You are certainly in the right," replied Anselmo, with a view of supporting and giving sanction to Lothario's sentiments, in the opinion of Camilla, whose indifference about her husband's artifice was now equal to her love for his pretended friend. Pleased therefore, with his performances, because she very well knew that his inclinations and compositions were inspired by, and addressed to her, who was the true Chloris, she desired him, if he had any more songs or verses, to repeat them. "I have another, said Lothario, but, I believe, it is not so good; or rather, it is less tolerable than the last. However, you shall judge for yourself—here it is.

## I.

YES, cruel maid! I welcome death,  
 And tho' I perish undeplor'd,  
 Thy beauty, with my latest breath,  
 Shall be applauded and ador'd.

## II.

Tho' lost in dark oblivion's shade,  
 Bereft of favour, life and fame,  
 My faithful heart, when open laid,  
 Will shew thine image and thy name.

## III.

These reliques I preserve with care,  
 My comfort in disastrous fate;  
 For, steel'd and whetted by despair,  
 My love, new force acquires from hate.  
 Unhappy those! who darkling, fail  
 Where stars and ports and pilots fail.

This song was commended as much as the first, by Anselmo, who in this manner, added link to link of the chain with which he enslaved himself, and secured his own dishonour; for, then Lothario disgraced him most, when he thought himself most honoured, and every step that Camilla descended towards the very center of contempt, she, in the opinion of her husband, mounted to the very summit of virtuous reputation: about this time, happening to be alone with her maid, "I am ashamed, dear Leonela, said she, when I consider how I have undervalued myself; for, I ought to have made Lothario employ a great deal of time, in purchasing the intire possession of my favours, which I so willingly surrendered at once; and I am afraid that he will look upon my sudden yielding as the effect of levity, without reflecting upon the violence of his own addresses, which it was impossible to resist." "Let not that give you the least disturbance, madam, answered Leonela; for, there is no reason why a thing should lose its estimation, by being freely given, if it is actually good in its kind and worthy of esteem; nay, it is a common saying, that he who gives freely, gives twice." "There is also another common observation, replied Camilla, that which is easily got, is little valued." "You are not at all affected by that observation, resumed Leonela; for, love (they say) sometimes flies, sometimes walks, runs with one, creeps with another, warms a third, burns a fourth, wounding some, and slaying others. In one moment, it begins, performs and concludes its career; lays siege in the morning to a fortress, which is surrendered before night, there being no force that can withstand  
 its

its power. This being the case, what cause have you to be alarmed or afraid; this was the power that assisted Lothario, by making use of my master's absence, as the instrument of his success; and what love had determined, must of necessity have been concluded during that period, before Anselmo could, by his return, prevent the perfection of the work. Opportunity is the best minister for executing the designs of love; and is employed in all his undertakings, especially in the beginning of them. This I know to be true, more by experience than hearsay; and I shall one day tell you, madam, that I am a girl of flesh and blood, as well as your ladyship. Besides, your ladyship did not yield until you had discerned in the looks, sighs, protestations, promises and presents of Lothario, his whole soul undisguised, and adorned with such virtues as rendered him worthy of your love. Let not, therefore, these scrupulous and whining reflexions harass your imagination; but, assure yourself, that Lothario's love and yours are mutual: so, that you may think yourself extremely happy, in being caught in the amorous snare by a man of worth and honour, who not only possesses the four qualities beginning with \*S, which ought to be the case of all true lovers, but also, a whole alphabet of accomplishments. Listen, and you shall hear how cleverly I will recount them. He is, in my simple opinion, amiable, benevolent, courageous, diverting, enamoured, firm, gay, honourable, illustrious, loyal, mettlesome, noble, obedient, princely, qualified, rich, and the S. S. as I have already observed. Then, he is trusty, vigilant, the X does not suit him, because it is a harsh letter; Y stands for youth, and Z for zeal, in his attachment to you."

Camilla laughed at the alphabet of her maid, whom she found more knowing in the affairs of love than she had imagined; and this knowledge indeed she confessed, disclosing to her mistress an intrigue that she carried on with a young man of a good family in town. Camilla was disturbed at this information, fearing that her honour ran some risk from their correspondence; and when she pressed her to confess, whether or not it had been brought to the last extremity, she, without the least symptom of shame, answered in the affirmative: for, it is very certain, that the failings of mistresses divest their servants of all modesty; because, seeing their ladies trip, they think themselves intitled to halt, without being at the trouble to conceal their defect. Camilla, thus circumstanced, could fall upon no other expedient than that of cautioning her maid against betraying her to the person who was her gallant, and beseeching her to keep her own intrigue secret, that it might not fall under the observation of Anselmo and Lothario.

\* *Senfato, Secreto, Sobrepasado, Senzera*.—Sensible, secret, surpassing and sincere.

Leonela promised to be upon her guard, but managed her affairs with so little discretion, that she confirmed Camilla in the apprehension of losing her reputation by the carelessness of her maid ; for, the bold and immodest Leonela, seeing that her lady's conduct was not the same as formerly, had the assurance to introduce and conceal her lover in the house, conscious, that although her mistress should perceive, she durst not detect him, in that situation. Among other disadvantages incurred by the slips of women of fashion, they become slaves to their own servants, and find themselves obliged to connive at their impudence and vice.

This was the very case of Camilla, who, though she more than once, observed Leonela engaged with her gallant, in one of the chambers, far from reprimanding her on that score, she gave her opportunities of concealing him, and did all she could to prevent his being seen by her husband. But, all their caution could not screen him from the notice of Lothario, who, perceiving him come out of the house, one morning at break of day, and not knowing who he was, at first mistook him for a phantome ; but, seeing him run away, and seek to hide himself with care and concern, he soon changed that simple opinion for another which would have ruined them all, had not Camilla found out an expedient to prevent their destruction. He was so far from thinking, that this man, whom he saw coming out of Anselmo's house, at such an unseasonable hour, had gone in on Leonela's account, that he did not even remember there was such a person in the world ; on the contrary, he was firmly persuaded, that Camilla, who yielded so easily to his addresses, had acted in the same manner, to some other person : for, this additional misfortune attends a loose woman, that she loses her credit even with the man by whose importunities and intreaties her honour was subdued : nay, he believes that she will be more easily won by another than by him, and implicitly credits every suspicion that may arise from that unjust inference. On this occasion, Lothario's good sense failed, and all his caution seemed to vanish ; since, regardless of every thing that was right or reasonable, without further examination, he hied him to Anselmo before he was up, where, impatient and blind with the jealous fury that preyed upon his entrails, and inflamed with the desire of being revenged upon Camilla, who had given him no offence, he expressed himself thus :

“ You must know, Anselmo, that for some days past, I have had a continual struggle with myself, endeavouring to suppress that which I no longer, either can or ought to conceal from your knowledge. The fortress of Camilla is at last surrendered, and submitted entirely to the dominion of my will. This I have delayed imparting to you, until I should be certain, whether her compliance was owing to some transient flash of affection,



tion, or to the desire of trying the sincerity of those addresses which, by your own direction, were carried on: and, I likewise concluded, that if she was a woman of honour and virtue, as we both imagined, she would, ere now, have given you an account of my sollicitation. But, finding that still undone, I take it for granted, she means to keep her promise of giving me an interview in the wardrobe, the very next time you go to the country. And here it was where Camilla actually used to entertain him. However, as the crime is committed in thought only, before an opportunity offers of performing that promise, Camilla may change her mind, and repent of her weakness. Wherefore, as you have hitherto, in whole, or in part, followed my advice, I hope you will treasure up and observe one which I shall now offer, that you may, without the least possibility of being deceived, carefully and cautiously satisfy yourself, so as to take such measures as your prudence shall suggest. You may pretend that you are going, as usual, for two or three days, to the country, and, in the mean time, conceal yourself in the wardrobe, where you will find tapestry and plenty of other things for the purpose: from thence, you, with your own eyes, as I with mine, will observe the conduct of Camilla, and if unhappily you should find more cause to fear than to hope, you may in person, revenge your own wrongs, with silence, safety and discretion."

Anselmo was thunderstruck at this declaration of Lothario, which came upon him when he least expected it; for, he already looked upon Camilla as a conqueror in the fictitious assaults of his friend, and had actually begun to enjoy the glory of her triumph. After having stood silent for a long time, with his eyes fixed upon the ground, "Lothario, said he, you have acted up to the expectation of my friendship: I will adhere to your advice in every thing; and hope you will keep this unexpected affair as secret as the nature of it requires."

His false friend promised to observe the caution, but soon as he quitted the apartment, repented of every thing he had said, reflecting how ill-informed he was of the truth, and that he might have punished Camilla by means less cruel and dishonourable. He cursed his own folly, condemned his precipitation, and endeavoured to find out some expedient to undo what he had done, or, at least, bring it to some favourable issue. At length, he resolved to disclose the whole to Camilla, as there wanted not opportunities of being with her alone; and that very day, being together, she made use of the first that happened, addressing herself to him in this manner: "Know, my dear Lothario, that my heart is ready to burst with one affliction, which is so grievous, that it will be a wonder if I survive it: Leonela is arrived to such a pitch of impudence, that, every night  
she

she introduces a gallant into the house, and remains with him till morning, very much at the expence of my reputation, as the field is left open for any malicious construction, upon seeing a man come out of my house, at such unseasonable hours: and the misfortune is, I dare neither chide nor chastise her for her audacity; for, her being privy to our correspondence, puts a bridle in my mouth, obliging me to be silent on the subject of her folly, from which, I fear, some mischance will befall us."

When Camilla began this discourse, Lothario imagined it was an artifice to deceive and persuade him, that the man he had seen coming out of the house had been there on Leonela's account only; but, seeing his mistress weep, and in the utmost affliction, intreat him to find out some remedy for this inconvenience, he was convinced of the truth, and covered with shame and remorse for what he had done: nevertheless, he desired Camilla to make herself easy, and promised to fall upon some method to curb Leonela's insolence. He then told her what, instigated by the rage of jealousy, he had disclosed to Anselmo, who, by his appointment, was to conceal himself in the wardrobe, that he might have an incontestible proof of her infidelity: he begged pardon for his madness, with advice how to remedy it, and to extricate himself from the labyrinth in which he was involved by his own imprudence. Camilla was astonished at the discourse of Lothario, whom she chid and reprimanded with great reason and resentment, for the groundless suspicion which had driven him to such a mad and mischievous resolution. But, women having naturally more invention than man can boast of, either for a good or bad occasion, though sometimes, they fail in premeditated schemes; Camilla instantly thought of a cure for this seemingly incurable dilemma, and bad Lothario prevail upon her husband to conceal himself in the appointed place, the very next day; for, she hoped to reap such advantage from his concealment, as that, for the future, they should enjoy each other, without the least fear or interruption. She, therefore, without disclosing to her lover, the whole of her plan, desired him to take care, when Anselmo was hid, to come at Leonela's call, and answer every question she should ask, in the same manner as he would reply, if he did not know that her husband was within hearing. Lothario insisted upon knowing the particulars of her scheme, that he might with more security and success perform his cue; but, Camilla assured him, he had nothing to do but answer her questions with truth and sincerity; being unwilling to make him previously acquainted with her design, lest he should disapprove of that which to her seemed so necessary, and recommend another, which, perhaps, she might not think so effectual. Accordingly, Lothario took his leave; and next day, Anselmo, under pretence  
of

of going to his friend's country-house, set out, but soon returned to his hiding-place; Camilla and her maid having purposely given him an opportunity of getting in unseen. There he remained in a state of perturbation, which may be easily conceived to harass the breast of a man who expected to see with his own eyes, the bowels of his honour dissected, and found himself on the brink of losing that supreme bliss which he thought he possessed in his beloved Camilla.

She and her maid, by this time, certified of his being there, went to the wardrobe, which Camilla no sooner entered, than heaving a profound sigh, "Dear Leonela, said she, rather than execute the design which I conceal from your knowledge, that you may not endeavour to prevent it, would it not be better for you to take this poignard of Anselmo, and plunge it in my unfortunate bosom? Yet, do not, Leonela; for it were unreasonable, that I should be punished for another's crime; I want, first, to know what the daring and licentious eyes of Lothario have discerned in my conduct, that should encourage him to declare a passion so guilty as that which he hath owned, so much to my dishonour and the prejudice of his friend. Go to that window, Leonela, and beckon to him, for, doubtless, he is now in the street, expecting to succeed in his wicked intention: but, I shall first, execute mine, which is equally honourable and severe." "Alas, madam! answered the cunning and well-instructed Leonela, how do you intend to use that fatal poignard? are you determined to take away your own life, or that of Lothario? by sacrificing either the one or the other, you will intirely ruin your own reputation. You should rather stifle your wrongs, than give that wicked wretch an opportunity of finding us here alone: consider, madam, that we are but weak women, and he a determined man, who, blinded by his guilty passion, may, by force deprive you of that, which you value more than life, before you can execute your purpose upon him. A plague upon my master Anselmo, for allowing that impudent fellow, to be so free in his house! besides, madam, should you kill him, as I believe you intend to do, what shall we do with him, after he is dead?" "Nothing, my friend, replied Camilla, but, let Anselmo bury him; for, he ought to take pleasure in the task of interring his own infamy. Go and beckon to him, I say, for every moment I delay my just revenge seems to injure afresh that fidelity which I owe to my husband."

All this conversation was overheard by Anselmo, whose sentiments were entirely changed by what Camilla said: and when he understood that she intended to kill Lothario, he was inclined to come out and discover himself, in order to prevent the deed: but, he was diverted from that resolution by the desire of seeing the issue of his wife's gallant and virtuous determination;

tion; purposing, however, to appear seasonably enough for the safety of his friend.

About this time Camilla, throwing herself upon a couch, was seized with a violent fit, during which Leonela wept bitterly, exclaiming, " Ah, woe is me! must I then see, expiring in these unfortunate arms, the flower of human virtue, the queen of excellent wives, the pattern of chastity!" with other epithets of the same kind, which no body could have heard, without esteeming her the most faithful and afflicted damsel upon earth, and her mistress another persecuted Penelope. Camilla, having soon recovered from her fit, said to her woman, " Why don't you go and call this the most faithful friend that ever was seen by the day, or shrouded by the night? make haste, go, run, fly; let not the fire of my rage be consumed by your delay, and the just vengeance I mean to take, evaporate in curses and unsubstantial threats." " I go, answered Leonela, but, you must first give me that poignard, lest, in my absence, you do a deed to make all those who love you weep to the end of their lives." " Go, dear Leonela, replied her mistress, and fear nothing: for, although, in my opinion, I may be rash and even unreasonable in thus resenting the affront upon my honour; I shall not behave like that Lucretia, who, 'tis said, killed herself, though innocent, without having first punished the villainous cause of her misfortune. If I must die, I will at least fall, fully revenged of him who is the occasion of my being here, to bewail his audacious behaviour, which, I am sure, proceeded from no misconduct of mine."

Many intreaties did she use, before Leonela would go and call Lothario, but, at length, she prevailed; the maid went out to seek him, and, in her absence, Camilla uttered the following soliloquy: " Good heaven! would it not have been more prudent to dismiss Lothario, as usual, than to give him this occasion of thinking me vicious and immodest, even though that opinion can only last until I have an opportunity of undeceiving him? Yes, certainly: but, I shall not think myself revenged, nor the honour of my husband sufficiently vindicated, if he escapes so smooth and clean from this snare into which his wicked inclinations have decoyed him. Let the traitor pay with his life, for the enterprize of his lascivious desire;—the world shall know, if even the affair be made public, that Camilla not only preserved her affection for her husband, inviolate, but also took vengeance on the man who sought to impair it. Yet, methinks, I ought to disclose the whole to Anselmo: but, I have already touched upon the subject, in the letter I sent to him when he was in the country; and his omitting to apply a remedy to the evil I then hinted at, must certainly be owing to his own integrity, and unsuspecting heart, which would not suffer him to believe, that the breast of such a constant friend, could harbour

one thought to the prejudice of his honour: indeed, this was my own opinion, until his behaviour became intolerably licentious, and his presents, promises and tears, fully manifested his guilty purpose. But, wherefore these reflections? does a gallant resolution stand in need of hesitating advice? No!—traitor, avaunt! hither vengeance! enter, thou false, perfidious wretch, come, quick, be speedy, die, and let the consequence be what it will! Pure and unspotted I came into the possession of him whom heaven appointed to be my husband and my lord! and equally pure shall I leave his embrace, tho' bathed in my own chaste blood, and embrued in the tainted gore of the falsest friend that ever friendship saw!" So saying, she brandished the drawn dagger in her hand, and stalked across the room with such disordered steps and violent gestures, that she seemed to have lost her senses, and looked more like a desperate ruffian than a delicate wife.

All this transport and agitation was perceived, with astonishment, by Anselmo, where he stood concealed behind the tapestry: he thought he had now seen and heard enough to dispel suspicions of a stronger kind, than those he entertained; and even wished that the proof might proceed no farther, by Lothario's failing to keep the appointment; for, he was afraid that some sudden, unlucky accident might happen—Being therefore, on the point of shewing himself, and running to embrace and undeceive his wife, he was prevented by seeing Leonela return with his friend, whom Camilla no sooner beheld, than drawing a line before her, with the dagger, she said, "Take notice, Lothario, if you attempt to pass this line, or even approach it, the moment I perceive your intention, I will plunge the poignard in my breast. Without offering the least reply therefore, to this declaration, I desire you will listen to some questions I mean to ask, which you may answer as you shall think proper: in the first place, tell me, Lothario, if you know my husband Anselmo, and what station he maintains in your opinion? and then be as explicit in your sentiments of me: answer without perturbation or difficulty; for, the questions I ask, are easily solved."

Lothario was not so ignorant, but that he had conceived her design, from the moment of her desiring him to advise Anselmo to conceal himself; and therefore, his replies were so seasonable, and corresponded so exactly with her aim, that this fiction had all the air of the most genuine truth. "Beautiful Camilla, said he, I did not imagine you had sent for me, with a view of asking questions so foreign to the purpose for which I come: if you mean to delay the promised bliss, you might have protracted the assignation to a more distant term; for, the nearer the prospect of enjoyment is, the more grievous will the disappointment be: but, that you may have no cause to complain of my refusing to answer your demands, I will own that I know

your husband Anselmo, with whom I have been intimate from our most tender years. Of the friendship (as you know) subsisting between us, I will say nothing, that I may not bear witness to the wrong which love, the powerful excuse of greater crimes, compels me to commit: you too I know, and rate as high as you can possibly be in his esteem; for a prize of less value I should not have acted so unbecoming my own character, or transgressed those laws of perfect friendship, which I have broken and violated, at the instigation of that mischievous and irresistible power."

"Since thou art self-convicted so far, replied Camilla, thou mortal enemy to all that merits love! with what face darest thou appear before her who is the mirror that reflects him, and in which thou oughtest to have seen how little reason and encouragement thou hadst to wrong his honour: but, unfortunate that I am! I have found out the cause that induced thee to forget thyself so far; it must have been some lightness of carriage in me; immodesty I will not call it, because it could not be the effect of deliberate determination, but must have proceeded from a neglect of some of those forms which women often inadvertently omit, before those whom they think they can entertain without ceremony. Otherwise, tell me traitor, when did I ever answer thy addresses with any word or sign that could awaken in thy breast, the least glimpse of hope to accomplish thy infamous aim? did I not always reject and reprove thy amorous protestations with rigour and severity? and when were thy promises and presents believed and accepted? But, as I think no person could long persevere in such a flagitious intention, without being supported by some sort of hope, I am willing to lay the blame of your impertinence at my own door; since, without doubt, some failure of care in me, hath enabled you to exert yours so long; and therefore, I will inflict upon myself, the punishment that your crime deserves: but, that you may see, in being thus inhuman to myself, it was impossible for me to deal mildly by you, I have invited you hither, to be witness of the sacrifice I mean to offer to the injured honour of my noble husband, whom you have aggrieved to the utmost of your power, I myself being accessory to the wrong, because I have not industriously enough avoided all occasion, if I gave you any, of favouring and countenancing your wicked inclinations. I say, the suspicion I have, that some levity of mine engendered such frantic sentiments in your bosom, gives me the utmost pain, and prompts me to chastise my indiscretion with my own hands, rather than make my fault more public, by submitting to another executioner: but, if I must perish, my fall shall be accompanied with the death of him whose blood will satisfy the vengeance which I already in some measure enjoy, when I consider that, wheresoever I go, I shall have before mine eyes, the  
victim

victim I offered to the most disinterested justice, in punishing the wretch who hath reduced me to this despair."

So saying, she assaulted Lothario with incredible force and agility, manifesting such eagerness to plunge the poignard in his breast, that he himself doubted whether her endeavours were feigned or real, and was actually obliged to exert his whole strength in defending himself from Camilla, who acted this strange imposture so much to the life, that, in order to give it the greater appearance of truth, she resolved to colour it with her own blood; for, seeing, or feigning that she could not touch Lothario, she cried, "Tho' fate denies me the full satisfaction of my just desire, it cannot rob me of one part of my revenge." With these words, struggling to disengage her dagger-hand, which was held by Lothario, she at last succeeded, and directing her poignard to a part of her body, which she thought she might slightly wound without danger, she sheathed it between her shoulder and left breast, and fell upon the floor, as in a swoon.

Leonela and Lothario were astonished and confounded at this event, and still dubious whether or not Camilla was in earnest, when they saw her stretched upon the ground, and bathed in her own blood. Lothario ran, in the utmost fright and consternation, to draw forth the dagger; but, perceiving what a superficial wound she had made, he recovered of the terror which had begun to seize him, and could not help admiring anew, the uncommon sagacity, prudence, and discretion of the beautiful Camilla: that he might, therefore, proceed in the part he had to act, he began to make a long and sorrowful lamentation over the body, as if she had been really dead, imprecating a thousand curses, not only upon himself, but also upon him who was the original cause of this disaster: and as he knew that Anselmo was listening, said such melancholy things, that whosoever had heard him, would have pitied his case as much as that of Camilla, tho' they had believed her actually dead.

Leonela lifted her up, and laying her on the bed, earnestly intreated Lothario to find some person who would cure her privately; and begged he would advise her, with regard to what she should tell Anselmo, about her lady's wound, in case he should return before she was cured: he said, she might tell him what she pleased, for, he was then in no condition to give any profitable advice about the matter: he only desired her to fall upon some method of staunching the blood; and declared, that for his own part, he would go where man should never see him. He accordingly departed, with the appearance of infinite grief and anxiety, and, when he found himself alone, in a private place, crossed himself with amazement, at the invention of Camilla, and the artful behaviour of her maid: he could easily conceive that Anselmo was, by this time, thoroughly convinced of his having

second Portia for his wife; and was impatient to see him, that they might together extol her behaviour, which, tho' imposture, had more appearance of truth than any thing of the same kind that had ever been practised.

Leonela, as she was desired, stopt her lady's blood, of which there was just enough to give credit to her artifice; and washing the wound with a little wine, bound it up as well she could, uttering such sorrowful expressions all the time, as would have been sufficient, without any previous lamentation, to persuade Anselmo that his wife was the mirror of chastity. Leonela's complaints were joined by those of her mistress, who taxed herself with cowardice and pusillanimity, in having lost the best opportunity she should ever have of parting with that life which she abhorred. She consulted her maid about disclosing the whole affair to her beloved spouse; but, this scheme Leonela opposed, observing that it would lay her master under an obligation of taking vengeance on Lothario; a satisfaction he could not enjoy, without exposing himself to great danger; and that a virtuous woman, far from seeking to involve her husband in quarrels, was in duty bound to keep him free of all such disputes, by every method in her power. Camilla seemed to approve of her maid's prudence, and promised to follow her advice; but, said it would be necessary, at all events, to invent some excuse to Anselmo, about the wound which he could not fail of observing. Leonela assuring her, that she could never tell a lie even in jest, the mistress replied, "What shall I do then, child? for, I would not attempt to frame and maintain a falsehood, even tho' my life depended upon it: since, therefore, we know not how to extricate ourselves otherwise, we must e'en discover the naked truth, rather than run the risk of being detected in a lie." "Don't give yourself any further uneasiness, madam, said Leonela, by to-morrow morning I shall have found some expedient: perhaps the wound being where it is, may be concealed from his view, and heaven vouchsafe to favour your upright and honourable intention. Compose yourself, dear madam, endeavour to calm the perturbation of your spirits, that my master may not perceive your disorder; and leave the consequence to my care, and that of heaven, which never fails to favour the righteous design."

Anselmo listened with the utmost attention to this tragedy, of the death of his honour, which was represented with such exquisite and surprising address, that the actors seemed really transformed into the very characters they feigned: he longed impatiently for night, and an opportunity of escaping unseen, that he might fly to his worthy friend Lothario, and receive his congratulation upon the precious jewel he had found in this vindication of his wife's virtue: they took care to furnish him with the occasion he wanted, and he, without letting it slip, ran immediately in quest of Lothario;



thario: it would be difficult to describe the eagerness of his embraces, at meeting, or to recount the expressions he used in the overflowings of his satisfaction, and the extravagant praises he bestowed on Camilla. All these Lothario heard, without being able to manifest the least signs of joy; his reflexion taxed him with the deceit he had practised, and the injury he had done his unsuspecting friend. Anselmo took notice, that he did not seem to participate in his pleasure, but, believed his concern proceeded from the thoughts of having been the occasion of Camilla's wound: he therefore, among other things, told him to make himself easy on that score; for, the hurt must certainly have been very slight, as they had agreed to conceal it from his knowledge; and since there was no bad consequence to be apprehended, he hoped, for the future, to enjoy, in mirth and good humour, the friendship of his dear Lothario, by whose industry and mediation, he now saw himself raised to the most sublime pitch of human felicity: at the same time he signified, that his desire and design was to pursue no other amusement than that of composing verses in praise of Camilla, that should transmit to latest posterity the remembrance of her worth.

Lothario commended his laudable determination, and promised to contribute all that lay in his power towards the rearing of such an illustrious edifice: so that Anselmo being the most agreeably deceived of any man that ever lived, led by the hand, to his own house, the very man who, tho' in his opinion, the instrument of his glory, was the total perdition of his fame. Camilla received him with a countenance expressing resentment, but, a soul brimful of joy; and their secret correspondence continued uninterrupted for a few months, at the end of which, the wheel of fortune having performed a full circle, the intrigue, which had been hitherto so artfully concealed, was discovered, and Anselmo's Impertinent Curiosity cost him his life.

## C H A P. VIII.

The conclusion of the Impertinent Curiosity.

A LITTLE more of this novel remained to be read, when Sancho came running in great confusion, from the garret where his master Don Quixote lay, bawling aloud, "Come hither, gentlemen! make haste to the assistance of my master, who is this precious minute engaged and grappled in the toughest battle that ever my eyes beheld! Egad! he has given that same giant, the enemy of my lady the princess of Micomicona, such a back-stroke, as hath sliced off his head, as smooth and clean as the skin of a turnip." "What do you mean, brother, said the curate, closing the book? are you in your right wits, Sancho? how the devil can your master be fighting with a giant who is two thousand leagues from hence?"

That instant, they heard a great noise in the apartment, and Don Quixote pronounced aloud, "Stay, villain, robber, caitiff, here I have thee, and thy scymitar shall not avail." Then he began to strike furiously at the walls; and, Sancho exclaimed, "Don't stand here listening, but, go in and part the fray, or lend your assistance to my master; tho' I believe that will be needless by this time; for, the giant is certainly dead, and giving an account to God, of his wicked and mispent life: nay, I saw, with my own eyes, his blood running about the floor, and his head cut off, lying on one side, as large as a wine-bag." "May I be hanged, cried the innkeeper, at these words, if this Don Quixote, or Don Devil, has not cut open one of the skins filled with red wine, that stood at his bed's head, and the wine that ran out is mistaken by this simple fellow for blood!"

So saying, he rushed into the apartment, with the whole company at his heels, and found the knight in a very ludicrous situation: he appeared in his shirt, which was too scanty before, to cover his thighs, and still shorter behind, by six inches at least, and displayed a pair of long lank legs, imbrowned with hair, and not extremely clean; his head was covered with a little, red, greasy night-cap, belonging to the landlord; round his left arm he had wrapped the blanket of his bed, to which Sancho, for good reasons known to himself, bore an inveterate grudge; and in his right, he wielded his drawn sword, with which he laid about him at a furious rate, talking as if he was actually at blows with the giant: but, what was very surprising, his eyes were shut all the time, and he was fast asleep, dreaming of this encounter; for, his imagination was so much engrossed by the adventure he had



F. Hayman inv. et delin.

C. Grignon sculp.



undertaken to atchieve, as to make him dream that he was already arrived in the kingdom of Micomicon, and engaged in single combat with his gigantic adversary, instead of whom, he hacked the wine-bags so furiously, that the whole room was afloat with their contents.

The innkeeper no sooner perceived this havock, than incensed to the last degree, he assaulted Don Quixote with his clenched fists, and began to pummel him so severely, that if the curate and Cardenio had not interposed, he would soon have put an end to the adventure of the giant: yet, for all that, the poor knight did not awake, until the barber, fetching a kettle of cold water from the well, soufed him all over; even then, tho' sleep forsook him, he did not recollect the situation he was in; and Dorothea seeing him so slight and airily equipt, did not choose to be a spectator of the combat between her adversary and protector. Mean while, Sancho went about the room, prying into every corner, and searching for the giant's head, which, when he could not find, "I knew, said he, that every thing goes by enchantment in this house: the last time I was in this very spot, I received a great many thwacks and thumps, without seeing a soul, or being able to guess from whence they came; and now this head is vanished, tho' I saw it cut off with mine own eyes, and the blood spout out of the body, like water from a fountain." "What do'st thou talk of blood and fountains, thou enemy of God and his saints, cried the innkeeper! don't you see, rascal, that there is no blood or fountain, but, the skins that are pierced, and the red wine that swims about the room? I hope the soul of him who pierced them, will swim in hell!" "I know nothing of the matter, replied Sancho; but that, on account of my not finding the head, I shall see my earldom dissolve like salt in water."

Thus the squire, tho' awake, was more extravagant than Don Quixote in his dream: such an impression had his master's promises made upon his imagination. The phlegmatic temper of the squire, together with the mischievous disposition of the knight, well nigh distracted the landlord, who swore, that they should not now, as formerly, go away without paying; and that all the privilege of their errantry should not exempt them, or either of them, from paying to the last farthing for the damage they had done, even to the bits of leather for botching the wine-skins that were cut. The curate, by this time, had got hold of the hands of Don Quixote, who, believing he had now finished the adventure, and was, in presence of the princess Micomicona, fell upon his knees, before the priest, saying, "Renowned princess, your highness may henceforth live secure of what that misbegotten wretch can do; and I, from this day forward, am acquitted of my promise, which is now, by the assistance of heaven above, and the favour of her for whom I live and breathe, happily and fully performed."

"Did

“ Did not I tell you so? cried Sancho, hearing these words. You see I am not drunk, and may take notice that my master hath put the giant in pickle—the holidays will certainly come round, and the earldom fit me to a hair.”

Who could refrain from laughing at the follies of the master and man? they occasioned abundance of mirth to every one present, except the landlord, who cursed himself to the devil. At length the barber, curate and Cardenio, with no small difficulty, put the knight to bed again, where he fell asleep in an instant, like one who had been excessively fatigued: they left him to his repose, and went out to console Sancho for his disappointment in losing the giant's head; but, they found it a harder task to pacify the innkeeper, who was driven almost to despair, by the sudden death of his wine-bags: besides, the landlady began to cry, in a whimpering tone, “ In an unlucky minute and evil hour did this knight-errant enter my doors; for, I am sure, I never beheld him, without paying dearly for the fight! The last time he was here, he refused to defray a whole night's expence of supper, lodging, straw and barley, for himself and his squire, his horse and his ass; saying that he was a knight-errant, forfooth; (God send him and all other knights-errant upon errands that will tend to their sorrow!) and therefore, was not obliged to pay for any thing, because it was not ordained in the registers of chivalry: then, this gentleman coming after him t'other day, borrowed my tail, and tho' I have got it again, it is a good penny the worse for the wearing, the hair being plucked off in such a manner as makes it unfit for my husband's purpose; and to finish and conclude the whole, my bags are broke, and my wine spilt: (would I could see his heart's blood in the same condition!) but, he must not think to get off so easily, for by the bones of my father, and my mother's soul! they shall pay for every thing upon the nail; or, may I never be called by my own name again, or believed to be my father's own child!”

These, and other expressions of the same kind, were uttered, with great bitterness, by the landlady; and her faithful servant Maritornes joined in the exclamation, while the daughter held her peace, and, from time to time, smiled at their indignation, which at last was appeased by the curate, who promised to give them satisfaction, to the best of his power, for the loss they had sustained in bags and wine, and, in particular, for the damage done to the tail, which they valued so highly: and Dorothea comforted Sancho, by telling him, that as soon as ever it should appear that his master had actually cut off the giant's head, and she should find herself in quiet possession of her kingdom, she would bestow upon him the best earldom in her gift. The squire was consoled by this promise, and assured the princess, that he was certain he had seen the giant's head, by the same token,  
that

that he had a huge beard that flowed down to his middle; and that the whole was now vanished, because every thing in that house was performed by enchantment, as he had found by woeful experience, the last time he had lodged in that apartment. Dorothea said she was of the same opinion, desiring he would give himself no uneasiness, for, every thing would be for the best, and succeed to his heart's content. The quiet of the house being thus re-established, the curate wanted to read the remaining part of the novel, which, he perceived, already drew near a close; and Cardenio, Dorothea and the rest, intreating him to finish the story, he, with a view of pleasing them as well as himself, proceeded in these words:

“Anselmo being now satisfied of his wife's virtue, enjoyed himself without the least disturbance or care; while Camilla, in order to disguise her real sentiments, affected always to frown upon Lothario, who, as a further sanction to this stratagem, desired Anselmo to excuse him from coming to his house, since it was plain that Camilla was disgusted at his presence: but, the infatuated Anselmo would by no means comply with this request; so that this unhappy husband was, in a thousand shapes, the author of his own dishonour, while, in his own opinion, he was laying up a store of happiness and reputation.”

About this time, Leonela's desire of gratifying her own loose wishes, carried her to such a pitch of imprudence, that she gave her wantonness the rein, without the least caution; conscious that her mistress would conceal her conduct, and even advise her how to carry on the intrigue with the least danger of being detected. At length, however, Anselmo, one night, heard somebody walking in her apartment, and endeavouring to get in and see who it was, found the door shut against him. This circumstance increasing his desire, he made a violent effort, and the door flew open; upon which he entered, and seeing a man leap out of the window, into the street, ran hastily to lay hold or get sight of him; but, he was disappointed in both, by Leonela, who hanging upon her master, cried, “Hold, dear Sir, be not surprized, nor seek to pursue the person who is fled; he was here on my account, and is as good as my wedded husband.”

Anselmo would give no credit to her words, but, blinded with passion, drew his poignard to stab Leonela, whom he commanded to reveal the truth, on pain of immediate death. She, terrified by his threats, answered, without knowing what she said, “Spare my life, good Sir, and I will disclose things of greater importance than you imagine.” “Speak then, cried Anselmo, or thou shalt instantly die.” “At present, replied Leonela, I am in such perturbation, that I cannot possibly make a distinct confession—delay your vengeance till to-morrow morning, and then you shall hear something that will strike you with astonishment; mean while, be assured,

that he who leapt out of the window, is a young man of this city, who has given me a promise of marriage.

Anselmo being somewhat pacified by this declaration, resolved to grant the respite she demanded; tho' he never dream'd of hearing any thing to the prejudice of Camilla, of whose virtue he was satisfied and secure: he, therefore, quitted the room in which, however, he locked up Leonela, telling her, she must continue in that place, until she should have made this promised discovery: then going to Camilla, informed her of every thing that had passed, together with the promise her maid had made of discovering things of great importance. It is almost needless to say that Camilla was disturbed at this information; the terror that took possession of her was such, that believing, with good reason too, Leonela would actually disclose to Anselmo, every circumstance of her infidelity, she had not resolution enough to wait the issue of her suspicion; but, that very night, while her husband was asleep, collected the best of her jewels, with some money, and getting out of the house, without being perceived, fled to Lothario, and recounted what had happened; at the same time, beseeching him to put her in a place of safety, or accompany her to some retreat, where they should be secure from the search of Anselmo.

Such was the confusion of Lothario, at the news of this unexpected event, that he could not answer one syllable, nor for some time, resolve upon what was to be done. At length, he proposed to carry Camilla to a monastery, the abbess of which was his first cousin; and his mistress consenting to the proposal, he conducted her thither, with all the dispatch which the nature of the case required, and leaving her to the care of his relation, quitted the city that very night, without imparting the cause of his absence to any living soul.

Next morning, soon as it was day, Anselmo, without perceiving that Camilla was gone, so eagerly did he long to hear this confession of her maid, arose and went directly to the room in which he had confined her; but, he no sooner opened the door, and entered the apartment, than he perceived the sheets of the bed tied together, hanging out at the window; a manifest proof that Leonela had lowered herself down into the street, by means of that contrivance: he then returned, with a good deal of chagrin, to communicate his disappointment to Camilla, whom, when he could not find, he was seized with the utmost consternation, especially, as none of the servants could give the least account of her departure: but, chancing, in the course of his inquiry, to find the coffers open, and the best part of her jewels carried off, he began to comprehend his disgrace; and concluded, that Leonela was not the cause of his misfortune.

Dispirited.



Dispirited with this reflexion, he did not stay to dress, but went, in a most disconsolate situation, to give an account of his mishap, to his friend Lothario; and, when he understood from his servants, that their master had gone out in the night, and carried all his ready money along with him, he had well nigh lost his senses. To crown his misery, he returned to his own house, which was deserted by all his servants, and found himself the most solitary being in nature: he knew not what to think, say or do, and his judgment began to be impaired; for, upon recollection, he perceived that he was in an instant, deprived of wife, friend and servants, renounced by heaven, and, what he felt more deeply than any other part of his disaster, destitute of honour, by the misconduct of Camilla, from which he dated his utter destruction. At length, after a long internal struggle, he resolved to go to the country-house of his friend, where he had been, when he furnished the opportunity of planning his own ruin. Accordingly, having locked his door, he mounted his horse, and almost fainting under the burthen of his woes, set out for that place: but, scarce had he travelled one half of the way, when harrassed by his shocking reflexions, he was obliged to alight and tie his horse to a tree, at the root of which, he threw himself down, giving vent to the most lamentable sighs that ever were heaved: there he remained till the twilight, about which time, perceiving a man coming on horseback from the city, after salutation, he asked what news were stirring at Florence?—"The strangest, replied the citizen, that have been heard these many days: it is publicly reported, that Lothario, the intimate friend of Anselmo the rich, who lived at St. John's, hath this last night, carried off the wife of his friend, who is also missing. This discovery was made to the governor by Camilla's maid, who was detected in letting herself down by a sheet, from one of the windows of Anselmo's house: in short, I do not know the particulars exactly; but, the whole city is astonished at this event, which they could never have expected from the intimacy of the two gentlemen, who were so strictly united in the bands of amity, as to acquire the title of the Two Friends." "Do you know what road Lothario and Camilla have taken," said Anselmo? "That is not yet discovered, replied the traveller; tho' the governor hath used great diligence in the inquiry." Anselmo wished him a good even; and the citizen having returned the compliment, proceeded on his journey.

These unhappy news reduced this ill-fated husband to the verge of death as well as distraction: he mounted, however, as well as he could, and arrived at the house of his friend, who had not as yet heard of his misfortune; but, seeing him so exhausted, ghastly and pale, imagined he had met with some grievous disaster. Anselmo begged to be put to bed immediately, and furnished with pen, ink and paper: thus provided, he was left alone, and the

chamber lock'd, at his own desire: then, the remembrance of his misfortune began to be so heavy upon his soul, that he plainly perceived his end approaching, and being desirous of declaring the cause of his strange and sudden death, he took up the pen; but, before he could execute his design, his breath failed him, and he expired, a victim to that sorrow which was occasioned by his own impertinent curiosity. His friend finding it grow late, and that Anselmo had not called, went into his chamber, to enquire about his health: there he found him lying upon his face, one half of his body in bed, and the other on the table, with a pen in his hand, and a written paper lying open before him.

The gentleman, having spoke to him, without receiving an answer, took him by the hand, and feeling him cold and stiff, concluded he was dead. Surprized and concerned to the last degree, he called up his family to be witnesses of this melancholy event, and knowing the paper to be Anselmo's own hand-writing, read the contents, in these words: "I am deprived of life by my own impertinent curiosity: if the news of my death reach Camilla's ears, let her know that I forgive her infidelity; for, she was not bound to perform miracles, nor I under any necessity of expecting them at her hands: since therefore, I have been the contriver of my own dishonour, there is no reason that——" So far he had written, but life had forsaken him, before he could finish the sentence. Next day, his friend sent an account of his death to his parents, who were already informed of his mischance, as also of the convent to which Camilla had retreated; and where she now lay at the point of accompanying her spouse in his last, indispensable journey; not so much on account of Anselmo's death, as in consequence of the information she received concerning her absent lover: it was said, that tho' she was now a widow, she would neither quit the convent, nor take the veil: but, in a little time, the news arrived of Lothario's being killed in a battle which was fought between the renowned captain Gonzalo Fernandez de Cordova, and monsieur de Lautrec, in the kingdom of Naples, whither this too late repenting friend had made his retreat. This event was no sooner known, than Camilla professed herself nun, and, in a few days, yielded up her life a prey to grief and melancholy. Such was the untimely end to which they were all brought, from a beginning of whim and indiscretion!

This novel, said the curate, is not amiss; but, I cannot think the story is true, and if it be feigned, the author has erred in point of invention; for, it cannot be supposed, that any husband would be so mad as to try this dangerous experiment of Anselmo: had it been related of a gallant and his mistress, it might have passed; but, with regard to a husband and his wife, it is altogether improbable: however, the manner of narrating it is not disagreeable.

## C H A P. IX.

An account of other strange adventures that happened at the inn.

AT that instant, the landlord standing at the inn-door, exclaimed, "There's a noble company: odd! if they halt here, we shall sing for joy." "What company," said Cardenio? "Four men, replied the inn-keeper, who ride with short stirrups, each of them equiped with lance, target and mask; with a lady on a side-saddle, dressed in white and veiled, and two attendants on foot." When the priest asked if they were near, he answered, "So near, that they are already at the gate."

Dorothea hearing this information, put on her veil, and Cardenio withdrew into Don Quixote's apartment. Immediately the whole company, announced by the landlord, entered the inn yard, and the four horsemen, who were persons of genteel mien and carriage, instantly alighting, went to help the lady from her horse; when one of them, taking her in his arms, placed her in a chair that stood by the door of the room, in which Cardenio had concealed himself. All this time, neither she nor they took off their masks, nor uttered one syllable; but, when she was seated, she heaved a profound sigh, and let her arms fall down on each side, like a person fainting with weakness. While the footmen led the horses into the stable, the curate, being curious to know who those persons were, so remarkable in their silence and dress, went up and put the question to one of the lacquies, who answered, "Truly, signor, we are as ignorant in that particular as you are; tho' they seem to be people of condition, especially he who took the lady in his arms, because all the rest behave to him with great respect, following his directions in every thing, with the utmost punctuality." "And, pray who may the lady be, said the priest?" "We know as little of her as of the men, replied the lacquey; for, during the journey, I have never once beheld her face; I have often heard her sigh bitterly, and utter piercing groans, in every one of which, she seemed to yield her very soul: but, it is not to be wondered at, that we should know so little of their affairs; my companion and I having attended them two days only: for, meeting us on the road, they intreated and persuaded us to accompany them as far as Andaloufia, promising to pay us handsomely for our trouble." "Have you never heard one of them named," resumed the curate? "Never once, answered the young man; they travel with surprizing silence; nothing is heard but the sobs and sighs of the poor lady, which move us to compassion: we firmly believe, that she is forced upon this journey; and gather  
from

from her dress, that she is a nun, or which is more probable, going to take the veil, and finding herself very little inclined to that way of life, is melancholy at the prospect."

The curate said nothing was more probable, and leaving the lacquey, returned to Dorothea, who, by this time, out of natural sympathy with the affliction of the masked lady, had approached and accosted her in these words: "What is the matter with you, dear madam? If you labour under any indisposition which the practice and experience of women can relieve, my assistance is heartily at your service." To this kind offer no reply was made by the sorrowful lady, who, notwithstanding the other's repeated intreaties, would not open her mouth; until the person, who, by the lacquey's information, was chief of the company, addressing himself to Dorothea, said, "Do not fatigue yourself, madam, in making proffers of service to that woman, who cannot be grateful for any favour she receives; nor importune her for any reply, unless you desire to hear some falsehoods proceed from her lips." "My lips, said the hitherto silent lady, were never profaned with falsehood; on the contrary, my present misfortune is owing to my sincerity and my abhorrence of lies. Of this assertion, you yourself are too sensible; since your own perfidy and falsehood are the effects of my constancy and truth."

These words were distinctly overheard by Cardenio, who was only separated from them by the door of Don Quixote's chamber; and they no sooner reached his ears, than he cried aloud, "Good heaven! What do I hear! What voice is that which struck my sense!" The lady being exceedingly surprized at that exclamation, turned about her head, and not seeing the person that pronounced it, started up and ran towards the apartment from whence it seemed to come; but, was prevented by her conductor, who would not suffer her to move one step farther. In the disorder occasioned by her struggle, her mask dropped off, and discovered a countenance of incomparable and amazing beauty, even tho' disguised with paleness and horror; for, her eyes rolled about to every corner which her sight could reach, with such eagerness and wildness, that she looked like a woman possessed.

Dorothea, and all present, were infinitely concerned at these symptoms, the meaning of which they could not understand: mean while, the cavalier was so busied in holding her fast by the shoulders, that he could not attend to his mask, which also fell to the ground: and Dorothea lifting up her eyes towards him, as he held the lady in his arms, perceived that this cavalier was no other than her own husband, Don Fernando. No sooner did she recognize his features, than fetching a long and melancholy sigh from the very bottom of her soul, she fell backward in a swoon, and if the barber had not been at hand to support her, would have certainly come to the ground:

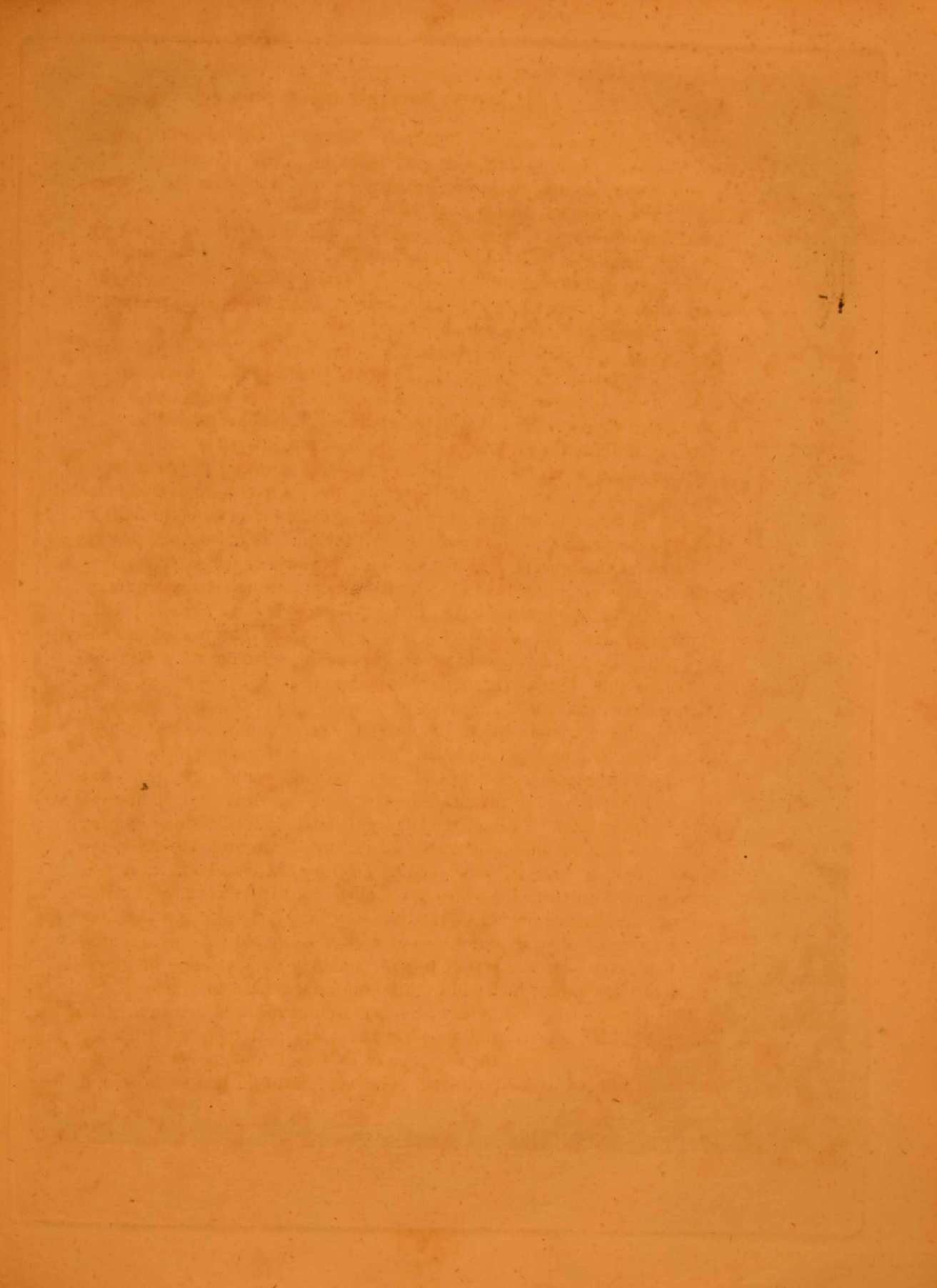
ground: the curate ran instantly to take off her veil, that he might sprinkle water on her face, which was immediately known by Don Fernando, who held the other lady in his arms, and was thunderstruck at the sight: he would not, however, quit Lucinda, who struggled to get loose; she and Cardenio having by this time, recognized each other by their mutual exclamations: he had also overheard the groan uttered by Dorothea, when she fainted, and believing that it proceeded from Lucinda, rushed out of his apartment in a fright, when the first object he beheld was Don Fernando clasping her in his arms. This nobleman knew him immediately, and all three, namely, Lucinda, Cardenio, and Dorothea, were struck dumb with astonishment, and seemed insensible of what had happened; gazing in silence, at one another.

Dorothea directed her eager view to Don Fernando, who stared at Cardenio, whose eyes were fixed upon Lucinda, who looked wishfully at him; but, the first that broke silence, was this last, who addressed herself in these words to Don Fernando: "Suffer me, signor, in regard to your own character, since you are deaf to every other consideration, to cleave to that wall of which I am the ivy, to avail myself of that prop from which you could not disengage me, with all your importunities, promises and threats. Behold how heaven, by unusual and mysterious means, hath brought me to my true and lawful husband: and since you know, by dear-bought experience, that nothing but death can expel his image from my breast, let this plain demonstration, since all other attempts are vain, convert your love into rage, your friendship into hate, and instantly deprive me of life, which I shall yield with pleasure in the presence of my legal lord, who will then, perhaps, be convinced of the fidelity I preserved to the last moment of my existence."

In the mean time Dorothea, being recovered from her swoon, had listened to Lucinda's declaration, by which she discovered her situation and name: but, perceiving that Don Fernando neither quitted his hold, nor answered one word to her sollicitation, she exerted her whole strength in falling down on her knees before him, and having shed a large quantity of tears from her beautiful eyes, accosted him in these words: "My dear lord! if your eyes were not dazzled and obscured by the rays of that sun which you hold eclipsed within your arms, you would perceive that she who thus kneels before you, is the unhappy (so long as you are pleased she should be so) and forlorn Dorothea—I am that humble country-maiden whom your generosity or passion vouchsafed to raise to the honour of calling you her own. I am she who, confined within the bounds of modesty, lived a contented life, until moved by your importunities, and seemingly upright addresser, she opened the gates of her reserve, and surrendered to you the keys of her freedom. An offering but ill requited, as plainly ap-  
pears

pears by that hard fate, in consequence of which, I am found in this place, and also find you in your present situation. Nevertheless, I would not have you imagine that I came hither, induced by any dishonourable motives; but, that the sorrow conceived at seeing myself forsaken and forgotten by you, was the sole cause of my retreat. You desired I should be your own, and that desire you accomplished so effectually, that altho' your inclinations may be changed, it is impossible you should cease to be mine. Consider, my lord, that my unparalleled affection may counterbalance the beauty and birth of her, for whom I am abandoned: you cannot be the fair Lucinda's husband, because you are already mine, nor she become your wife, while she appertains to Cardenio; and it will be a much easier task, if you reflect upon it, impartially, to recal your love for her who adores you, than to gain the affection of one by whom you are abhorred. You solli-cited my unsuspecting heart, you importuned my integrity, you was not ignorant of my lowly station, and know in what manner I yielded to your will; so, that you have no subterfuge, nor the least room to say you was deceived. If this be the case, as doubtless it is, and you be a christian as well as a gentleman, why do you, by such evasions, delay to make the end as happy as the beginning of my fortune? If you will not receive me as what I really am, your lawful wife, at least, admit me into the number of your slaves; for, in whatever shape I belong to you, I shall account myself fortunate and blessed: do not, therefore, by renouncing me intirely, give scandal an opportunity of impeaching my honour. Make not my parents miserable in their old age; their faithful services to your father merit a more kind return: if you think your blood will be debased, in mixing with mine, consider, that almost all the great families on earth have undergone the same intercourse, and that the woman's quality in no manner affects illustrious descents: besides, true nobility consists in virtue, and in that I shall have the advantage over you, if you deny and oppose the justice of my claim. In fine, the last argument I shall use is this, whether you are pleased or displeas'd with your destiny, I am your lawful wife: witness your own words, which neither are, nor ought to be false, if you value yourself on that, for which you undervalue me; witness your handwriting, and heaven above, to the testimony of which you appealed, for the performance of your promise: and if all these should fail, your conscience will never cease whispering to you, amidst your pleasures, in vindication of this truth, which will disturb your most exalted enjoyments."

This supplication, enforced with other arguments, was pronounced so feelingly by the afflicted and weeping Dorothea, that tears of sympathy were shed by all present, the companions of Don Fernando not excepted; he himself listened without answering one word, until she had made an end  
of







of her address, and begun to utter such woeful sighs and groans, as were almost sufficient to melt an heart of brass. Lucinda stood gazing upon her with equal compassion for her sorrow, and admiration of her beauty and good sense; nay, she would have gone and offered her all the consolation in her power, had she not still been kept fast locked in the arms of Don Fernando, who, full of confusion and surprize, after having for a good while fixed his eyes upon Dorothea, with great attention, opened his arms, and leaving Lucinda at liberty, said, "You have conquered, beauteous Dorothea—The victory is yours; for, so many truths conjoined are surely irresistible."

Lucinda was so faint and weak, that when Don Fernando quitted her, she would have fallen to the ground, had it not been for Cardenio, who had placed himself behind her ravisher, that he might not be known: but now, laying aside all fear, and resolving to adventure every thing, he sprung to the assistance of Lucinda, and catching her in his arms, "If, said he, it be the will and pleasure of pitying heaven, that you should find repose, my faithful, constant and charming Lucinda! I think you can enjoy it no where so securely, as in these arms, which now receive, and formerly encircled you, when fortune was pleased that I should call you mine."

At these words, she gazed upon him with great eagerness; she had before begun to recognize his voice, and now, recollecting his features, like a person deprived of judgment, who disregards all decency and form, she threw her arms about his neck, and joining her lips to his, "Yes, my dear Cardenio, said she, you are the real lord of this your slave, in spite of adverse fate, and all those threats, tho' greater than they are, that persecute my life, which now depends on yours alone."

An unexpected sight was this, to Don Fernando, and all the by-standers, who were not a little surprized at what they saw. While Dorothea observing her husband change colour, and signify an inclination of being revenged upon Cardenio, by laying his hand upon his sword, ran, with incredible agility, and clasping his knees, which she kissed, held him so firmly embraced that he could not move, saying, while the tears incessantly trickled from her eyes, "What means my only refuge, to do on this unexpected occasion? Your own wife is now kneeling before you, and she whom you desire to wed is in the arms of her lawful husband; consider whether it be just or possible for you to undo that which heaven hath done; why should you seek to unite yourself with one who, disdain all opposition and inconvenience, and confirmed in her own constancy and truth, even before your eyes, lets fall from hers, a shower of tenderness into the bosom of her lawful spouse? for the sake of God and of yourself, I intreat and beseech you not only to check your indignation, but also to suppress it intirely, so,

that these two lovers may, without any impediment from you, enjoy each other as long as heaven will permit them to live. In this self-denial you will manifest the generosity of your noble and illustrious soul, and convince the world, that you are governed more by reason than by appetite."

While Dorothea pronounced these words, Cardenio, though he held Lucinda in his arms, kept his eyes still fixed upon Don Fernando, with full resolution, if he attempted any thing to his prejudice, to defend himself as well as he could, against his adversary and all his adherents, although it should cost him his life. But, this young nobleman's friends, together with the curate and barber, not forgetting honest Sancho Panza, who were present at the whole affair, interposed, and making a circle about him, begged earnestly, that he would be pleased to consider the tears of Dorothea, and if what she alledged was true, as they firmly believed it was, no longer suffer her to be defrauded of her just and reasonable hope. They desired him to observe, that in all appearance, it was not by accident, but the immediate direction of providence, that they had all met together, so unexpectedly in this place: and the curate entreated him to reflect, that death alone could divide Lucinda from Cardenio; that though they might be parted by the edge of the sword, they would look upon death as the greatest blessing that could befall them; and that, in a case of this kind, which admitted of no other remedy, it would be his wisest course, to constrain and conquer his own passion, and demonstrate the generosity of his heart, by permitting, of his own free-will, these two lovers to enjoy that state of happiness which heaven had ordained for their lot: that he should contemplate Dorothea's beauty, which far from being excelled, was equalled in few or none; and to her beauty, add the consideration of her humility and excessive love; above all, take notice, that if he valued himself upon being a gentleman and a christian, he could do no less than perform the promise he had given, and in so doing, act in conformity to the will of God, and satisfy the discreet part of mankind, who are very sensible, that it is the prerogative of beauty, even in a low estate, when accompanied with virtue, to be lifted up to the highest rank, without any disparagement to the person who thus raises it to an equality with himself; and since the irresistible force of inclination must prevail, provided there be nothing criminal in the means, he is not to be blamed who acts according to its dictates."

To these arguments were added so many of the same sort, that the valiant heart of Don Fernando, nourished by illustrious blood, relented, and he was overcome by the force of that truth which, however inclined, he could not deny. The signal of his surrender, and yielding to this reasonable and just proposal, was his stooping down and embracing Dorothea,

to

to whom he said, " Rise, madam ; it is not just, that she who reigns in my soul, should lie prostrate at my feet. If hitherto, I have given small proof of what I now profess, perhaps, my omission hath been owing to the appointment of heaven, that by giving you an opportunity of manifesting the sincerity of your love, I might know how to esteem you according to your deserts. I beg, therefore, you will not upbraid me with my misconduct and unkind neglect ; since the same force and occasion that attached me to you, was the cause of my endeavour to disengage myself. That you may be convinced of the truth, behold and contemplate the eyes of the now contented Lucinda, in which you will find an excuse for all my errors : and, since she hath found and attained her heart's desire, and my utmost wish is fulfilled in thus retrieving you, may she live in peace and quiet, for many happy years, with her Cardenio, and may heaven grant the same felicity to me with Dorothea."

So saying, he embraced her again, pressing his lips to hers with such tenderness, that it required his greatest efforts to forbear giving, with his tears, indubitable signs of his affection and remorse. But, those endeavours did not succeed with Lucinda, Cardenio, and every other person present, who began to weep so plentifully, either at their own happiness, or the satisfaction of their friends, that one would have thought some grievous misfortune had happened to the whole company. Even Sancho blubbered, though he afterwards owned, that his sorrow proceeded from seeing that Dorothea was not, as he imagined, the queen of Micomicon, from whom he expected such favours.

This universal admiration and thaw having lasted some time, Cardenio and Lucinda fell upon their knees before Don Fernando, whom they thanked for his generosity in such polite terms, that he scarce knew what answer to make, but, raised and embraced them both, with demonstrations of uncommon courtesy and affection. Then asking Dorothea, how she had come to that place so distant from her own home, she, with great elegance and brevity, repeated what she had before recounted to Cardenio : and her husband and his company were so pleased with her narration, that they wished it could have been spun out to a much greater length : so gracefully did she relate her own misfortunes.

Her task being finished, Don Fernando informed them of what had happened in the city after he found, in Lucinda's bosom, the paper in which she declared herself Cardenio's wife. Seeing that she could not possibly be his, he said, he was determined to put her to death, and would actually have executed his purpose, had not her parents interposed. He then quitted the house, full of shame and resentment, resolving to revenge himself with the first opportunity ; and next day, understood that she was

gone off, without any body's knowing whither she had directed her flight. At length, however, in a few months, he got notice, that she was in a certain monastery, where she intended to spend her whole life, since she could not enjoy it in the company of Cardenio. He no sooner received this intimation, than choosing these three gentlemen for his companions, he went strait to the place of her residence, but, without speaking to her, or making himself known, lest the monastery should be more strictly guarded on his account. He waited therefore until, one day, he found the porter's lodge open, when leaving two of his friends to secure the door, he entered the monastery, with the other, in quest of Lucinda, whom he found in the cloisters, talking with a nun; and snatching her off, without giving her a moment's time for recollection, carried her instantly to a place where they provided themselves with necessaries for their journey. This exploit they were enabled to perform with safety, because the monastery stood in the middle of a field at a good distance from any village or town. He said, Lucinda no sooner perceived herself in his power, than she fainted away, and when she recovered the use of her senses, did nothing but weep and sigh, without speaking one word; so that, accompanied with silence and tears, they had arrived at that inn, which he looked upon as the heavenly goal where all earthly misfortunes are happily terminated.

#### C H A P. X.

A continuation of the history of the renowned princess Micomicona; with other pleasant adventures.

SANCHO heard every thing that passed, with no small anxiety of mind, seeing the hopes of his preferment vanish into smoke, the beautiful princess Micomicona transformed into Dorothea, the giant into Don Fernando, and his master in a sound sleep, intirely ignorant of what had happened. Dorothea could not persuade herself, that all her good fortune was not a dream; Cardenio entertained the same opinion, which was also embraced by Lucinda; while Don Fernando gave thanks to heaven for its favour, in extricating him from that labyrinth of perplexity, in which he was at the point of losing his reputation and soul. In fine, every person present was well satisfied, and rejoiced at the happy issue of such intricate and desperate affairs. The curate represented every thing in the right point of view, with great discretion, and congratulated the parties concerned, on the felicity they had acquired; but, she whose joy was most vociferous was the landlady, who loudly exulted in the promise

of

of Cardenio and the curate, who had undertaken to pay her with interest, for the damage she had sustained on Don Quixote's account. Sancho alone, as we have already observed, was afflicted, unfortunate and sad, and going to his master who was just awake, said, with a lamentable tone, "Sir knight of the rueful countenance, your worship may now sleep as long as you please, without giving yourself the trouble of slaying the giant, or restoring the princess to her throne—that whole affair is already brought to conclusion."

"I really believe what you say, answered the knight; for, I have been engaged with the giant, in the most obstinate and outrageous combat that I believe I shall ever fight in all the days of my life: with one backstroke, slam went his head to the ground; and discharged such a quantity of blood, that it ran like rills of water, along the field." "Or rather like red wine, your worship should say, replied the squire; for, I must inform you, if you do not already know it, that the dead giant is no other than a wine-bag, and the blood, eighteen gallons of good red wine, which was contained in its belly: the head you cut off is the whore my mother, and the whole affair is gone to the devil." "What does the lunatic mean?" said Don Quixote, are you in your right senses, Sancho?" "Rise, sir, resumed the squire, and see what a fine piece of work you have made, and what a score you have run. You shall behold the queen converted into a private lady, called Dorothea, with many other strange events, at which, if you take them right, you will be hugely astonished." "I shall not wonder at any thing of that kind, replied his master; for, thou may'st remember, the last time we were in this house, I told thee, that every incident which happened was conducted and brought about by enchantment; so that we need not be surpris'd, if the same power should prevail at present." "I should be of your worship's opinion, answered Sancho, if my blanketting had been of the same stamp: but that was not the case; for, it was really and truly a substantial tossing. This very innkeeper, whom we saw to-day, held a corner of the blanket, and canted me into the air with great strength and nimbleness, passing a thousand waggish jokes, and laughing at me all the while; from whence I concluded, simple and sinner as I am, that as I knew their persons, there was no enchantment in the case, but, abundance of bruising and bad fortune." "Well, heaven will make thee amends, said the knight: mean while, reach me my cloaths; for, I want to go forth, and examine those events and transformations which thou hast mentioned."

While Sancho was helping him to dress, the curate gave Don Fernando and his company, an account of Don Quixote's madness, and the artifice they had used to disengage him from the poor rock to which he imagin-

ed himself exiled by the disdain of his mistress. He also recounted all those adventures that Sancho had imparted to him, at which they were not a little surprized, and laughed immoderately; agreeing in opinion with every body who knew the knight, that it was the strangest extravagance that ever entered a disturbed imagination. The priest, moreover, observed, that since the good fortune of Dorothea obstructed the progress of their design, there was a necessity for inventing another plan that should bring him home to his own house. Cardenio proposed that they should prosecute the scheme they had already begun; and Lucinda would act and represent the part of Dorothea." "No, said Don Fernando, that must not be, Dorothea shall still proceed with her own invention; for, as it cannot be far from hence to the habitation of that honest gentleman, I shall be glad to contribute towards his cure." And when he understood that they would arrive in two days, at his house; "Were it farther off, said he, I should go with pleasure, to assist in such a laudable design."

At that instant Don Quixote came forth, armed at all points, with Mambrino's helmet, battered as it was, upon his head, his shield braced upon his arm, and his pole or lance in his hand. Don Fernando and his companions were amazed at this strange apparition, when they beheld such a rueful length of face, so withered and tawny; together with his ill-sorted armour, and the solemnity of his gait. They gazed upon him, in silent expectation of what he would say; while he, with infinite gravity of aspect, fixing his eyes upon Dorothea, accosted her in these words: "Fair lady, I am informed by this my squire, that your greatness is annihilated, and your quality undone, by being changed from your former rank of queen and sovereign princess, into the condition of a private damsel. If this hath been done by the negromancy of the king your father, who is, perhaps, afraid that I should not be able to give you the assistance required; I say, he neither knows, nor ever did know, the half of that art which he professeth; and that he is but little conversant in the history of chivalry; for, had he read and perused it with such leisure and attention as I have bestowed upon that subject, he would have found that, on every occasion, knights of much less reputation than I possess, have achieved much more difficult enterprizes than this; it being a matter of small moment to kill a pitiful giant, let him be as arrogant as he will: for not many hours ago, I saw myself engaged with one—but I chuse to be silent, rather than have my veracity called in question, though time, that unmasks all things, will shew, when we least expect it—"

"That you was engaged with wine-bags, and not with a giant," cried the innkeeper, who was silenced by Don Fernando, and forbid to interrupt the knight's discourse, in any shape whatever. So that Don Quixote  
pro-

proceeded, saying, "In fine, if the father of your disinherited highness hath performed this metamorphosis on your person, for the causes I have mentioned, I hope you will give no credit to such considerations; for, there is no danger upon earth, through which my sword will not open a way, and by laying the head of your adversary in the dust, in a few days, invest yours with that crown to which you have an undoubted right."

Here Don Quixote left off speaking, in expectation of a reply from the princess, who knowing it was Don Fernando's pleasure that she should continue the deceit, until the knight could be brought back to his own house, answered with equal gravity and grace, "Whosoever hath told you, most valiant knight of the rueful countenance, that I am changed and transformed from what I was, has not adhered to the truth, in his information: indeed I am somewhat changed by certain fortunate events which have happened even beyond my own expectation; but, nevertheless, I have not ceased to be what I was, nor altered that resolution which I have always maintained, of taking the advantage of your valiant and invincible arm. Wherefore, dear sir, be so good as to do justice to the honour of the father who begat me, and look upon him as a man of sagacity and foresight; since, by the science he possessed, he found such an easy and effectual path to the cure of my misfortune: for, I firmly believe, that were it not for you, I should not now be so happy as I am, as the greatest part of these gentlemen can truly witness. Nothing then remains, but that we set out to-morrow, because we could not propose to travel far to-day; and as for the success on which my hopes are built, I leave it entirely to God and the worth of your heroic breast."

Don Quixote hearing these words, turned to Sancho, in the most violent indignation, saying, "I protest, sirrah! you are the most malicious little slanderer in Spain. Say, you rascal—you vagabond! did not you tell me just now, that the princess was transformed into a private gentlewoman called Dorothea; and that the head, which I know I cut from the giant's shoulders, was the whore your mother: with many more foolish particulars, which threw me into the greatest confusion that ever I felt since I was born? By heaven! (here he turned up his eyes and bit his lips) I have a strong inclination to commit such slaughter upon thee, as will be an \* instructive warning to all the lying squires who shall henceforward attend knights-errant, in the course of their adventures.

"Pray be pacified, good your worship, cried Sancho, I may very possibly be deceived in what concerns the change of my lady princess Micomicona; but as to the giant's head being a wine-bag, and the blood no

\* In the original, As will put salt in thy skull.

other than good red wine, I am not mistaken, as I shall answer to God! for, the skins that were flashed are still to be seen, by your worship's bedside, and the whole room is flooded with the wine. But the proof of the pudding, is in the \*eating of it: you will be convinced when Mr. What-d'ye-call him our landlord here makes out a bill of the damage he has suffered. As to the rest, I am rejoiced from my soul to find that the queen's majesty is the same as usual; because it concerns me, as well as any other neighbour's child." "I tell thee, Sancho, replied Don Quixote, thou art distracted; forgive me, that is enough." "Enough in all conscience, said Don Fernando, there is nothing more to be said on this subject. I think the princess judges very prudently in deferring her journey till to-morrow; because the day is already far advanced: let us therefore, spend this night in agreeable conversation, and at the approach of day, we will in a body attend the gallant Don Quixote, that we may be witnesses of the unheard-of exploits which he will, doubtless, perform in the course of this vast enterprize he hath undertaken." "It is my duty and resolution to serve and attend you, answered the knight: and I have the most grateful sense of your favour and good opinion, which I shall endeavour to justify, though it should cost me my life, or even more—if more I can pay."

Many compliments and proffers of service passed between Don Fernando and Don Quixote; but, they were interrupted by the arrival of a traveller, who, by his garb, seemed to be a christian slave, lately escaped from Barbary: for, he was clad in a coat of blue cloth, wanting a collar, with short skirts and half-sleeves; his breeches and cap were of the same stuff; and he wore date-coloured buskins, with a Moorish scymitar slung in a shoulder-belt, across his breast. He was followed by a woman dressed in the moorish habit, mounted upon an ass; with a veil over her face, a brocaded bonnet on her head, and a mantle that flowed from her shoulders to her heels. The man was robust, and well-proportioned, seemingly turned of forty, with a brownish complexion, large whiskers, and a well-furnished beard: in short, his mien was so genteel, that if he had been properly dressed, they would have taken him for a man of birth and quality.

Soon as he entered the gate, he called for a private apartment, and seemed very much concerned, when he understood that all the rooms of the inn were engaged: however, he went to the lady in moorish dress, and lifted her off in his arms. Upon which Lucinda, Dorothea, the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes, flocked around her, their curiosity being ex-

\* Literally, You shall see when the eggs are fried. A phrase alluding to the story of a thief, who having stole a frying-pan, and being asked by the owner what he carried under his cloak, replied, You will see when the eggs are fried. Metaphorically, Time will discover.



cited by the novelty of the garb, which none of them had ever seen before; and Dorothea, who was always good humoured, mannerly and discreet, concluding that both she and her conductor were chagrined at their want of a chamber, spoke to her thus: "Be not uneasy, madam, at your want of accommodation here; it is the inconvenience of almost all inns: but, if you will be pleased to partake with us, pointing to Lucinda, perhaps you will find that, in the course of your journey, you have been fain to put up with harder fare." The veiled lady made no answer, but, only rising from her seat, signified her thanks, by crossing her hands upon her bosom, bending her body and bowing her head; so that, from her silence, they conjectured that she must be a native Moor, and that she could not speak any christian language.

Her attendant, who had hitherto been employed in something else, perceiving that the company had made a circle about his companion, who could make no replies to their interrogations, said to them, "Ladies, this young woman understands little or no Spanish, and speaks no language but that of her own country; so that she is incapable of answering any questions you may have asked." "We have asked no questions, said Lucinda, but only made her an offer of our company, for this night, with a share of our lodging, and what accommodation is to be had; and this we tender with that hearty good will which obliges us to serve all strangers, especially those of our own sex who stand in need of our assistance." "Dear madam, replied the conductor, in her name and in my own, I return you a thousand thanks; and highly esteem your proffered favour, which, on this occasion, and from such persons as your appearance proclaims you to be, must certainly be very kind and condescending." "Signor, said Dorothea, is this lady christian or Moor? By her silence and her dress, we are induced to believe that she is not what we could wish her to be." "In her body and dress, replied the stranger, she is a Moor, but altogether a christian in her soul; for, she longs ardently to be a professed convert to our faith." "Then she is not baptized," resumed Lucinda? "She has had no opportunity, said the captive, since she quitted Algiers, which is her native country; and hitherto hath never been in such imminent danger of her life, as to make it necessary, before she is instructed in all the ceremonies enjoined by our holy mother church: but, if it please heaven, she shall be baptized very soon, with decency suitable to the quality of her person, which is greater than either her dress or mine seems to declare."

This intimation raised the curiosity of all the spectators, to know who this Moor and captive were; but, no body chose to ask the question, at that time, which seemed more proper for reposing themselves than relating the history of their lives. Dorothea taking her by the hand, seated the

stranger close by her side, and intreated her to take off the veil: she looked at her conductor, as if she wanted to know what the lady desired, and he told her, in Arabic, that they intreated her to be uncovered; at the same time, advising her to comply with their request. She accordingly unveiled herself, and discovered a face so amiable, that Dorothea thought her handsomer than Lucinda, who, in her turn, gave her the preference to Dorothea; and all present concluded, that if any creature upon earth could vie with them in beauty, it was this moorish lady, who in the opinion of some of the company excelled them both in certain particulars. As beauty, therefore, has the privilege and energy to conciliate minds and attract affections, every body present were seized with an inclination to serve and cherish the charming Moor. Don Fernando asked her name of the captive, who answered Lela Zorayda: this she no sooner heard, than understanding the question which had been put to the christian, she pronounced with great eagerness and sweetness of concern, "No, no Zorayda; Maria, Maria;" signifying that her name was Maria, and not Zorayda: these words, with the affecting manner in which they were expressed, brought tears from the eyes of some of the hearers, especially the women, who are naturally tender and compassionate. Lucinda embraced her affectionately, saying, "Yes, yes, Maria, Maria:" and to this, the Moor replied, "Yes, yes, Maria—Zorayda Macange; which, in the Arabic, signifies No.

Mean while it grew late, and the innkeeper, by order of Don Fernando's attendants, prepared, with great diligence and care, as good a repast as he could possibly provide: so that, when supper-time arrived, they sat down altogether, at a long hall table; for, there was neither a round nor square one in the house: they forced the head and principal seat, in spite of all his excuses, on Don Quixote, who desired that the princess Micomicona might sit by the side of her protector: next to her, Lucinda and Zorayda placed themselves, being fronted by Fernando and Cardenio, at whose left hand sat the captive and the other gentlemen, while the curate and the barber took their station close to the ladies. In this manner they supped with vast satisfaction, which was still increased, when Don Quixote leaving off eating, and inspired by the same spirit that moved him to harrangue among the goatherds, began the following dissertation: "Verily, gentlemen, if it be duly considered, great and unexpected events are seen by those who profess the order of knight-errantry. What inhabitant of this earth, if he should now enter the gates of this castle, and behold us seated in this manner, could conceive or credit that we are what we are? Who could imagine, that this lady on my right hand, is the great queen whom we all know her to be, and that I am the knight of the rueful countenance, so celebrated by the voice of fame? Now, there is no manner of doubt, that this exercife

exercife and art exceeds all others hitherto invented by man, and that it ought to be more eſteemed, becauſe it is more expoſed to danger. Away with thoſe who give letters the preference over arms: I affirm, that ſuch people, whoſoever they are, know not what they ſay; for, the ſole reaſon to which they adhere, in this deciſion, is, that the labour of the body is exceeded by that of the mind; and that the profeſſion of arms is altogether as corporeal as the exerciſe and office of a common day-labourer, that requires nothing more than bodily ſtrength; as if that which is called foldierſhip, by us who profeſs it, did not include acts of valour which none but perſons of uncommon genius could execute: or, as if the toil of a warrior who has the charge of an army, or commands in a town that is beſieged, doth not affect the mind as well as the body: is it to be ſuppoſed, that by meer corporeal ſtrength, he can penetrate and diſcover the intention of the enemy? To anticipate deſigns, baffle ſtratagems, ſurmount difficulties, and prevent the miſchief that is to be dreaded, are all efforts of the underſtanding, in which the body hath no ſhare: if the profeſſion of arms, therefore, requires genius, as well as that of letters; let us ſee which of the two requires moſt mental toil: and this queſtion may be determined, by conſidering the end and aim of each; for, that occupation deſerves the higheſt eſteem, which hath the nobleſt purpoſe in view—the end and ſcope of letters. I ſpeak not here, of that divine learning, whoſe aim is to raiſe and conduct the ſoul to heaven; to an end ſo infinite, no intention whatever can be compared: I ſpeak of human learning, the ultimate end of which is, to regulate diſtributive juſtice, render to every one his due, and to underſtand and protect the equitable laws; an aim certainly generous, and highly commendable! yet not ſo deſerving of the moſt ſublime praiſe as the profeſſion of arms, the object and the end of which is peace, the greateſt good that mortals can enjoy; for, the firſt bleſſed news which this world and mankind heard, were thoſe pronounced by the angels, on that night which was our day, when they ſung in the air, ‘Glory be to God on high, and on earth, peace and good will towards men:’ and the ſalutation, which the beſt maſter, either in heaven or upon earth, taught his adherents and favourites; which was to ſay, when they entered any houſe, ‘Peace be to this houſe.’ Nay, he himſelf, at different times, ſaid, ‘My peace I give unto you. My peace I leave with you. Peace be among you.’ A jewel and legacy well worthy of him who left it! a jewel, without which there can be no felicity, either in heaven or on earth! This peace is the genuine aim of war; for, arms and war are the ſame; and this being taken for granted, the end of war is nobler than that of learning: wherefore, let us next conſider the bodily toil ſuſtained by each, that we may ſee on which ſide the ballance lies, in that particular.

In this sensible manner did Don Quixote continue his discourse, from which no body that heard him could distinguish that he was mad: on the contrary, his audience consisting chiefly of gentlemen, to which title the profession of arms is annexed, they listened with great pleasure, while he proceeded thus:

“ The hardships of a student, I say, are these; chiefly, poverty, (not that all students are poor, but that we may suppose the worst that can happen); and when I have named this indigence, the whole of his misfortune is mentioned; for, he that is poor can enjoy nothing that is good, but must endure necessity in all its forms, sometimes hunger, sometimes cold, sometimes nakedness, and often, all three together: nevertheless, his necessity is not so great, but that he eats, tho’ perhaps later than usual, or, tho’ he may feed upon the leavings of the rich, or, which is the greatest misery to which a scholar can be reduced, go a fopping\*, as they term it: then they are always admitted to some charitable person’s fire-side or chimney-corner, where, if they cannot warm themselves effectually, they may at least defy the cold; and at night, they sleep under cover. I need not descend to minute particulars, such as want of linen, scarcity of shoes, flimsy and threadbare cloaths, nor the surfeits which they so eagerly incur, when their good fortune sets a plentiful table in their way. By this path, rough and difficult as I have already described it, after many tumblings, slidings, risings and fallings, they, at last, attain to the height of their wishes, which being gained, we have seen many who have passed with a favourable gale of fortune, thro’ these quicksands and straits of Scylla and Charybdis: I say, we have seen many such, command and dictate to the world, from a chair of state; their hunger being changed into satiety, their cold into refreshment; their rags into gay apparel; and the mats on which they lay, to the richest damask and finest holland: a recompence which their merit most justly enjoys! but, their labours, when fairly stated and compared, are infinitely short of the warrior’s, as I shall now clearly demonstrate.

\* Alluding to the charity given at the gates of monasteries.

## C H A P. XI.

The sequel of Don Quixote's curious discourse, on the subjects of learning and war.

THE knight proceeded thus: "Since we began with the student, representing his poverty in all its circumstances, let us see if the soldier be more wealthy: and we shall find that poverty itself is not poorer; for, he is restricted to his miserable pay, which comes always late, if ever, or to what he can plunder by force, with the imminent danger of his life and conscience; and frequently, his nakedness is such, that his slashed buff doublet serves him instead of coat, shirt, and all the other parts of apparel; tho', in the winter, he has nothing else to screen him from the inclemencies of the weather; nay, in the open field, he is fain to warm himself with his own breath, which, as it proceeds from an empty place, must, I believe, be cold, contrary to all the rules of nature: but, stay till the approach of night, when, it is to be hoped, his bed will make amends for all these inconveniencies; and this, if it be not his own fault, will never offend in point of narrowness, for, he may measure as many feet of ground as he thinks sufficient, and there tumble about at pleasure, without any danger of discomposing the sheets: then, instead of the day and hour of receiving the degrees of his art, comes the day of battle, in which his head is adorned with the doctoral tofsle, made in form of a pledgit to stuff the wound made by some ball, which, perhaps, hath gone thro' his temples, or left him maimed of a leg or arm: and even if this should not happen, but, merciful heaven guard and preserve him safe and sound, he continues as poor as ever: he must risk himself in several more rencounters and battles, and be victorious in each, before his circumstances be bettered; but, these miracles rarely happen. Tell me, gentlemen, have you considered what a small proportion those who make their fortunes by war bear to those who perish in the field? Doubtless, you must answer, that there is no sort of comparison; that the slain are scarce to be numbered, while the living who are recompenced for their services, may be comprehended within three figures of \* arithmetic. The case of the learned, is quite the reverse †: for, one way

\* *i. e.* Do not amount to 1000, which is a number expressed by four figures.

† The literal translation is, "For, from the skirts, (for I would not mention the sleeves)." The Spaniards, instead of the English phrase, by Hook or by Crook, use this of "From the sleeves or the skirts;" derived from the practice of taylor, who are supposed to cabbage from those parts of the habit in which there is the greatest quantity of cloth: but, the knight's exception of sleeves, on this occasion, seems to have proceeded from a supposition that poor scholars are generally provided for in the church, and consequently wear cassocks, which descend to their heels.

or another, they are all provided; so that, tho' the toil of a soldier is greater, his reward is much less. To this observation, it may be replied, that it is far more easy to reward two thousand scholars than thirty thousand soldiers; for, the first are recompensed with offices which must, of course, be bestowed on people of their profession; whereas, the others can enjoy no reward, except a share of the property belonging to their master whom they serve; even this impossibility strengthens my asseveration.

But, waving that consideration, which would lead us into a most intricate labyrinth, let us return to the pre-eminence which arms have over learning: a point hitherto undecided. Such are the reasons alledged on both sides of the question: the principal of which in favour of the last is, that without letters, the profession of arms could not be supported, because there are laws to which war itself is subject; and all laws fall within the province of letters and learned men. To this observation, the partizans of the other opinion reply, that no laws could be maintained without arms, which preserve the constitution, defend kingdoms, guard cities, scour the highways, and clear the seas of piratical corsairs. In short, that without arms, all republics, kingdoms, monarchies, cities, journeys by land, and voyages by sea, would be exposed to the horror and confusion that attend unbridled war, while it continues in all its licentious privilege and force. It is a general and established maxim, that every thing ought to be esteemed in proportion to what it costs: now, to become eminent in letters, costs the student much time, watching, hunger, nakedness, vertigoes, indigestion, and their consequences, which are in part mentioned above: but, to acquire, in a regular manner, the character of a good soldier, a man must undergo all these inconveniencies in an incomparably greater degree; because, he is every moment in danger of losing his life. What fear of indigence and poverty can seize and harrass the student's apprehension, equal to that which must possess the soldier besieged in a fortress, who being placed centinel or guard in some ravelin or \* cavalier, perceives the enemy at work undermining the very spot whereon he stands; without daring to stir from his post, or avoid the danger by which he is so imminently threatened? All he can do, is to give notice of what passes, to his captain, who must endeavour to baffle the foe by some countermine, while he remains upon the place in terror, and expectation of being suddenly whirled aloft into the clouds without wings, and then falling head-long into the profound abyss: if this danger seems inconsiderable, let us see whether it be equalled or exceeded in the grappling of two galleys, by their prows, in the midst of the extended ocean; when they are locked and fastened into each other, and the soldier hath

\* Cavalier is an artificial mount, raised in a fortress for the convenience of scouring a field, or opposing a commanding work of the enemy.

not an inch more than two feet of the beak to stand upon, while he sees himself threatened and opposed by as many ministers of death as there are cannon in the enemy's vessel, and these within a spear's length of his body; and is sensible, that if his feet should chance to slip, he would instantly visit the profound bosom of the sea: yet, nevertheless, with an intrepid heart, incited and transported by honour, he bears the brunt of their whole artillery, and endeavours by that narrow passage to board the adverse vessel: and, what is very much to be admired, is, that as soon as one falls, never to rise again till the general resurrection, another occupies his place, and should he also drop into the sea, which, like an enemy, gapes to devour him, another and another still succeeds, without the smallest intermission: an instance of gallantry and boldness the greatest to be found in all the extremities of war. Happy were the ages past, while strangers to those infernal instruments of artillery, the author of which is, I firmly believe, now in hell, enjoying the reward of his diabolical invention, that puts it in the power of an infamous coward to deprive the most valiant cavalier of life; for, often in the heat of that courage and resolution that fires and animates the gallant breast, there comes a random ball, how or from whence no man can tell, shot off, perhaps, by one that fled and was afraid at the flash of his own accursed machine, and, in an instant, puts an end to the schemes and existence of a man who deserved to live for ages. This very consideration makes me almost own, that I am sorry for having chosen this profession of a knight-errant in this detestable age; for, tho' no danger can daunt my resolution, it gives me some uneasiness to think that powder and shot may deprive me of the opportunity of making myself famous and renowned thro' the whole globe, for the valour of my arm, and the keenness of my sword: but, let the will of heaven be fulfilled; if I accomplish my aim, I shall be more esteemed, because I have faced more danger than ever was incurred by the knights-errant in ages past."

While the rest of the company were employed in eating, this long harangue was uttered by Don Quixote, who never thought of swallowing a morsel; tho' Sancho frequently put him in mind of eating his supper, observing, that he would afterwards have time enough to say what he pleased. The hearers were moved with fresh concern, at seeing a man who, in every other subject, seemed to have a large share of sense and discernment, lose it so irrecoverably, whenever the discourse turned upon the cursed mischievous theme of chivalry. The curate observed, that there was a great deal of reason in what he had advanced in favour of arms; and that he himself, tho' a graduate, consequently a man of letters, was entirely of the knight's opinion.

Supper being ended, and the table uncovered, while the landlady, her daughter and Maritornes were busied in fitting up the garret of Don Quixote de la Mancha, in which it was determined the three ladies should pass the night by themselves; Don Fernando intreated the captive to recount the story of his life, which he imagined must be both uncommon and entertaining, from the specimen they had already seen, in his arriving thus equiped, in company with the fair Zorayda. To this request the stranger answered, that he would willingly obey his command, tho' he was afraid the company would not find the relation to their liking; but, nevertheless, rather than fail in point of obedience, he was ready to make it. The curate and whole company thanked him for his complaisance, and joined in the request; and he seeing himself besought by so many, said there was no occasion for intreaties, where they might so effectually command: "Lend me your attention therefore, and you shall hear a true story, perhaps unequalled by those fictions which are usually adorned with all the curious and profound artifice of composition."

At this preamble, all present, adjusted and composed themselves; and he perceiving the general silence in which they waited for the performance of his promise, began in this manner, with a grave and agreeable voice.

#### C H A P. XII.

In which the captive recounts his life and adventures.

"**I**N a certain place, among the mountains of Leon, my family had its origin; more beholden to the liberality of nature than to the smiles of fortune: tho' amidst the narrowness of circumstances, which prevails in that country, my father had the reputation of being rich, and really was so, had he possessed the art of preserving, as he practised the means, of spending his estate. This liberal and profuse disposition was owing to his having been a soldier in his youth: the army being a school, in which the miser becomes generous, and the benevolent man grows prodigal; for, a covetous soldier is a monster which is rarely seen. My father exceeded the bounds of liberality, and bordered upon those of prodigality; a disposition of very little service to a married man who has children to succeed him in rank as well as name: and he had no less than three; all of them sons, already at an age to choose for themselves. The old gentleman finding it impossible, as he said, to resist the bent of his inclination, was resolved to deprive himself of the means that induced and enabled him to spend so lavishly, by giving up his estate; as without money, Alexander himself must have seemed frugal.



One day, therefore, calling us all three together into his chamber, he delivered himself in these or the like words. "Sons, to say I love you, is no more than to say and know you are my own children: though it would seem that I do not love you, by my squandering away the fortune which is your due: but, that you may be henceforward convinced that I love you like a true parent, rather than seek your destruction like a stepfather, I am resolved to execute a plan which I have formed a good while ago, and digested with the most mature deliberation. You are now of an age to chuse settlements for yourselves, or at least, to pitch upon employments which, in your riper years, may conduce to your honour and advantage. My intention is to divide my estate into four equal parts, three of which you shall receive among you, in equal shares, without the least difference or distinction, and the fourth I will reserve for my own sustenance and support, while heaven shall be pleased to protract the days of my life. But, before you receive your portions, I should be glad to find you inclined to follow the paths which I shall propose. We have a saying in Spain, which, I believe, is very true, as indeed all proverbs are, because they are short sentences dictated by long and sage experience: that which I mean, contains no more than these words: 'The church, the court, or the sea;' as if it more fully expressed the following advice, He that would make his fortune, ought either to dedicate his time to the church, go to sea as a merchant, or attach himself to the court: for it is commonly observed, that, 'The king's crumb is worth the baron's batch.' This I mention, because I wish and desire that one of you would follow letters, another merchandize, and a third serve his sovereign in the field, since it is difficult to obtain an office at court: so that, although much wealth cannot be expected, there is a great deal of valour and reputation to be acquired in war. In eight days I will give each of you his share, in ready money, without defrauding you of one farthing, as you will see by my distribution. Tell me, therefore, if you are willing to follow my advice in what I have proposed?" said my father, addressing himself to me as the eldest. After having dissuaded him from parting with his estate, and desired him to spend as much of it as he pleased, observing, that we were young men, and capable of making our own fortunes, I concluded with saying, I would obey his will, and, for my own part, chuse to serve God and my king, in adhering to the exercise of arms. My second brother made the same offer, proposing to set sail for the Indies, and employ his stock of ready money in traffic. The youngest, and I believe the wisest, said he would qualify himself for the church, by going and finishing his studies at Salamanca.

We having thus agreed in the choice of our different employments, our father embraced us all affectionately, and within the time he had proposed, performed his promise of giving us our portions, which, to the best of my remembrance, amounted to three thousand ducats each : for, an uncle of ours paid ready money for the whole estate, that it might not be alienated from the family. In one day, all three took leave of our worthy father, when I, thinking it a piece of inhumanity to leave him so straitned in his old age, prevailed upon him to accept two thousand of the three I had received, as the remainder was sufficient to accommodate me with all the necessaries of a soldier. Each of my brothers, induced by my example, gave him back one third of their shares, so that he remained possessed of four thousand ducats in cash, and the value of three thousand more in land, which he did not chuse to sell. At length, I say, we took leave of him, and that uncle whom I have mentioned, not without great concern and many tears on all sides ; after we had undertaken to seize every opportunity of making them acquainted with our adventures, either in prosperity or adversity. Having given the promise, and received their embraces and blessing, one took the road to Salamanca, another went to Sevil, and I set out for Alicant, where I understood there was a ship taking in a lading of wool for Genoa. Two and twenty years are now elapsed since I left my father's house ; and during all that time, though I have written several letters, I never received the least information concerning him or my brothers. What hath happened to myself within that period, I will now briefly relate.

Embarking at Alicant, I had a favourable passage to Genoa, from whence I went to Milan, where I provided myself with arms and some gay military furniture. Then I departed for Piedmont, with a resolution of inlisting in the service ; and being upon the road to Alexandria de la Paglia, was informed that the great duke of Alva was on his march into Flanders. Upon receiving this intimation, I changed my design, attended him to the Low Countries, served in all his campaigns, and was present at the death of the counts Egmont and Horn. There I obtained an ensign's commission in the company of a famous captain of Guadalajara, whose name was Diego de Urbina : but, after I had been some time in Flanders, the news arrived of the league between his holiness pope Pius the fifth of happy memory, and the Spanish monarchy, against their common enemy the Turk, who about that time had, by means of his fleet, made a conquest of the famous island of Cyprus, which was under the dominion of the Venetians : a most lamentable and unfortunate loss. It was certainly known that the most serene Don John of Austria, natural brother to our good king Philip, was to be general of this league ; and the

the vast preparations for this war were publickly reported. All these rumours raised and excited within me the desire and resolution of being present in a campaign of such expectation; and though I had strong hopes, and indeed, certain promises of being promoted to the rank of a captain, as soon as a vacancy should happen, I chose to quit that prospect, and go, as I actually did, to Italy; and luckily for me, Don John of Austria was then at Genoa, just going to embark for Naples, in order to join the Venetian fleet, which he afterwards found at Messina. In short, I served in that most happy campaign, and was advanced to the rank of captain of foot, which honourable post I obtained more by good fortune than merit; and that day which was so fortunate for Christendom, on which the world was convinced of the error they had espoused in believing the Turks invincible by sea; on that day, I say, when the Ottoman pride and insolence was humbled and broke, among so many happy christians there present, (and sure those who fell were happier than the living victors!) I alone was unfortunate; for, instead of receiving a naval crown, which would have been my reward, had I lived in the Roman ages, on the night that succeeded that glorious day, I found myself a captive loaded with chains; and this was the cause of my misfortune: Uchali king of Algiers, a bold and fortunate corsair, having attacked and mastered the capitan galley of Malta, in which there remained only three knights alive, and these desperately wounded; the vessel commanded by John Andrea Doria, in which my company was stationed, hastened to her relief, and I doing my duty on that occasion, leaped into the enemy's ship, which disengaging herself immediately from our galley that was grappled with her, my soldiers were prevented from following their officer, and I found myself alone among my foes, whom, by reason of their numbers, I could not resist; therefore was obliged to submit, after having been almost covered over with wounds; and Uchali, as you have heard, gentlemen, having saved himself with his whole squadron, I remained his prisoner, the only sad person amidst the general joy, and captive among so many that were set free; for, full fifteen thousand christians who came into the action, chained to the Turkish oars, that day recovered their long wished-for liberty.

I was carried to Constantinople, where Selim the grand Turk, created my master general of the sea, for having done his duty in the battle, and as a proof of his valour, brought off the high standard of Malta. Next year, which was that of seventy-two, I rowed in the capitan galley of the three lanthorns, at Navarino, where I saw and observed the christians lose the opportunity of taking the whole Turkish fleet in the harbour, for, all the Levantines and Janizaries belonging to it laid their account with being attacked in port, and had actually got in readiness their knapsacks

and passamaques, which are a kind of shoes, in order to go on shore, and seek their safety in flight, without waiting for the assault; such was the consternation that prevailed among us! But, heaven ordained things to happen in another manner, not through any error or neglect of the general who commanded the expedition, but on account of the sins of Christendom, it being the will and permission of God, that we should never want executioners to chastise us. In short, Uchali retreated to Modon, which is an island almost contiguous to Navarino, where he disembarked his men, fortified the mouth of the harbour, and remained until Don John set sail on his return. In this expedition, the galley called the prize, commanded by a son of the famous corsair Barbarossa, was taken by the capitan galley of Naples, called the she-wolf, the commander of which was that thunderbolt of war, that father of his soldiers, that fortunate and invincible chief, Don Alvaro de Bafan, marquis of Santa Cruz; and I cannot help mentioning what happened at the taking of this prize: the son of Barbarossa was so cruel, and treated his captives so inhumanly, that when the rowers perceived the she-wolf ready to board, and in a fair way of taking her, they quitted their oars all at once, and seizing the captain, who stood upon the \* stentrel, calling to them to row lustily, they tossed him forwards from bench to bench, and beat him so severely as he went along, that before he passed the main-mast, his soul passed into hell. Such was his barbarity, as I have already observed, and such the revenge which their hatred to him inspired.

We returned to Constantinople, and during the following year, which was seventy-three, understood that Don John had taken Tunis, wrested that whole kingdom from the Turks, and put Muley Hamet in possession of the whole; thus cutting off all the hopes of a restoration from Muley Hamida, the most valiant and most cruel Moor of his time. The grand signor was deeply affected with this loss, and practising that sagacity which is peculiar to all those of his family, clapt up a peace with the Venetians, who were much more desirous of it than he. Next year, being seventy-four, he attacked the goleta and fort, which Don John had left half-finished, near Tunis: and on all these occasions I was present, being tied to the oar, without the least hope of freedom, especially by ransom; for, I was resolved not to write to my father, an account of my misfortune. At length, the goleta and fort were both lost, having been besieged by seventy-five thousand Turkish soldiers, regularly paid, and upwards of four hundred thousand Moors and Arabs from the other parts of Africa; this multitude being provided with a vast quantity of warlike stores and ammunition, and attended with such a number of pioneers, that, by throwing hand-

\* The stentrel or esanterol is a post that supports the awning of the poop.

fuls of earth, they might have covered both the places they came to besiege. The goleta, which had been counted impregnable, was first taken; not through any fault of the besieged, who performed all that men could do, in its defence; but, because experience shewed that trenches could be made with ease in that loose sand, under which, though water was commonly found at the depth of two spans, the Turks, at that time, dug as many fathoms, without finding one drop; and so filling a vast number of sacks, raised their works so high as to overlook the fort; then mounting this cavalier with cannon, kept such a firing as rendered it impossible for the garrison to make any longer defence. It was a common opinion, that our troops ought not to have shut themselves up in the goleta, but, opposed the disembarkation in the plain: however, those who talk in that manner, speak at random, and must be persons of small experience in such affairs: for, if the whole garrison, in both places, scarce amounted to six thousand soldiers, how could such a small number, though ever so valiant, take the field, and, at the same time, defend the forts against such a multitude of foes! and how could the forts be possibly maintained without supplies, in an enemy's country, when they were hemmed in by such a numerous and obstinate army? But, others thought, and I am of the same opinion, that heaven manifested a particular grace and favour to Spain, in permitting them to destroy that rendezvous and pretence of mischief, that sink, sponge and devourer of infinite sums of money, which were there unprofitably spent, without serving any other purpose than that of preserving the memory of its being the most happy conquest of the invincible Charles the Vth: as if it was necessary for those stones to support his fame, which is already immortal. The fort was also yielded; though the Turks won it by inches; for, the garrison behaved with such gallantry and resolution, that in two and twenty general assaults, the enemy lost upwards of twenty-five thousand men; and of the three hundred Spanish soldiers that remained alive, they did not make one prisoner who had not been wounded during the siege: a clear and certain proof of the obstinate valour with which the places were defended. A small fort or tower that stood in the middle of the lake, under the command of Don Juan Zanoquera, a Valentian knight and celebrated soldier, surrendered upon terms: but, Don Pedro Puertocarrero, general of the goleta, was made prisoner; and though he did all that man could do, in defence of the place, he was so deeply affected by the loss of it, that he died of grief, on the road to Constantinople, whither they were carrying him captive. The general of the fort, whose name was Gabrio Cerbellon, a Milanese gentleman, a great engineer and excellent soldier, was likewise taken prisoner; and in these two forts perished many persons of note, among whom was one Pagan d'Oria,

d'Oria, a knight of St. John, a gentleman of a most generous disposition, as appeared from his excessive liberality to his brother the famous Juan Andrea d'Oria; and what made his death still more lamentable was, that he perished by the hands of some Arabs, to whom, seeing the fort already lost, he trusted himself, relying upon their promise to carry him disguised in a moorish dress, to Tabarca, which is a small port or settlement belonging to the Genoese who fish for coral on that part of the coast; but, those perfidious Arabs cut off his head, which they carried to the general of the Turkish navy, who fulfilled upon them our Castilian Proverb, which imports, that though we love the treason we abhor the traitor; for, it was reported, that he ordered them all to be hanged, because they had not brought him alive.

Among the christians who were taken in the fort, was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, a native of some town in Andaloufia, who had been an ensign in the garrison, a soldier of great worth and rare endowments, particularly blessed with a happy talent for poetry. This circumstance I mention, because it was his fate to belong to our galley, where he was my companion at the oar and fellow-slave; and before we departed from that harbour, he composed two songs, by way of epitaph, upon the goleta and the fort. As I have them both by heart, I believe it will not be disagreeable to the company, if I repeat them."

When the captive mentioned Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando looked at his companions, who smiled, and when the stranger was going to repeat the songs, one of the three, said to him, "Before you proceed, I beg the favour to know what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar?" "All that I know of the matter, replied the captive, is, that after having staid two years at Constantinople; he made off in the habit of an \*arnaut, with a Greek spy; but, I do not know whether or not he obtained his liberty; though I believe he succeeded; for, about a year after, I saw the same Greek at Constantinople, but, I had not an opportunity to inquire about the success of their scheme." "Then I can satisfy you in that particular, resumed the cavalier; Don Pedro is my brother, and now lives at home, in good health and easy circumstances, blessed with a wife and three hopeful sons." "Thanks be to God for the great mercies bestowed upon him! answered the captive, for, in my opinion, there is no happiness on earth equal to that of liberty regained." "Besides, said the gentleman, I retain in my memory the songs which my brother composed." "Be so good then, replied the stranger, as to entertain the company with them; for, doubtless, you can repeat them more perfectly than I can." "With all my heart, said the cavalier, that upon the goleta runs thus."

\* A Dalmatian trooper.

## C H A P. XIII.

The continuation of the captive's history.

## I.

**Y**E happy shades, whose deeds renown'd  
Have freed you from encumbering clay;  
From this low scene where woes abound,  
Ascending to eternal day.

## II.

With glorious zeal your bosoms glow'd,  
Your bodies brav'd excessive toil;  
Your blood with that of pagans flow'd,  
To drench the hostile, barren soil.

## III.

Your lives, but not your courage fail'd,  
Death sanction'd your victorious claim:  
Enjoy, still honour'd and bewail'd,  
Immortal happiness and fame.

“ These are the very words which I remember,” said the captive. “ And, if my memory does not fail me, replied the gentleman, the other upon the fort is this.”

## I.

**L**O! from yon ruins on the desert plain,  
Oppress'd with numbers, in th' unequal fight,  
Three thousand souls of christian warriors slain,  
To happier regions, wing'd their joyous flight.

## II.

Yet, not before, in vain, they had essay'd  
The force and vigour of their dauntless arms;  
'Till wearied and reduc'd, though undismay'd,  
They welcom'd death encompass'd with alarms.

## III.

On Afric's coast, as records tell,  
The scene of past and present woes,  
More valiant bodies never fell,  
More spotless spirits never rose.

The

The songs were not disliked, and the captive rejoicing at the good fortune of his comrade, proceeded thus, in his narration :

“ The goleta and forts being taken, the Turks ordered the first to be dismantled, the other being quite demolished before it was surrendered ; and, that this might be done with the less trouble and greater dispatch, it was undermined in three parts ; but, they could, by no means, blow up the old walls, which seemed to be the weakest part, while that which was executed by Fratin, was destroyed with great facility. In short, the victorious fleet returned in triumph to Constantinople, where, in a few months, happened the death of my master Uchali, who went by the name of Uchali Fartax, which, in the language of that country, signifies the Scabby Renegado ; for, such he actually was, and it is a custom among the Turks, to bestow epithets upon people, derived either from some defect or virtue inherent in them : this method they practise, because they have but four families distinguished by particular names, and these are descended from the house of Ottoman ; so, that the rest, as I have observed, adopt some appellation either from the blemishes of the body, or the virtues of the mind. This leper, therefore, tugged at the oar, during fourteen years, as slave to the grand signor, and when he was turned of thirty-four, apostatized, out of resentment against a Turk, who struck him at the oar, renouncing his religion, that he might be able to revenge the affront. Such was his gallantry and conduct, that without practising those vile steps and methods by which the sultan’s favourites are raised, he was promoted to the throne of Algiers, and afterwards, created general at sea, which is the third post in the empire. He was a native of Calabria, a man of good morals, and behaved with great humanity to his slaves, who, to the number of three thousand, were at his death, in consequence of his last will, divided between his renegadoes, and the grand signor, who is also coheir with the children of all his deceased subjects. I fell to the share of a Venetian, who had been a common sailor, when he was taken ; and Uchali had such an affection for him, that he enjoyed the greatest share of his favour, and became the most cruel renegado that ever was known. This man, whose name was Azanaga, acquired great riches, and even succeeded to the crown of Algiers, to which place I accompanied him from Constantinople, with some degree of satisfaction, at the thoughts of being so near my own country ; not that I intended to send home an account of my unhappy fate, but, to see if fortune would not prove more favourable at Algiers than at Constantinople, where I had laid a thousand schemes for my escape, without having an opportunity of putting one of them in execution : but, I was in hope of finding at Algiers some other more effectual means of obtaining that which I so ardently desired ; for, the hope of gaining my liberty never forsook my breast : on  
the



the contrary, when all my plans, efforts and expectations miscarried; far from abandoning myself to despair, I endeavoured to find out some new expedient, which tho' ever so frail and unsubstantial, served to support my spirits, and flatter my imagination. Thus I made shift to live within a house or prison, called a bath, in which the Turks confine the christian captives, whether belonging to the king, or private persons, or of that class, which they call magazine-slaves; these are the captives of the council, who serve the state in public works, and other kinds of day-labour; and find great difficulty in obtaining their freedom, because they belong to the community, and have no particular master with whom they can treat concerning their ransom, even tho' they can command money for the purpose."

In these baths, as I have already said, some private persons lodge their slaves, especially when their ransom is agreed upon; and there they remain secure, and at their ease, until it arrives. Neither do the king's captives, who are to be ransomed, go out to work, with the rest of the crew, except when the money is delayed, and then, that they may be induced to write with more importunity, they are sent out with the rest, to cut wood, an office of no small mortification and toil. As they knew I had been a captain, I, in vain, assured them, that I had neither interest nor money; they put me into the number of those who were to be ransomed, loading me with a chain, rather to denote my condition than to secure my person; so, that I spent my time in that bath, among a great many cavaliers and people of fashion, who were thus marked and designed for ransom; and tho' we were sometimes, nay, almost always exposed to hunger and nakedness, nothing gave us so much pain, as to hear and see, upon every occasion, the new and unheard-of cruelties which my master exercised upon the christians. He was every day, hanging one, impaling another, maiming a third, upon such slight occasions, frequently without any cause assigned, that the Turks themselves owned he acted thus out of meer wantonness of barbarity, as being naturally of a savage disposition, and an inveterate enemy to the whole human race. The person who used the greatest freedom with him, was a Spanish soldier, called such-a-one de Saavedra, who, tho' he did many things which those people will not soon forget, in attempting to regain his liberty, he never gave him one blow, nor ordered him once to be chastised, nor even chid him with one hasty word; and yet the least of all his pranks was sufficient, as we thought, to bring him to the stake: nay, he himself was more than once afraid of being impaled alive. If time would permit, I could here recount some of that soldier's actions, which, perhaps, might entertain and surprize you more than the relation of my own story.

But, to return to the thread of my narration: just over the yard of our prison were the windows of a rich and principal Moor; but, according to the custom of the country, they were rather like peep-holes than windows, and even these covered with very thick and close lattices. One day I chanced to be on the terrass of our jail, with three of my companions, passing the time, in trying which of us could leap farthest, in our shackles, the rest of the christians being gone out to work; I casually lifted up my eyes, and perceived a cane with a handkerchief tied to it, held out at these little openings I have mentioned, and waving to and fro, as if by way of signal for some of us to go and catch it. This object was no sooner observed, than one of my companions ran hastily to the place that was directly under it, to see if the cane would be dropped, or what would be the consequence: but, when he arrived, it was pulled up, and moved from one side to another, as if a man should signify his dissent from any proposal, by shaking his head: when the christian returned, the cane was lowered again, with the same motion as at first; upon which, another of our company tried the experiment, but succeeded no better than the first; a third went, and miscarried like the other two. Observing their disappointment, I was resolved to try my fortune also; accordingly, I had no sooner placed myself under the cane, than it was dropped, and fell down within the bath, just at my feet. I snatched it up immediately, and untied the handkerchief, in which I found a knot containing ten zianiys, which are pieces of bad gold, current among the Moors, each of them valued at ten rials of our money. It would be superfluous to say that I rejoiced at this windfall: indeed my joy was equal to my surprize; for, I could not conceive from whence that present could come, especially to me; the circumstance of the cane's being refused to every other person, plainly shewing that the favour was intended for me. I pocketed this lucky sum, broke the cane, returned to the terrass, and looked at the window, thro' which appeared a very white hand, that opened the lattice, and hastily shut it again: from this circumstance we understood, or at least imagined, that we owed the present to some lady who lived in that house; and, in token of thanks, made our obeisance in the moorish manner, by bowing the head, bending the body, and crossing the hands upon the breast. Soon after this ceremony, a small cross made of cane, was held out at the window, and immediately withdrawn: a signal which confirmed us in the opinion, that we were befriended by some christian woman, who lived as a slave in that house; but, this supposition was changed, when we reflected upon the whiteness of the hand, and the bracelets which we had perceived; and then, we concluded that she must be one of those christian renegades whom their masters frequently take to wife, and even think themselves fortunate in having such an opportunity; for, they esteem them much more than  
the

the women of their own nation: but, all our conjectures were wide of the truth.

From this day forward, our whole entertainment was, to gaze at the window, as the north, in which the star of the cane had appeared: but, full fifteen days elapsed, before we had another glimpse either of that or the hand, or indeed, of any other signal: and during this interval, tho' we endeavoured by all the means in our power, to learn who lived in that house, and whether or not there was a christian renegado in it, we never could get any other information but, that it belonged to a rich Moor of great note, called Agimorato, who had been alcayde of Pata, an office of great honour among that people: but, when we least expected another shower of zianiys, the cane re-appeared all of a sudden, with another handkerchief, and a larger knot than before; and this occurrence happened as formerly, when none but ourselves were in the bath: we made the usual experiment; each of my three companions, going towards it, as at first, without success until I approached, and then it was immediately dropped. I untied the knot, within which I found forty crowns in Spanish gold, and a paper written in Arabian characters, with a large cross at the head of the page: I kissed the sacred sign, put up the money, returned to the terrass, where we made our obeisance, the hand appeared again, making signs that I should read the letter, and then the window was shut. We were equally pleased and perplexed at this event; for, none of us understood Arabic, and altho' our impatience to know the contents of the paper was very great, the difficulty of finding an interpreter was still greater: at length, I determined to trust a renegade, a native of Murcia, who had professed himself my friend, and given me such pledges of his fidelity, as obliged him to keep any secret I should think proper to impart; for, those renegades who intend to return to Christendom usually carry about with them certificates signed by the principal captives, attesting, in the most ample form they can devise, that such a renegade is an honest man, who hath always been obliging to the christians, and is desirous of making his escape with the first opportunity. Some there are who procure these testimonials with a good intention; others use them occasionally, as the instruments of their craft; for, going to rob and plunder on the christian coasts, if they should chance to be shipwrecked or taken, they produce their certificates, and observe, that these papers will shew the real design of their coming on a cruize with Turks, which was no other than to take the first occasion of returning to their native country: by these means, they escape the first fury of resentment, and are reconciled to the church, without suffering the least damage; but, when they see their opportunity, they return to Barbary, and reassume their former way of life; whereas, those who procure recommendations

with a good design, make use of them accordingly, and remain in peace among the christians. Such a renegado was this friend, who had obtained certificates from all my companions, conceived in the strongest terms of confidence and applause; for which, had he been detected, the Moors would have burned him alive. I knew that he could both speak and write the Arabian tongue; but, before I would disclose the whole affair, I desired him to read that paper which I had found by chance in a corner of my cabin. He opened it accordingly, and having pored and perused it a good while, muttering between his teeth, I asked if he understood the contents? He answered in the affirmative, bidding me, if I chose to have the literal meaning, furnish him with pen and ink, that he might translate it the more exactly. I accordingly accommodated him with what he desired, and when he had made an end of the translation at his own leisure, he said, "This that I have written in Spanish, is the literal meaning of that moorish paper; and you are to take notice, that wheresoever you meet with the words Lela Marien, they signify our lady the blessed virgin."

The paper contained these words, "When I was a child, my father had a woman slave, who, in my own language, taught me the christian worship, and told me divers things of Lela Marien. This christian died, and I am sure her soul did not go to the fire, but to Ala; for, I saw her twice after her death, and she advised me to go to the land of the christians, where I should see Lela Marien, by whom I was beloved. I know not which way to go: many christians I have seen from this window, but, not one who seems so much a gentleman as yourself. I am very beautiful and young, and have a great deal of money in my possession: if thou can't find out any method of carrying me to thy country, thou shalt there be my husband, if thou art so inclined; but, if that be contrary to thy inclination, I shall not be uneasy, for Lela Marien will provide me with a spouse. I write this with my own hand: let no body read it, but such as you can trust. Beware of the Moors, for, they are altogether deceitful: therefore, I am very much concerned, for, I would not have it disclosed to any person whatever; because, if it should come to my father's ears, he would instantly cause me to be sunk in a well, and covered with stones. I will fasten a thread to the cane, to which thou may't tie thine answer; and if thou can't not write Arabic, let me know by signs, for, Lela Marien will help me to understand them. May she and Ala preserve thee, by means of this cross, which I often kiss, according to the direction of my deceased slave."

You may easily conceive, gentlemen, whether or not, we were surprized and rejoiced at the contents of this paper. Indeed, the symptoms of joy and admiration appeared so plain, in our behaviour, that the renegado

gado suspected it was not found by accident, but, actually written and addressed to one of our company. He accordingly intreated us to tell him, if his conjecture was true; protesting that we might safely trust to his fidelity, and assuring us, if we would favour him with our confidence, he would venture his life in procuring our freedom. So saying, he pulled from his bosom, a crucifix of metal, and, with many tears, swore by the God represented under the form of that image, in whom he, though a wretched sinner, fully and faithfully believed, that he would be trusty and secret in every thing we should please to communicate; for, he firmly believed, and as it were, prognosticated, that by means of her who had written the paper, we should all obtain liberty, and he accomplish that which he had so much at heart, namely, his re-admission into the bosom of his holy mother church, from which he, thro' his ignorance and guilt, had been, like a rotten member, divided and cut off. This declaration he made with so many tears and signs of repentance, that we unanimously agreed to entrust him with the affair, and accordingly, gave him an account of every thing that had happened, without suppressing one circumstance; and shewed him the window at which the cane had appeared; so that from thence he took his mark of the house, resolving to inform himself, with great care and caution, of the name and quality of those who lived in it. Mean while, we were all of opinion, that there was a necessity for answering the billet; and there being a person present, who could perform that office, the renegado that instant wrote in Arabic what I dictated, which was literally as I shall now repeat; for, of all the material circumstances of that affair, not one hath escaped my memory, which will retain them all to my last breath. In short, this was the answer which I sent to the beautiful Moor.

“ My dear lady!

“ Mayest thou be protected by the true Ala, and that blessed Mary the  
“ real mother of God, who, because she loves thee hath put it into thy  
“ heart to go to the land of christians: beseech her therefore, that she  
“ will be pleased to teach thee how thou mayest obey her commands;  
“ for, she is so benevolent, that she will grant thy request. For my own  
“ part, and in behalf of those who are my fellow-prisoners, I promise to  
“ serve thee with our whole power, even unto death. Fail not to write  
“ and give me notice of what thou shalt resolve to do; and I will always  
“ answer thy letters; for, the great Ala hath favoured us with the friend-  
“ ship of a christian captive, who can speak and write thy language, as  
“ thou wilt perceive by this paper: wherefore, thou mayest communicate  
“ thy will and pleasure to us, without fear. As to thy offer of becoming  
“ my

“ my wife, when thou shalt be safely settled in the land of the christians,  
“ I pledge myself thine, on the faith of a good christian ; and know that  
“ those of our religion perform their promises more punctually than the  
“ Moors. God, and his mother Mary, take my dear lady into their holy  
“ protection.”

This letter being written and sealed, I waited two days, until the bath was empty, and then went to the usual place on the terrass, to look for the cane, which, in a little time appeared. I no sooner perceived the sign, though I could not see who made it, than I held up the letter to make her understand, that she should fasten a thread to the cane ; but, that was already done, and I tied the paper to it, accordingly. In a little time, our star appeared again, loaded with the white flag of peace ; which being dropt, I took it up, and found, in different coins of gold and silver, to the amount of fifty crowns, which increased our satisfaction fiftyfold, and confirmed us in the hope of obtaining our freedom. That same night our renegade returned, and told us, he was informed the house was inhabited by that same Moor I have mentioned under the name of Agemorato, who was excessively rich, and had only one daughter to inherit his whole fortune ; that by the current report in the city, she was the most beautiful woman in Barbary ; and that many of the viceroys, who went thither, had demanded her in marriage, but she would never yield her consent ; he likewise understood that she had once a christian slave, who had died some time ago : so, that all these circumstances agreed with the contents of her letter. We then consulted with the renegade, about the means of transporting ourselves, with the moorish lady, into Christendom ; and, at length, we came to the resolution of waiting for another intimation from Zorayda, which is the name of her who now desires to be called Maria ; for, we plainly perceived, that by means of her and no other, we should be enabled to surmount all the difficulties that occurred.

Having come to this determination, the renegade bad us give ourselves no uneasiness, for, he would either procure our liberty or forfeit his own life. The bath being full of people, during four days, no cane appeared all that time, at the end of which the usual solitude prevailing, we perceived it with a handkerchief so pregnant as to promise a most happy birth. I stood under it ; the whole was dropped as usual, and I found in the handkerchief another paper, with one hundred crowns in gold, without any mixture of other coin. The renegade being then present, we carried him to our cabin, where we desired him to read the letter, which he interpreted in these words :

“ I know not, dear sir, how to give directions about our passage into  
“ Spain; nor hath Lela Marien told me, though I have earnestly im-  
“ plored her assistance. But, what may be easily effected is this: I will,  
“ from this window, furnish you with a great quantity of money; so,  
“ that you may ransom yourself and your companions, and going to the  
“ land of the christians, purchase a bark, with which you may return for  
“ the rest; and you will find me in my father’s garden, which is by the  
“ gate of Barbazon, close to the sea-side. There I shall be during the  
“ whole summer, with my father and servants, and from thence you may,  
“ in the night, carry me to the bark, without fear. But, remember thou  
“ shalt be my husband; otherwise I will pray to Marien to chastise thee. If  
“ thou canst depend upon no other person for purchasing the bark, ran-  
“ som thyself for that purpose. I know thou wilt be more apt than any  
“ other body to return, because thou art a gentleman and a christian.  
“ Be sure to inform thyself well, about the garden. When I see thee  
“ walking where thou art at present, I shall know the bath is empty, and  
“ provide thee with more money.

“ Ali preserve thee, my dear gentleman”.

These were the contents and purport of the second paper, which being read in presence of us all, each proposed himself as the person to be ransomed, promising to go and return with the utmost punctuality; I likewise offered myself for that purpose. But, the renegado opposed the proposal, saying, that he could by no means consent that one should be set free, before we had all obtained our liberty; because experience had taught him, how ill those who are free, perform the promises they have made in their captivity: for, prisoners of note had often practised the expedient of ransoming one of their number, to go to Valencia or Majorca, with money to purchase an armed bark, and return for his companions; but, they never saw his face again: for, having once obtained his own liberty, the dread of losing it again, by returning, blots all manner of obligations out of his remembrance. As a confirmation of the truth of what he alledged, he briefly recounted a case which had lately happened to some christian gentlemen, attended with the strangest circumstances ever known even in these parts, where the most uncommon and surprizing events occur almost every day. In short, he told us, the most practicable and prudent scheme was, to give him the money we should receive for our ransom, with which he would purchase a bark at Algiers, under pretence of becoming merchant, and trading to Tetuan, and the other places on that coast; and that being master of the vessel, he would soon contrive the means of disengaging us from the bath, and getting us all on board: especially

pecially if the moorish lady should perform her promise in supplying us with money sufficient to pay the ransom of our whole company ; in which case, being no longer slaves, we might embark with the greatest ease and safety, even at noon-day. The greatest difficulty that occurred, was the backwardness of the Moors, to allow a renegade to purchase or command a vessel, unless it be a large cruizer for pirating ; because they suspect, especially, if he be a Spaniard, that his sole motive in buying a small bark, is to make his escape into Christendom : but, he undertook to remedy that inconvenience, by giving a share of the bark and profits of the merchandize to a Tangarin Moor ; by which means, he should be master of the bark, and of consequence, have it in his power to accomplish the whole affair.

Although, in the opinion of me and my companions, there was no better plan than that of sending to Majorca for a bark, as the moorish lady had proposed, we durst not contradict the sentiments of the renegade, lest, he, being disobliged by our acting contrary to his intention, should make a discovery of our correspondence with the fair Moor, and endanger not only our lives, but also that of Zorayda, for which we would have willingly sacrificed our own. We therefore, determined to rely upon God and the renegado ; and immediately wrote an answer to Zorayda, importing, that we would adhere in every thing to her advice, which was as prudent as if it had been dictated by Lela Marien ; and that it depended solely upon her, either to hasten or retard the negotiation : pledging my faith anew, to become her spouse. In consequence of this intimation, the very next day, when the bath happened to be empty, she at different times, by means of the cane and handkerchief, transmitted two thousand crowns in gold, with a paper signifying, that on the first juma, which is friday, she should set out for her father's garden, but, before her departure, supply us with more money ; and desired us to inform her, if we should find that insufficient ; for, she would give us as much as we could desire, her father having such vast sums, that he would never be sensible of what she took, especially as all his keys were in her possession. We immediately accommodated the renegado with five hundred crowns, for the purchase of the bark : with eight hundred more I ransomed myself, depositing the money with a Valentian merchant then residing at Algiers, who bargained for my ransom with the king, and obtained my freedom, upon giving his word to pay the money, on the arrival of the first ship from Valencia ; for, if he had paid it immediately, the king would have suspected that the ransom had been some time at Algiers, and that the merchant had hitherto detained it for his own convenience. In short, my master was so contentious, that I durst, by no means, disburse the money  
at



at once. On the Thursday before the fair Zorayda removed to her father's country-house, she gave us another thousand crowns, and apprized us of her departure; intreating me, as soon as I should be ransomed, to make myself acquainted with her father's garden, and find some opportunity of going thither to see her. I answered, in few words, that I would obey her in every thing, desiring she would fervently recommend us to Lela Marien in all those prayers which she had learned of the slave.

This affair being transacted, means were concerted for ransoming my three companions; lest, seeing me at liberty and themselves confined, since I had money enough to procure their freedom, they should be chagrined, and tempted by the devil, to do something to the prejudice of Zorayda: for, although their honour and integrity might have secured me against any such apprehension, I would not run the smallest risk, and therefore took care they should be ransomed by the same canal through which my liberty was obtained; depositing the whole sum required, in the merchant's hands, that he might, with more certainty and confidence, act the part of their bondsman; though we never disclosed to him our secret commerce with Zorayda, for fear of what might happen.

## C H A P. XIV.

The continuation of the captive's adventures.

**B**EFORE fifteen days had elapsed, our renegado had purchased a stout vessel, capable of containing thirty persons at least; and to secure what he had done with a favourable pretext, he made a voyage to a place called Sargel, about thirty leagues from Algiers, towards the coast of Oran, where there is a great traffic of dried figs: and he made two or three trips of this kind, in company with the Tagarin Moor already mentioned. The Moors of Arragon are, in Barbary, called Tagarins, and those of Grenada go by the name of Mudajares; though these last are, in the kingdom of Fez, called Elches, being the people whom the king chiefly uses in his wars. I say then, in every passage, the renegado brought his bark to an anchor in a small creek, within two bow-shots of Agimorato's garden; and there purposely employed himself and his moorish rowers in practising the \*Zala; or attempted that in jest, which he intended to execute in earnest. He went frequently to Zorayda's garden, on pretence of asking fruit, which he always received from her father, though he did not know him: but although, as he afterwards owned, he wanted to speak with Zorayda, and tell her that he was the person appointed by me, to

\* Zala or Sala, is the moorish salutation.

carry her off to the land of the christians, that she might be satisfied and secure of his fidelity; he never had an opportunity of executing his design: for, the moorish women avoid the sight of their own countrymen and the Turks, unless when they are commanded to appear, by their parents and husbands; though they talk and converse with christian captives, even more freely than decency allows. I should have been very much concerned, had he spoke with her, because it would, perhaps, have given her great uneasiness, to see renegades entrusted with the affair; but God, who ordained all for the best, gave him no opportunity of fulfilling his well-meaning intention.

Perceiving how securely he traded to and from Sargel, and anchored when, where, and how he pleased, his partner submitting to his direction, in all things; and that I being ransomed, there was nothing wanted but some christians to row, he desired me to pick out those who should accompany me, exclusive of my friends who were ransomed, and bespeak them for the Friday following, which he had appointed for the day of our departure. Seeing him thus determined, I spoke to a dozen Spaniards, all of them able-bodied rowers, and people who could easily get out of the city: and indeed, it was no small difficulty, to find so many at that conjuncture; for, no fewer than twenty gallies being then out upon the cruize, almost all the rowers were employed, so that I should not have found those I have mentioned, had not their master staid at home, that summer, to finish a vessel which he had on the stocks. All I said to them was, that next Friday in the evening, they should sily slip out of the city, one by one, and betake themselves to Agimorato's garden, where they should wait my coming; and I directed every one by himself, if he should meet with other christians at the rendezvous, to say nothing, but, that I had ordered him to wait for me in that place.

This point being settled, another precaution still more necessary, remained untaken; this was to advertise Zorayda of the situation of our affairs, that she might be prepared and guarded against surprize, at our sudden assault, before she could think it possible that the christian bark was arrived. Resolved, therefore, to see and speak with her, if possible, one day before our departure, I went to the garden, on pretence of gathering some herbs; and the first person I met was her father, who spoke to me in a language used through all Barbary, and even at Constantinople, between the captives and the Moors; it is neither Arabic nor Castilian, nor indeed peculiar to any nation, but a mixture of different tongues, by which we make shift to understand each other. I say, he asked in this sort of jargon, who I was, and what I wanted in his garden? I answered, that I was a slave belonging to Arnaute Mami, who I knew to be an intimate

timate friend of his ; and that I wanted a few herbs for a fallad. In consequence of this answer, he inquired whether or not I was to be ransomed, and what my master demanded for my freedom ? And while we were thus conversing together, the fair Zorayda came out into the garden. She had already perceived me from a window of the house, and, as the moorish women make no scruple of shewing themselves to christians, with whom, as I have already observed, they are not at all shy, she, without any hesitation, walked towards the place, where I was standing with her father, who no sooner saw her, than he called at a distance, desiring her to come up. It would be a difficult task for me, at present, to describe the exceeding beauty, the genteel mien, the gay and rich ornaments with which my beloved Zorayda then presented herself before mine eyes : I shall only observe, that the pearls about her beauteous neck and ears, outnumbered the hairs of her head. On her ancles, which were bare, according to the custom of the country, she wore carcaxes, (by which name the bracelets for the feet are called in the Morisco language,) of the purest gold, set with such a quantity of diamonds, that she afterwards told me, her father valued them at twenty thousand ducats ; and those she wore upon her wrists were of equal richness. The pearls, though in such a vast number were extremely fine ; for, the greatest pride and magnificence of the moorish women lie in pearls and embroidery ; consequently, there is a greater quantity of pearls and seed-pearl, in Barbary, than in all the other nations of the world, and Zorayda's father had the reputation of possessing the greatest number and the best in Algiers, together with a fortune of two hundred thousand Spanish crowns, of all which she, who is now mine, was once mistress. Whether, with the assistance of all these ornaments, she appeared beautiful or not, and what she must have been in her prosperity, may be conjectured by what remains after the great fatigues she hath undergone ; for, it is well known, that the beauty of some women hath its days and seasons, and is diminished or increased according to the circumstances that happen ; being improved or impaired, nay, often totally destroyed, by the passions of the mind. In short, she approached in all the pomp of dress, and all the excess of beauty ; at least to me, she seemed the most beautiful creature I had ever seen, which circumstance, joined to the obligations I lay under, made me look upon her as an angel sent from heaven, for my delight and deliverance. When she came up, her father told her, in their own language, that I was a captive belonging to his friend Arnaute Mami, and had come for a fallad ; upon which she took up the discourse, and in that jumble of languages before mentioned, asked if I was a gentleman ; and why I did not ransom myself ? I answered, that I was already ransomed, and that she might see in what

esteem I was with my master, by the sum he received for my freedom, which was no less than fifteen hundred sultanins. To this observation, she replied, "Truly, if thou hadst belonged to my father, he should not have parted with thee for twice the sum; for, you christians always dissemble, and call yourselves poorer than you really are, with a view of imposing upon the Moors." "That may be sometimes the case, madam, said I, but I adhered to the truth, in bargaining with my master, and will deal honestly with all mankind." She then asked how soon I intended to depart; and I answered, "To-morrow, I believe: there is a French ship in the harbour, to sail in the morning, and I have some thoughts of taking my passage on board of her." "Had not you better stay till the arrival of a vessel from Spain, said Zorayda, than trust yourself with the French, who are no good friends of yours?" "No, madam, answered I, though, as there is a Spanish ship expected, if she arrives immediately, I believe I shall wait for her: but, it is more likely that I shall sail to-morrow; for, the desire I have to see myself in my native country, with those I love, is too strong to let me wait for any other convenience, let it be ever so good." "Without doubt, said Zorayda, thou art married in thy own country, and therefore desirous of being with thy wife." "I am not yet wedded, I replied; but, under promise of being married at my return." "And is the woman beautiful to whom thou hast pledged thy faith?" said she. "So beautiful, answered I, that to compliment her, and tell thee the truth, she is the exact resemblance of thyself."

Her father laughed heartily at this declaration, saying, "Truly, christian, she must be very handsome indeed, if she resembles my daughter, who is the most beautiful woman in this kingdom; look at her, and thou wilt see whether or not I speak truth."

In the greatest part of this conversation, Agimorato served as interpreter for his daughter, he being better acquainted with this spurious language, which, tho' she understood a little, in consequence of its being much spoke among the Moors, she explained her meaning by signs, oftener than by words.

While we were engaged in this and other such conversation, a Moor ran towards us, crying aloud, that four Turks having got thro' the pales, or leaped over the garden-wall, were gathering the fruit, tho' it was not yet ripe. At this information the old man and Zorayda started; for, the Moors are commonly, and as it were naturally, afraid of the Turks, especially the soldiers, who are so insolent and imperious to their moorish subjects, that they treat them worse than if they were slaves. Accordingly, the father said to Zorayda, "Daughter, retire to the house, and lock thyself up, while I go and talk to those dogs; and thou, christian, (turning to me)

me) gather thy herbs, and depart in peace; and Ala send thee safe into thy own country." I made my obeisance, and he went in search of the Turks, leaving me alone with Zorayda, who pretended to go homeward, according to her father's desire; but, no sooner was he out of sight, among the trees of the garden, than she came back, with her eyes drowned in tears, saying, "Amexi, christiano, amexi!" the signification of which address, is, "Thou art going away, christian, thou art going away!" "Yes, madam, answered I, but, by no means without you: on the next Jama expect me, and be not afraid when you see us; for, we shall certainly go to the land of the christians." I made shift to express myself in such a manner, that she understood this, and every thing else that I said; and throwing her arm about my neck, began to walk towards the house, with a slow and faltering pace: but, it pleased fortune, which might have proved very unlucky, had not heaven otherwise ordained, that while we walked in this attitude, with her arm about my neck, we were observed by her father, on his return from having sent away the Turks; and we immediately perceived ourselves discovered. Nevertheless, Zorayda prompted by her discretion and presence of mind, would not take her arm from my neck; but, on the contrary, coming closer to me, let her head drop upon my bosom, and her knees sink under her, as if she was fainting: while I seemed to support her with a sort of strained civility.

The father seeing his daughter in this situation, ran towards us with great concern, and asked what was the matter: but, she making no reply, "Doubtless, said he, she hath fainted with the fright occasioned by the insolence of those dogs." Then, taking her out of my arms, he supported her in his own; while she, fetching a deep sigh, the tears still continuing in her eyes, repeated, "Amexi, christiano, amexi:" "Begone christian, begone. "There is no necessity for the christian's departure, said the father, he hath done thee no harm; and as the Turks are gone already, be not disturbed: thou hast no cause to be uneasy; for, as I have already said, the Turks, at my intreaty, went out as they had come in." "Indeed, sir, said I, they have discomposed her very much, as you observe; but, since she desires me to go, I will not stay to give offence. Peace be with you. I will, with your permission, return to this garden, for herbs, if they should be wanted; for, my master says there are none better to be found in any other place." "Thou mayest come as often as thou wilt, answered Agimorato: what my daughter says, is not out of resentment against thee, or any other christian; but, instead of bidding the Turks begone, she applied the words to thee, or else thought it was time for thee to go and gather thy herbs." I then took leave of them both; and she, as if her soul had been rent from her body, went away with her father, while I, on pretence of culling my fallad, went round the whole garden,

at my pleasure, observing all the entries and outlets, together with the strength of the house, and every convenience that might tend to facilitate our purpose.

Having thus reconnoitred, I went and communicated my observations to the renegado, and the rest of my companions, longing eagerly for the hour of seeing myself in peaceable possession of the blessing which fortune presented in the beautiful and charming Zorayda. At length, the intervening time elapsed, and the long wished-for day and period arrived, when all of us, following the order and plan which had been often canvassed, and at last settled, after the most mature deliberation; our desires were happily accomplished. On the Friday, after I had spoke with Zorayda, Morrenago, which was the renegade's name, anchored his bark right opposite to the place where my charming mistress resided; and the christians who were to row, in consequence of my directions, lay already concealed in different corners, all around the place, waiting for me with impatience, joy and desire of attacking the vessel which was in view; for, they were ignorant of our confederacy with the renegade, and believed that they must win and maintain their liberty, by force of arms, in killing all the Moors who belonged to the bark: wherefore, as soon as I and my companions appeared, those who were hid came and joined us immediately, about the time when the city-gates were shut; so that not a soul was to be seen in the fields. Being all met together, we were in some doubt, whether we should go immediately for Zorayda, or first of all secure the moorish rowers belonging to the bark. While we hesitated on this point, the renegado arriving, asked what we waited for; observing, that now was the time, the Moors being altogether unguarded, and the greatest part of them actually asleep: we told him the subject of our doubt; upon which, he assured us, that it was of the greatest consequence to make ourselves first masters of the bark, a precaution which might be easily taken, without running the least hazard; and then we could go in quest of Zorayda, with greater security. His advice was unanimously approved; and therefore, without further delay, we followed him as guide to the vessel, into which he leaped, and drawing a scymitar, called in the moorish language, "Let none of you stir, on pain of death." The christians were at his back in an instant; while the Moors being naturally pusillanimous, hearing their master talk in this manner, were seized with consternation, and as there were few or no arms on board, suffered themselves, without the least resistance, to be fettered by the christians, who performed this office with infinite dexterity and dispatch, threatening to put them all to the sword, if any one of them should raise his voice, or attempt to make the least noise.

This scheme being executed, we left one half of our number to guard them, and with the rest, using the renegado still as our guide, went to Agimorato's garden-door, which fortunately opened with as much ease as if it had not been locked; so that, without being perceived, we proceeded to the house with great silence and composure. The adorable Zorayda, who stood waiting for us, at a window, no sooner perceived people at the door, than she asked if we were Nazarini, which in their language, signifies christians? I replied in the affirmative, desiring her to come down: when she knew my voice, she made no delay, but, without answering one syllable, came down in a moment, opened the door, and appeared so beautiful and richly dressed, as to surpass all description. Transported at the sight, I took her hand and kissed it most devoutly: the renegado, and my two companions, did the same, and the rest, tho' ignorant of the occasion, followed our example, thinking we expressed our thanks, and acknowledgments to her as the instrument of our deliverance. The renegado asked, in the Moreasco tongue, if her father was in the house? and she assuring him, that he was asleep in his own apartment; "Then it will be necessary, said Morrenago, to wake and carry him off, together with every thing of value, in this agreeable habitation." "Touch not my father, said she, and take my word for it, there is nothing valuable in this house but what I have secured, which is enough to make you all rich and happy: stay a little, and thou shalt see."

So saying, she went back into the house, protesting she would immediately return, and desiring us to make no noise. I then asked the renegade what had passed between them, and when he told me, charged him to do nothing that should be disagreeable to Zorayda, who soon returned with a coffer so full of golden crowns, that she could scarce support the weight: but, our evil fortune ordained that her father should wake in the interim, and hear a noise in the garden; upon which, he started up, and running to the window, no sooner perceived that we were all christians, than he began to bawl, in Arabic, with vast vociferation, "Christians! christians! thieves! thieves!" and his cries threw us all into the utmost terror and confusion: however, the renegado seeing the danger we were in, and how much it imported him to achieve the enterprize, without being detected, ran up to Agimorato, with infinite agility, being accompanied with some others of our company, as I could not leave Zorayda, who by this time had fainted in my arms: in short, those who entered the house managed him so well, that in a moment they brought him down, with his hands tied, and an handkerchief in his mouth, to hinder him from crying, threatening all the while, that if he presumed to speak, it would cost him his life. His  
daughter

daughter covered her eyes, that she might not see her father in that condition; while he was astonished at sight of her, little thinking how willingly she had put herself in our power; and our feet being then more necessary than our hands, we, with great industry and dispatch, returned to the vessel, where we were expected with impatience by those we had left, who had begun to fear we had met with some mischance.

Before two hours of the night had elapsed, we were all safe on board, where we untied the hands of Zorayda's father, and took the handkerchief out of his mouth; tho' the renegado commanded him again to be silent, on pain of death. Seeing his daughter also in our power, he began to sigh most bitterly, more especially as he perceived her lie quietly in my arms, without resisting, complaining, or the least appearance of constraint: but, he was fain to hold his tongue, lest the renegado should put his repeated threats in execution. Zorayda now seeing us embarked, and on the point of manning the cars, while her father and the other Moors remained prisoners among us, desired the renegado would be so good as to dismiss the Moors, and set her father at liberty; for, she would rather throw herself into the sea, than behold a parent, whom she loved so much, dragged into captivity on her account. Morrenago having made me acquainted with her request, I consented to the proposal; but, he said it was by no means expedient, because, should we leave them there, they would instantly alarm both town and country; so that some light frigates would be sent out in pursuit of us, and then we should be so beset, both by sea and land, that it would be impossible for us to escape: he proposed, therefore, to set them at liberty, on the first christian land he should make. We were all of the same opinion, which was also embraced by Zorayda, to whom he imparted the reasons which hindered us from complying immediately with her desire: then each of our valiant rowers laid hold of his oar with joy, silence, and alacrity, and recommending ourselves to the protection of God, we took our departure, directing our course towards the island of Majorca, which was the nearest christian land; but, the north wind beginning to blow, and the sea becoming rough, it was impossible to steer our course, and we were obliged to row along shore, towards Oran, not without great apprehension of being discovered from the town of Sargel, which lies upon that coast, about sixty miles from Algiers; we were also afraid of meeting, in those parts, with some of those galleys which frequently come thither from Tetuan, to trade; tho' each of us singly, and all of us together, presumed, that if we could fall in with a merchant vessel not fitted out, or manned for a corsair, far from losing our liberty again, we should make ourselves masters of a ship in which we might perform our voyage with more security.



ty. While we thus coasted along, Zorayda lay with her head in my bosom, that she might not see her father in distress; and I could hear her imploring Lela Marien to assist us in our design.

When we had rowed about thirty miles, day breaking, discovered that we were about three gun-shots distant from the shore of a desert country, where not a soul appeared to detect us: but, for all that, we plied hard to get a little farther off to sea, which was now somewhat calmer; and having made about two leagues, directed the men to row by turns, that we might refresh ourselves with the provisions, of which we had plenty in the bark; but, the rowers said, it was then no time to be idle, and desired the rest to bring them victuals, which they would eat while at work, protesting that they would by no means quit their oars: this hint was accordingly taken, and a fresh gale springing up, we were obliged to lay aside our oars, and make sail directly for Oran; for, it was impossible to follow any other course: and this method proved so expeditious, that we sailed at the rate of eight miles in an hour, without any other dread than that of falling in with some corsair. We ordered some victuals to be given to the Moors, who were consoled by the renegado's telling them, that as they were not slaves, they should have their freedom with the first opportunity: the same declaration he made to Zorayda's father, who answered, "I might expect any other favour from your generosity and courteous behaviour, O christians! but, you must not think me so simple as to believe you will give me my freedom; for, you would never have run such risque in depriving me of it, with a view of restoring it so liberally; especially, when you know who I am, and the advantage you may reap from my ransom, which, if you will now propose, I here promise to pay your utmost demand, for myself and this unhappy daughter, or for her alone, who is the better part of my soul."

So saying, he wept with such bitterness, as moved us all to compassion, and obliged Zorayda to lift up her eyes, when seeing the tears trickle down from his aged cheeks, she was melted, and rising from the place where I supported her, went to embrace her father; then joining her face to his, the two uttered such a tender lamentation, as drew tears of sympathy from the eyes of almost all those who heard it; but, when Agimorato perceived her so gayly dressed, with all her jewels about her, he said with some surprize, in their language, "What is the meaning of this finery, my child? Last night, before this terrible misfortune happened, I saw thee in thy ordinary and common dress; but, now, tho' thou had'st neither time, nor any happy tidings to solemnize with such ornaments and finery, I see thee decked in all the richest apparel I could contrive or bestow upon thee, while fortune was much more favourable than at present! Answer me in that particular, at which I am more concerned and surprized, than at the mis-

hap which hath befallen us?" The renegado interpreted to us all that the Moor said to his daughter, who made no answer to his question: but, when he saw on one side of the bark, the coffer in which she used to keep her jewels, which he thought had been left at Algiers, when he moved to his country-house, he was still more confounded, and asked how that casket had fallen into our hands, and what it contained? To this question the renegado replied, without waiting for Zorayda's answer; "You need not weary yourself, signor, in putting so many questions to your daughter; for, I can satisfy you, in one word: know then, that Zorayda is a christian; that she hath filed off our chains, and converted our captivity into freedom; that she came hither of her own accord, and is now, I believe, as well satisfied with her present condition as one delivered from darkness to light, from death to life, and from affliction to triumph." "Daughter, cried the Moor, is that which he affirms, true?" "Yes," replied Zorayda. "That thou art actually a christian, and the very person who hath put thy father into the hands of his enemies?" resumed the old man. "I am a christian, 'tis true, said Zorayda, but, not the person who reduced you to this situation; for, my desire never extended so far as either to leave or render you unhappy, my sole intention being to provide for my own welfare." "And how ha'st thou provided for it, my child?" replied the father. "Put that question to Lela Marien, said she, who will inform you better than I can."

Scarce had these words reached the ears of Agimorato, than, with incredible agility, he darted himself headlong into the sea, where, without all doubt, he must have perished, had not his large intangling robes helped to keep him afloat. Zorayda shrieking, begged we would save her father; upon which we all exerted ourselves, and laying hold of his upper garment, pulled him on board, already half drowned, and deprived of all sensation; when she was so much affected with his condition, that she uttered a most tender and doleful lamentation over him, as if he had been actually dead. Having turned him upon his face, a great quantity of water ran out of his mouth, and he recovered the use of his senses, in the space of two hours, during which, the wind shifting, we were driven towards the shore, and by main dint of rowing, kept from running aground; but, by good fortune, we arrived in a creek formed by a small cape or promontory, known among the Moors by the name of Cava Rumia, which signifies, The wicked christian woman; there being a tradition among them, that \* Cava, on whose account they lost their possessions in Spain, is interred in that place; for, Cava, in their language, implies a Wicked Woman, and Rumia signifies Christian: so that they look upon it as a bad omen, when they are obliged, by necessity,

\* Cava or Caba, daughter of count Julian, count of Ceuta, was violated by Roderick king of Spain, and, in order to revenge this injury, the father called the Saracens into that kingdom, in the year 712.

to drop anchor here, and except, in cases of emergency, they never attempt it: tho' to us, it was by no means the shelter of a wicked woman, but a secure harbour in stormy weather. Having placed centinels on shore, without quitting our oars, we made another meal of what the renegado had provided; and prayed heartily to God and the blessed Virgin, to favour and assist us, in bringing such a fortunate beginning to a happy conclusion. We then determined, at the intreaty of Zorayda, to set her father and the Moors, whom we had fettered, on shore, because she had not resolution enough, nor could her tender disposition endure to see her parent and countrymen in the condition of captives; we accordingly promised to gratify her desire, at our departure, since we ran no risk in setting them at liberty, in that uninhabited place.

Our prayers were not so vain as to be rejected by heaven, that sent a favourable wind and a smooth sea, inviting us to proceed with alacrity in the voyage we had undertaken. This we no sooner perceived, than unbinding the Moors, we put them all on shore, one by one, to their no small astonishment; but, when we came to dismiss Zorayda's father, who by this time had recovered the intire use of his senses, "Christians, said he, do you think that bad woman rejoices at my freedom, thro' filial piety? No, surely, but meerly to be rid of the check which she would receive from my presence, in seeking to gratify her vicious desires. Do not imagine that she hath been induced to change her religion, because she believes that the christian faith is preferable to ours? No; she hath apostatized, because she understood that, in your country, she might indulge her loose inclinations more freely than in her own." Then turning to Zorayda, while I and another christian held him fast, that he might not commit some desperate action, he said, "O infamous wretch, and ill-adviced maiden! what blindness and distraction hath prompted thee to put thyself in the power of these dogs, who are all our natural foes? Curfed be the hour in which thou wast engendered! and curfed be the gaiety and indulgence in which I brought thee up!"

Perceiving that there was no likelihood of his ending his exclamations for some time, I presently set him on shore, where he proceeded with his reproaches, imprecations and complaints, imploring the mediation of Mahomet with Ala, to confound, overwhelm and destroy us; and when we had failed out of hearing, we could perceive him act his despair, pulling his beard, and tearing the hair of his head, which he scattered in handfuls upon the shore; nay, once he raised his voice in such a manner, that we could distinctly hear him pronounce, "Return, my beloved daughter! return to the shore; I forgive all that is past: leave with these men the money which they already have in their possession, and return to comfort thy

disconsolate father, who, if thou forsakeft him, will lie down and breathe his laft upon this barren fand!" This pathetic address was heard by Zorayda, who lamented his affliction with the utmoft fenfibility, tho' she could make no reply than this, "Ala grant, my dear father, that Lela Marien, who was the cause of my conversion, may console you in your distress! she knows I could not do otherwise than I have acted, and that these christians owe nothing to any particular good-will I bore them; for, if I had not assisted and accompanied them in their escape, but remained at home with you, it would have been impossible for me, in consequence of the earnest sollicitations of my own soul, to execute that which, in my opinion, is as righteous as it is infamous and wicked in yours." But, these words never reached the ears of her father, whom, by this time, we could not perceive: I therefore endeavoured to console my amiable mistress, while the rest were intent upon our voyage, which was so much favoured by a fair wind, that we laid our accounts with being next day on the coast of Spain.

But, as good fortune seldom comes pure and single, unattended or unpursued by some troublesome and unexpected circumstance, it was ordained by heaven, perhaps in consequence of the curses imprecated by the Moor upon his daughter; for, such curses are to be dreaded, let the parent be what he will. I say, heaven ordained, that when we were a good way off at sea, with a flowing sheet, three hours of the night being already spent, the oars lashed up, because the fair wind made it unnecessary to use them, and the moon shining with remarkable brightness; we perceived a large vessel with all her sails out, steering a little upon the wind, right athwart our haufe, and so near that we were obliged to shorten sail, that she might not run foul of us, while she claped her helm aweather that we might have time to pass: those upon deck hailed us, asking who we were, whence we came, and whither bound: but, as they spoke in French, the renegado said, "Let no man answer; these are French privateers, who make prize of every thing that falls in their way."

Thus cautioned, we made no reply, but sailed on, leaving the ship a little to windward, when all of a sudden, they discharged two pieces of cannon, loaded, in all appearance, with chain-shot; for, one of them cut away our mast in the middle, which, with the sail, fell overboard into the sea; and the other coming a moment after, took us amidships, and laid the side of the bark intirely open, without doing any other mischief. Seeing ourselves going to the bottom, we began to cry aloud for assistance, beseeching the people in the ship to save us from perishing: then they brought to, and hoisting out their boat or pinnace, it was instantly manned by a dozen of Frenchmen, well armed with their muskets, and lighted match, who rowing up to us, and seeing how few we were, as also, that our bark was

on

on the point of foundering, took us in, observing that this misfortune had happened, because we had been so uncivil as to refuse an answer to their hail: while the renegado, without being perceived, took up the coffer in which Zorayda's treasure was contained, and threw it into the sea. In short, we went on board with the French, who, when they had informed themselves of every thing we could impart, for their purpose; as if they had been our enemies, plundered us of all that we had, taking from Zorayda the very bracelets she wore upon her ancles: but, their behaviour to her gave me the more anxiety, as I was afraid that, after having pilfered all her rich and precious jewels, they would proceed to rob her of that which was of greater value, and which she herself esteemed infinitely more than all the rest: but, the desires of those people extend no farther than to money, and with that they can never satiate their avarice, which then engrossed them so much, that they would even have robbed us of the wretched garments we wore in our captivity, if they could have applied them to any sort of use: nay, some among them, proposed to wrap us altogether in a sail, and throw us into the sea; because they intended to trade in the ports of Spain, under pretence of being Bretons, and if they carried us thither alive, their depredation would be discovered and themselves chastised accordingly. But, the captain, who had with his own hands rifled my beloved Zorayda, said, he was satisfied with the prize he had got, and resolved to touch at no port in Spain, but, pass the streights of Gibraltar in the night, or take the best opportunity of so doing that should occur, and return to Rochelle, from whence he had sailed on the cruize: they, therefore, agreed to give us their boat, with what necessaries we should want, to finish the little that remained of our voyage: this promise they actually performed next day, at a small distance from the Spanish coast, at sight of which, all our poverty and vexation vanished from our remembrance, as if we had never endured them; such is the transport occasioned by liberty regained! It might be about noon when we were put into the boat, with two casks of water and some biscuit, and the captain, moved to compassion at the distress of the lovely Zorayda, gave her to the amount of forty crowns in gold, and would not suffer his soldiers to strip her of the cloaths which she now wears: so that at parting, instead of complaining of the hard usage we met with, we thanked them kindly for the benefit we had received at their hands. They steered right before the wind for the streights, while we, without minding any other compass than that of the land that appeared ahead, plied our oars so vigorously, that at sun-set, we were near enough to conclude, that we could easily reach the shore before the night should be far advanced; but, that night being dark, without any moon-shine, and every body on board ignorant of the coast, some of  
our

our company judged it unsafe to row ashore; while others insisted upon our running that hazard, even if we should land among rocks, or in some uninhabited part of the country, that we might be secured from the just apprehension of meeting with some rovers from Tetuan, who are frequently, in the beginning of the night, in Barbary, and in the morning, on the Spanish coast, where having taken a prize, they return the same day, and sleep at home in their own houses. Of these contrary opinions we chose that of rowing gently towards the shore, with intent, if the smoothness of the sea would permit, to land at the first convenient place; in consequence of this resolution, a little before midnight, we arrived at the foot of a huge and lofty mountain, tho' not so rocky towards the sea but that there was a little space left, for commodious landing: the boat being run ashore, and all of us disembarked, we kissed the ground, and, with tears of unutterable joy, returned sincere thanks to our gracious Lord, for his unparalleled protection vouchsafed to us in the voyage: then we took out the provision, and dragging her on shore, ascended a vast way up the mountain; not being as yet able to quiet our apprehensions, or persuade ourselves, tho' it actually was so, that the soil we trod was christian ground. The day broke much later than we could have wished, and about this time we gained the summit of the mountain, purposing to look from thence for some village or shepherd-huts; but, altho' we viewed the whole country around, we could neither discern village, house, highway, path, nor the least trace of human footsteps. Nevertheless, we determined to penetrate farther into the land, since it could not be long, before we should discover some person who would give us information: but what gave me the greatest concern, was to see Zorayda travelling on foot, among the flinty rocks; for, tho' I sometimes took her on my shoulders, she was much more fatigued with seeing me weary, than refreshed by finding herself exempted from walking; and therefore would not allow me to take any more trouble of that kind, but, proceeded with infinite chearfulness and patience, while I led her by the hand, all the way.

In this manner, we had gone about a quarter of a league, when our ears were saluted by the sound of a small sheep-bell, which was a sure sign of a flock's being somewhere not far off; looking therefore, attentively, to discover it, we perceived a young shepherd, sitting with great composure at the root of a cork-tree, smoothing a stick with his knife: when we called to him, he raised his head, and started nimbly up, and as we afterwards understood, the renegade and Zorayda, who were in moorish dress, being the first objects that presented themselves to his eyes, he thought all the corsairs of Barbary were upon him, and running with incredible swiftness, into a wood that grew near the place where he was, he began to cry as loud

as

as he could bawl, "The Moors! the Moors are landed! the Moors, the Moors! to arms, to arms!" This exclamation threw us all into perplexity, but, reflecting that his cries would alarm the country, and that the cavalry of the coast would immediately come and see what was the matter; it was agreed, that the renegade should pull off his turkish robes, and put on a slave's jacket, with which one of our company accommodated him, tho' he himself remained in his shirt. This being done, we recommended ourselves to God, and followed the same road which we saw the shepherd take, expecting every moment, to see ourselves surrounded by the cavalry of the coast. Neither were we deceived in our expectation; for, in less than two hours, having crossed those thickets, and entered a plain on the other side, we descried about fifty horsemen riding briskly towards us, at a hand-gallop; upon which we halted, until they should come up: but, when they arrived, and, instead of the Moors they came in quest of, beheld so many poor christian captives, they were utterly confounded, and one of them asked, if we were the people who had been the occasion of a shepherd's calling to arms? I answered in the affirmative, and being desirous of telling him who we were, whence we came, and what had happened to us, one of our company knew the horseman who accosted us, and without giving me time to speak another word, said, "Thanks be to God, gentlemen, for having conducted us to such an agreeable part of the country; for, if I am not mistaken, the ground we now tread belongs to Velez Malaga; and, if the years of my captivity have not impaired my remembrance, you, signor, who ask that question, are Pedro Bustamante, my uncle."

Scarce had the captive pronounced these words, when the cavalier threw himself from his horse, and ran to embrace the young man, saying, "Dear nephew of my life and soul! I now recollect thee: thy supposed death has been mourned by myself, my sister thy mother, and all thy relations, who are still alive; for, heaven hath been pleased to spare their lives, that they might enjoy the pleasure of seeing thee again: I knew thou wast at Algiers, and from the information of thy habit, and that of all your company, I guess you have made a miraculous escape." "Your conjecture is true, replied the young man, and we shall have time to recount the particulars." As soon as the horsemen understood we were christian captives, they alighted, and each of them made a tender of his horse, to carry us to the city of Velez Malaga, which was about a league and a half from the place where they found us. Some of them went to bring the boat round to the city, after we had told them where she lay; others took us up behind them; and Zorayda rode with the christian's uncle. All the people came out to receive us, being apprized of our arrival, by one of the troopers who had pushed on before; not that they were surprized at the sight of captives freed, or Moors

in

in captivity; for, the inhabitants on that coast, are accustomed to see great numbers of both: but, they were amazed at the beauty of Zorayda, which was at that instant in full perfection; the fatigue of her journey, co-operating with the joy she felt in seeing herself in a christian country, without the fear of being lost, having produced such a bloom upon her countenance, that, unless I was then prejudiced by my affection, I will venture to say, the world never produced, at least, I had never seen, a more beautiful creature.

We went directly to church, to make our acknowledgments to God for his mercies; and as soon as Zorayda entered, she said she perceived some faces that resembled Lela Marien: we told her these were the images of the blessed virgin; and the renegado, as well he could, informed her of their signification, that she might adore them, as if each was actually the person of Lela Marien, who had spoke to her; so that, having naturally a good understanding, with a docile and discerning disposition, she easily comprehended what he said upon the subject. From thence, they conducted us to our lodgings in different families of the town; the renegado, Zorayda and I, being invited by the christian who escaped with us, to the house of his father, who was moderately provided with the good things of this life, and treated us with the same affection he expressed for his own son. Six days we tarried at Velez, during which, the renegado having informed himself of what was necessary for him to do, went to the city of Grenada, there, by means of the holy inquisition, to be readmitted into the bosom of our most sacred church: the rest of our company departed, each for his own home; leaving Zorayda and me by ourselves, destitute of every thing but the few crowns which she received from the courtesy of the French corsair. With part of these I bought the animal on which she arrived at this inn, and hitherto have cherished her with the affection of a parent, and the service of a squire, without using the prerogative of a husband: we are now upon the road to the place of my nativity, to see if my father be still alive, and if either of my brothers has been more fortunate than myself; tho', as heaven hath made Zorayda my companion for life, fortune could not have possibly bestowed upon me any other favour which I should have valued at so high a rate. The patience with which she bears the inconveniencies attending poverty, and the zeal she manifests to become a christian, is so great and extraordinary, as to raise my admiration, and engage me to serve her all the days of my life: but, the pleasure I take in this office, and in the prospect of seeing her mine, is disturbed and perverted, by reflecting, that possibly, in my own country, I shall not find a corner in which I can shelter the dear object of my love; and that time or death may have made such alterations in the fortune and lives of my father



ther and his other children, that I shall scarce meet with a soul that knows me.

This, gentlemen, is the substance of my story; whether or not it be agreeable and uncommon, I leave to the decision of your better judgment; assuring you that I wish I could have related it more succinctly, though the fear of tiring you, hath made me suppress a good number of circumstances.

## C H A P. XV.

Of what further happened at the inn, with many other particulars worthy to be known.

**H**ERE the captive left off speaking; and Don Fernando said to him, " Really, signor captain, the novelty of your strange adventures is equalled by your agreeable manner of relating them. Your whole story is uncommon, surprizing, and full of incidents that keep the hearers in admiration and suspense: and such is the pleasure we have received from it, that though the narration should continue till to-morrow morning, we should rejoice at your beginning it anew."

When this compliment was passed, Don Antonio, and all the rest of the company, offered to serve him to the utmost of their power, with such affectionate and sincere expressions of friendship, that the captain was extremely well satisfied of their good will. Don Fernando, in particular, promised, that if he would go home with him, his brother the marquis should stand godfather to Zorayda; and that he, for his part, would accommodate him in such a manner, that he should return to the place of his nativity with that authority and ease to which he was intitled by his birth and merit. The captive thanked him in the most courteous manner, but declined accepting any of his generous offers.

It was now night, when a coach arrived at the inn, attended by some men on horseback, who demanded lodging: and the landlady made answer, that there was not in the whole house an handful of room unengaged. " Be that as it will, said one of the horsemen, who had entered the gate, there must be some found for my lord judge." At mention of that name the hostess was disturbed, saying, " Signor, the greatest difficulty is my want of beds: but, if his lordship hath brought one along with him, as I suppose he hath, he is very welcome to come in; I and my husband will quit our own apartment to accommodate his worship." " Be it so," said the attendant. By this time, a person had alighted from the coach, who, by his garb immediately shewed the nature of his rank and office; for, his

long robe with high sleeves tucked up, plainly distinguished him to be a judge, as the servant had affirmed. He led by the hand a young lady seemingly sixteen years of age, dressed in a riding suit, and so sprightly, beautiful and genteel, as to raise the admiration of all who beheld her: so, that those who had not seen Dorothea, Lucinda and Zorayda then present, would have thought it a very difficult task to find another woman of equal beauty. Don Quixote seeing the judge and young lady alight, pronounced with great solemnity, "Your worship may securely enter and recreate yourself in this castle, which, though narrow and inconvenient, there is no narrowness and inconvenience in this world, but what will make room for arms and letters, especially, if they have for their guide and conductor, such beauty as that which accompanies the letters of your worship, in the person of that amiable young lady, to whom, not only castles ought to open and unfold their gates, but, also rocks divide, and mountains bow their heads at her approach. Enter, I say, this paradise, where you will find stars and suns to accompany that heaven which you have brought hither. Here you will find arms in perfection, and beauty in excess."

The judge marvelled greatly at this address of the knight, whom he earnestly considered, no less surprized at his figure than his words, without knowing what reply to make, so much was he confounded at both; when he was relieved by the appearance of Lucinda, Dorothea, and Zorayda, who, upon hearing the news of their arrival, and the landlady's description of the young beauty, had come out to welcome and receive her; while Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the curate, paid their compliments to the judge, in the most civil and polite terms. He was more and more astonished at what he saw and heard, though he could easily perceive that his fellow-lodgers were persons of rank and consequence: but, the mien, visage, and figure of Don Quixote, baffled all his conjectures. Compliments having thus passed on all sides, and the conveniencies of the inn being duly considered, it was agreed, as before, that all the ladies should sleep together in the fore-mentioned apartment, and the men sit in another room to guard them. The judge was very well satisfied, that his daughter (for such the young maiden was) should lodge with the other ladies, she herself willingly consenting to the proposal; and what with the inn-keeper's narrow bed, and that brought by the stranger, they made shift to pass the night more agreeably than they expected.

The captive, who, from the first moment he beheld the judge, felt his heart throb with a sort of intimation, that this was his own brother, asked of one of the servants that attended him, his master's name, with the place of his nativity. The footman replied, that his name was the  
licentiate

licentiate Juan Perez de Viedma ; and born, as he had been informed, in the mountains of Leon. This information, together with what he himself had before observed, confirmed him in the opinion, that he was his brother, who, by his father's advice, had followed his studies. Transported with this discovery, he called aside Don Fernando, the curate, and Cardenio, to whom he imparted the affair, and assured them that the judge was his own brother, by the servant's report, so far on his way to the East-Indies, in quality of supreme judge of Mexico. He understood also, by the same canal, that the young lady was his daughter, whose birth had cost the mother her life ; and that he was very much enriched by his wife's fortune, which had been settled on the children of the marriage. The captive, therefore, consulted them about the method he should take to make himself known, or rather to be assured before-hand, whether, upon the discovery, his brother would be ashamed of his poverty, or receive him with the bowels of affection." " Leave that talk to my conduct, signor captain, said the curate ; though there is all the reason in the world, to believe that you will meet with a brotherly reception : for, the virtue that appears in his courteous demeanour give no indications of his being proud and unnatural ; but, rather declare, that he knows how to consider the accidents of fortune, in the right point of view." " Nevertheless, replied the captain, I would not willingly disclose myself of a sudden, but, prepare him by some round-about insinuation." " I have already told you, answered the curate, that I will manage the affair to your mutual satisfaction." By this time, the cloth being laid, and every body sat down to table, except the captive, and the ladies, who supped in their own apartment, the curate addressed himself to the judge, saying, " I had once a comrade of your lordship's name at Constantinople, where I was a slave for many years. He was one of the bravest soldiers, and best officers in the Spanish infantry ; but, his misfortunes were equal to his valour and ability." " Dear sir, cried the judge, what was that officer's name ?" " He was called Ruy Perez de Viedma, replied the priest ; and a native of some town in the mountains of Leon. He told me a circumstance that happened between his father, two brothers and himself, which, had it not been affirmed by a person of his veracity, I should have looked upon as one of those tales which old women tell by the fire-side in winter : for, he said his father divided his estate equally among his three sons, whom he, at the same time, enriched with advice more salutary than any that ever Cato gave. This I know, the choice he made of going into the army succeeded so well, that in a few years, by his gallant behaviour, and without any other assistance than that of his extraordinary virtue, he rose to be captain of foot, and saw himself in the streight road of becoming

ing a field-officer, very soon : but there, where he had reason to expect the smiles of fortune, she proved most unkind, he having lost her, with his liberty, on that glorious day of the battle at Lepanto, in which it was found by so many christians. I was taken in the goleta, and, after various vicissitudes, we happened to be fellow-slaves at Constantinople, from whence we were transported to Algiers, where he met with one of the strangest adventures that ever was known."

Then the curate briefly recapitulated the story of Zorayda, to which the judge listened with more attention than ever he had yielded on the bench\*. But, the priest brought it no farther than the period when the French corsairs plundered the christians who were in the bark ; describing the poverty and distress to which they had reduced his comrade and the beautiful Moor ; and observing that he did not know what further befel them, nor whether they had arrived in Spain, or been carried into France.

The captain stood at some distance, behind, listening to what the curate said, and observing the emotions of his brother, who seeing that the curate had made an end of his story, uttered a profound sigh, saying, while the tears gushed from his eyes, " O signor ! if you knew how nearly I am concerned in what you have related, you would not wonder at these tears, which, in spite of all my fortitude and discretion, trickle from mine eyes. That valiant captain whom you have mentioned is my father's eldest son, who, being more brave and noble-minded than my youngest † brother and me, chose the honourable exercise of arms, which was one of the three paths proposed by our father, in his advice, as you seem to have been informed by your companion in adversity. I followed that of letters, in which God hath been pleased to reward my diligence with that station which you see I now maintain ; my younger brother is at present in Peru, so rich, that his remittances to my father and me, have made large amends for the small sum he carried with him at first ; and even enabled the old gentleman fully to indulge his liberal disposition, empowering me also to prosecute my studies, with more honour and decency, until I acquired the post I now enjoy. My father is still alive, though daily pining with the desire of hearing from his eldest son, and putting up petitions to heaven, incessantly, that his own eyes may not be closed for ever, until he shall have seen those of his first-born in life. What gives me a great deal of surprize, is, that a person of his discretion should, in the midst of such trouble and affliction, or even in his prosperity, omit writing to his father ; for, if he, or either of us, had known his situation,

\* A judge in Spanish is called *Oydor*, i. e. Hearer, and the original literally translated, is, " The hearer was never so much an hearer before."

† Cervantes seems to have forgot that the judge was the youngest of the three brothers, the second having gone to the Indies.

he should have had no occasion to wait for the miracle of the cane, in obtaining his liberty; but, at present, the uncertainty of his fate, gives me the greatest concern, as it is doubtful, whether those French have set him at liberty, or taken away his life, to conceal their robbery. This apprehension will convert the joy and satisfaction with which I undertook my journey, into melancholy and despondence. O my dear brother! would to heaven, I knew where thou art, that I might go and free thee from all trouble and affliction, though at the expence of my own. Who shall carry the news of thy being alive to our aged father; that, although thou art shut up in the deepest dungeon of Barbary, thou mayst be delivered by my brother's riches and my own! O generous and lovely Zorayda! who shall requite thy benevolence to my brother, be present at the regeneration of thy soul, and assist at the nuptials which would afford such pleasure to us all!

These, and many other exclamations, the judge pronounced with such symptoms of sorrow, at the news he had received of his brother, that all the hearers sympathized with him, in the expressions of his grief. The curate, seeing every thing succeed to his own expectation, and the captain's desire, was unwilling to protract the judge's anguish; so, rising from the table, and going into the other apartment, he led out Zorayda, who was followed by Lucinda, Dorothea and the young lady lately arrived, then, taking in his other hand the captain, who stood waiting to see what he intended, he went into the room, where the judge and the rest of the gentlemen sat, and presenting them both, said, "Dry your tears, my lord judge, and enjoy the completion of your wish; behold your worthy brother, and virtuous sister in law: this is captain Viedma, and that the beautiful Moor who behaved so generously to him in his distress: the French corsairs have reduced them to this extremity, that you may have an opportunity of displaying the liberality of your noble breast."

The captain ran to embrace his brother, who kept him off with both hands fixed on his shoulders, that he might consider him the more attentively; but, no sooner did he recollect his features, than he flew into his arms, and shed a flood of tears of joy, while the greatest part of those who were present wept in concert at the affecting scene. The expressions of both the brothers, and their mutual demonstrations of affection, are, I believe, scarce to be conceived, much less described. They briefly recounted their adventures to each other, and manifested the genuine flame of fraternal affection. There, the judge embraced Zorayda, making her a tender of all his wealth; there he commanded his daughter to receive her with open arms; there the mutual caresses of the beautiful christian and lovely Moor renewed the tears of the whole company; there Don Quixote  
silently

silently observed these surprizing accidents, which he wholly attributed to the chimeras of knight-errantry; there it was concerted that the captain and Zorayda should return to Sevil with his brother, from whence they could advertise their father of the liberty and arrival of his son; that the old gentleman being still able to undertake such a journey, might come and be present at the baptism and nuptials of his daughter in law; as it would be impossible for the judge to go far out of his way, because he was informed that, in a month, the flota would set sail from Sevil, for New-Spain; and it would be extremely inconvenient for him, to lose his passage. In short, the whole company were exceedingly rejoiced at the captive's good fortune; and two thirds of the night being already exhausted, they agreed to retire and repose themselves during the remaining part of it; while Don Quixote undertook to guard the castle from the assaults of any giant or wicked adventurer that might possibly covet the vast treasure of beauty which it contained. Those of his acquaintance thanked him for his courteous offer, and afterwards gave an account of his strange disorder to the judge, who was not a little diverted with the detail of his extravagance. Sancho Panza alone was distracted at their sitting up so late; though, in point of lodging, he was better accommodated than all the rest, for, he made his bed of the furniture of his ass, which cost him so dear, as will hereafter be seen.

The ladies having retired to their apartment, and every other person disposed of himself as tolerably as he could, Don Quixote went out to keep guard at the castle-gate, according to his promise; and a little before morning, the ladies were serenaded by a voice so clear and well-tuned, as to attract the attention of them all, especially of Dorothea, who was awake, and lay in the same bed with Donna Clara de Viedma, the judge's daughter. Nobody could imagine who the singer was, the voice being single, and unaccompanied by any instrument, and seeming to come sometimes from the stable and sometimes from the court-yard. While they listened with equal surprize and attention, Cardenio came to the door, saying, "You that are not asleep, take notice, and you will hear the voice of a mule-driver, who chaunts most enchantingly." When Dorothea told him that they had heard it already, he went away, while she, employing her whole attention, when he began to sing again, could plainly distinguish the following words.

## C H A P. XVI.

The agreeable story of the young muleteer, with many other strange incidents that happened in the inn.

## I.

**T**OSS'D in a sea of doubts and fears,  
Love's hapless mariner, I sail,  
Where no inviting port appears,  
To screen me from the stormy gale.

## II.

At distance view'd, a chearing star  
Conducts me through the swelling tide;  
A brighter luminary, far,  
Than Palinurus e'er descry'd.

## III.

My soul attracted by it's blaze,  
Still follows where it points the way,  
And while attentively I gaze,  
Considers not how far I stray.

## IV.

But female pride, reserv'd and shy,  
Like clouds that deepen on the day,  
Oft shroud it from my longing eye,  
When most I need the genial ray.

## V.

O lovely star, so pure and bright!  
Whose splendour feeds my vital fire,  
The moment thou deny'st thy light,  
Thy lost adorer will expire!

Here the musician pausing, Dorothea thought it was pity Clara should not hear such an excellent voice; therefore, by gently jogging, she waked her, saying, "I ask pardon, my dear Clara, for disturbing you, but, my intention in so doing, was to regale you with one of the best voices that ever you heard." Clara, being still half asleep, did not at first understand what she said, which, at her desire, Dorothea repeated; and the young lady listened accordingly: but, scarce had she heard two lines of the song, which was now resumed, when she began to tremble as violently as if she had been seized with a severe fit of the ague, saying, while she hugged Dorothea,

Dorothea, " Ah! dear lady of my life and soul, why did you wake me? the greatest favour that fortune could at present bestow, would be to keep both my eyes and ears fast shut, that I might neither see nor hear that unfortunate musician." " What do you mean, my dear child? answered Dorothea; consider what you say, he that sings is a young muleteer." " Ah, no! replied Clara, he is a young gentleman of great fortune, and so much master of my heart, that unless he quits it of his own accord, it shall remain eternally in his possession." Dorothea was surprized at this passionate declaration of such a young creature, who seemed to have so much more sensibility than could be expected from her tender years; and said to her, " Truly, Donna Clara, you talk in such a manner, that I do not understand you. Pray, explain yourself, and tell me the meaning of those expressions, about fortune and heart, and that musician, whose voice hath thrown you into such disorder; but say no more at present, for, I would not, by attending to your transports, lose the pleasure of hearing the singer, who now seems to be tuning his voice, and preparing to give us another song." " With all my heart," said Clara, stopping her ears with her fingers, to the further admiration of Dorothea, who listening attentively, heard the musician proceed in these words:

## I.

A Spiring hope, thou, unconfin'd,  
Pursu'ft th' imaginary path,  
Thro' woods, and rocks, and waves combin'd,  
Defying danger, toil, and death.

## II.

No laurel shall adorn his brow,  
No happiness the sluggard crown,  
Who tamely can to fortune bow,  
And slumber on th' inglorious down.

## III.

The joys unmatch'd bestow'd by love,  
Can never be too dearly priz'd,  
For, undeny'd examples prove  
What's cheaply bought, is soon despis'd.

## IV.

Success, by the consenting fair,  
Is oft to perseverance given;  
Then wherefore should my soul despair  
Of mounting from this earth to heaven.

Here



Here the voice ended; and Clara's sighs beginning afresh, kindled Dorothea's curiosity to know the cause of such agreeable music and grievous lamentation; she therefore, now desired to hear what her bed-fellow had before proffered to impart: then Clara, fearful of being overheard by Lucinda, crept close to Dorothea, and applying her mouth to her ear, so that she could securely speak without being perceived, "Dear madam, said she, that singer is the son of an Arragonian gentleman, who is lord of two towns, and when at court, lives opposite to my father's house; and although our windows are covered with canvas in winter, and lattices in summer, I know not how this young gentleman, while he prosecuted his studies, got sight of me, either at church, or somewhere else, and in short, being smitten, disclosed his passion from the windows of his own apartment, by so many tears and significant expressions, that I believed him sincere, and even loved him in my turn, without knowing the nature of my own distress. Among other signs, he made that of joining his hands, giving me to understand that he would take me to wife; and tho' I should have been extremely glad to comply with that proposal, as I was alone and motherless, I had no body to consult, and therefore let it rest, without granting him any other favour, except (when his father and mine were abroad) that of lifting up the canvas or lattice, that he might have a more perfect view of my person; and this condescension always transported him so much, that I was afraid he would have run stark mad with joy: in the midst of this commerce, the time of my father's departure drew near, of which being informed, tho' not by me, for I never had an opportunity of telling him, he fell sick, as I understand, of grief; so that, when we set out, I could not see him, as I wished, to indulge one parting look: but, having travelled two days, just as I entered the place at which we lodged last night, I perceived him standing at the gate, disguised so naturally in the habit of a muleteer, that it would have been impossible for me to know him, had not his image been so deeply imprinted on my soul. The sight of him filled me with joy and surprize; and he gazed upon me by stealth, unperceived by my father, from whom he always conceals his face, when he crosses the road before me, or is obliged to appear at the inns where we lodge: knowing therefore who he is, and that he travels on foot, undergoing so much hardship and fatigue for love of me, I am half dead with grief and anxiety, and wheresoever he sets his feet, there I fix my pitying eyes: I know not what he intends by thus following me, nor how he could manage to escape from his father, who loves him tenderly, because he has no heir but him; and the young gentleman deserves all his affection, as you will perceive when you see him. I can moreover assure you, what he sings is the product of his own head; for, I have been told that he is a great scholar, and an

excellent poet: every time I behold him, or hear him sing, I start and tremble from head to foot, being afraid that he will be known by my father, and thus our mutual love be discovered; for, tho' I never spoke to him in my life, my passion is so violent, that without him I shall not be able to live. This, dear madam, is all I can say concerning that musician whose voice hath given you such pleasure; and is alone sufficient to convince you, that he is not a muleteer, but the lord of towns and hearts, as I have described him.

“ Enough, Donna Clara: (said Dorothea kissing her with great affection) say no more; but, wait with patience till the approach of a new day, when, I hope in God, to manage matters so well, as to bring such a virtuous beginning to an happy end.” “ Ah, madam! replied the young lady, what happy end can be expected, seeing his father is a man of such rank and fortune, that he would think me unworthy to be the servant, much less the wife of his son? and as to marrying him without my own father's consent, I would not do it for the whole universe. All I desire is, that the young gentleman would return; perhaps his absence, and the length of the journey we have undertaken, will alleviate the uneasiness I at present feel, tho' I must own, I believe that remedy will have small effect. I cannot conceive what the deuce is the matter with me; nor how this same love got entrance into my heart, considering how young we both are; for, I really believe we are of the same age, and my father says, that till Michaelmas next, I shall not be sixteen.” Dorothea could not help laughing at these innocent observations of Donna Clara, to whom she said, “ Let us sleep, my dear, during the little that I believe remains of the night: God will grant us a new day, and if my skill fails me not, every thing will succeed to our wish.”

They accordingly went to rest, and a general silence prevailed over the whole house, in which there was not a soul awake, except the innkeeper's daughter and her maid Maritornes, who, by this time, being acquainted with the extravagant humour of Don Quixote, and knowing that he was then without the gate, keeping guard in arms, and on horseback, determined to play some trick upon him, or at least, divert themselves in listening to his folly.

The inn chancing to have no window nor opening towards the field, but a hole thro' which they took in their straw; this pair of \* demi-ladies there took their station, and observed Don Quixote, who sat on horseback, leaning upon his lance, and breathing from time to time such profound and doleful sighs, as seemed to tear his very soul: they likewise heard him pronounce, in a soft, complacent and amorous tone, “ O my dear mistress,

\* In the original *Demi-Donzellas*, equivalent to the modern term *Demireps*.

Dulcinea del Toboso! thou perfection of beauty, scope and sum total of discretion, cabinet of good humour, depository of virtue, and lastly, the idea of all that is useful, chaste and delectable in this life! in what art thou at present, employed? Art thou reflecting upon thy captive knight, who voluntarily subjects himself to such dangers, with the sole view of serving thee? Give me some information of my love, thou three-faced luminary! who now, perhaps, with envious eyes, beholdest her walking thro' some gallery of her sumptuous palace, or leaning over some balcony, revolving in her mind, how, without imparing the delicacy of her honour, she may assuage the torments that this heart endures on her account; how she may crown my sufferings with glory; my care with comfort; in fine, my death with new life, and my service with reward: and thou sun, who by this time must be busy in harnessing thy steeds to light the world, and enjoy the sight of her who is the sovereign of my soul, I intreat thee to salute her in my behalf; but, in thy salutation, beware of touching her amiable countenance, else I shall be more jealous of thee than ever thou wast of that nimble ingrate, who made thee sweat so much along the plains of Theffaly, or banks of Peneus; for, I do not remember thro' which thou ran'st, so jealous and enamoured."

So far had the knight proceeded in this piteous exclamation, when the innkeeper's daughter whispered softly, "Sir knight, will your worship be pleased to come this way?" Hearing this invitation, he lifted up his eyes, and by the light of the moon, which was then in full splendor, perceived them beckon to him from the straw-hole, which he mistook for a window, adorned with gilded bars, suitable to the grandeur of such a magnificent castle as the inn appeared: then, his crazy imagination instantly suggested, as before, that the beauteous damsel, daughter of the constable, being captivated by his person, intended again to sollicit his love. On this supposition, that he might not seem discourteous or ungrateful, he turned Rozinante, and riding up to the hole, no sooner perceived the two lasses, than he said, "I am extremely concerned, most beautiful lady, that you have fixed your amorous inclinations where it is impossible they should meet with that return which is due to your rank and qualifications; but, you ought not to impute your disappointment to any fault in me, whom love hath rendered incapable of yielding my heart to any other but to her, who at first sight took absolute possession of my soul. Pardon my refusal, honoured madam, and retire to your apartment, without seeking to explain your sentiments more fully, that I may not appear insensible or ungrateful; and if your love can find in me the power of giving you any other sort of satisfaction, you may freely command my service; for, I swear by that absent and amiable enemy of mine, to gratify your wish immediate-

ly; even if you should desire to have a lock of Medusa's hair, which was altogether composed of snakes, or the rays of the sun confined in a vial."

"Sir knight, answered Maritornes, my lady has no occasion for either of these things." "What then is your lady's pleasure, discreet duenna?" resumed the knight. "Only the favour of one of your beautiful hands, replied Maritornes, with which she may, in some measure, indulge the longing desire that brought her to this straw-hole, so much to the danger of her reputation, that if she should be detected by her father, the first slice of his indignation would cost her an ear at least." "I would fain see him take that liberty, said Don Quixote; but, he will take care to refrain from any such acts of barbarity, unless he has a mind I should bring him to the most calamitous exit that ever happened to a father, for having laid violent hands upon the delicate members of his enamoured daughter."

Maritornes concluding that he would certainly grant the request, and having already determined on what she was to do, ran down to the stable, and laid hold of the halter belonging to Sancho's ass, with which she instantly returned, just when Don Quixote had made shift to set his feet on the saddle that he might reach the gilded window, at which he imagined the wounded damsel was standing: presenting therefore, his hand, "Receive, madam, said he, that hand, or rather that chastiser of all evil-doers; receive, I say, that hand, which was never touched by any other woman, not even by her who is in possession of my whole body. I do not present it to be kissed; but, that you may contemplate the contexture of its nerves, the knittings of the muscles, the large and swelling veins; from whence you may conjecture what strength must reside in the arm to which it belongs." "That we shall see presently," said Maritornes, who having made a running knot on the halter, fixed it upon his wrist, and descending from the hole, made fast the other end to the bolt of the hay-loft door. The knight feeling the roughness of this bracelet, said, "Your ladyship seems to rasp rather than to clasp my hand: do not treat it so cruelly; for, it is not to blame for what you suffer, from inclination; nor is it just that such a small part should bear the whole brunt of your indignation: consider that one who is such a friend to love, ought not to be so attached to revenge."

All these expostulations of Don Quixote were uttered in vain; for, as soon as Maritornes had tied him up, she and her companion, ready to expire with laughing, left him fastened in such a manner, that it was impossible for him to get loose: thus, while he stood on Rozinante's back, with his whole arm thrust up into the straw-hole, and fast tied to the bolt of the door, he was in the utmost apprehension and dread, that if his horse should make the least motion to either side, he must lose his support, and the weight of his whole body hang by one arm; so that he durst not

venture

venture to stir; tho' he might have expected from the patience and peaceful disposition of Rosinante, that he would stand motionless for a whole century. In short, finding himself thus tucked up, and the ladies vanished, he imagined that the whole had been effected by the power of enchantment, which he had experienced once before, in that same castle, when he was belaboured by the enchanted Moor of a carrier; and cursed, within himself, his want of conduct and discretion, in entering a second time that fortress in which he had fared so ill at first; it being a maxim among knights-errant, that when they prove an adventure, without success, they conclude it is reserved for another, and therefore think it unnecessary to make a second trial. Nevertheless, he pulled with intention to disengage his arm, but, he was so well secured, that all his efforts were ineffectual: true it is, he pulled with caution, that Rozinante might not be disturbed; and tho' he had a longing desire of sitting down upon the saddle again, he found that he must either continue in his present upright posture, or part with his hand: then, he began to wish for the sword of Amadis, against which no enchantment could prevail; then cursed his fortune; then exaggerated the loss which the world would sustain, while he remained enchanted, as he formerly believed himself to be; then he reflected anew upon his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso; then he called to his trusty squire Sancho Panza, who, stretched upon the pannel of his ass, and buried in sleep, at that instant, retained no remembrance of the mother that bore him; then he implored the assistance of the two sages Lirgando and Alquife; then he invoked his good friend Urganda, for succour in his distress; and, in fine, the morning found him in that situation, so distracted and perplexed, that he roared aloud like a bull, without expecting that the day would put an end to his disaster, which he thought would be eternal, believing himself actually enchanted: and this opinion was confirmed, by his seeing that Rozinante scarce offered to stir; for, he was persuaded, that in this manner, without eating, drinking, or sleeping, he and his horse would continue until the evil influence of the stars should pass over, or some other sage of superior skill disengage them from their enchantment.

But for once he was mistaken in his calculation; for, day had scarce begun to dawn, when four men on horseback arrived at the inn, well mounted and accoutred with carbines hanging at their saddle-bows: the knight perceiving from the place, where, in spite of his misfortune, he still kept guard, that they thundered for entrance at the gate, which was still shut, called, in an arrogant and haughty tone, "Knights or squires, or who-soever you are, you have no business to make such a noise at the gate of this castle; for, it is very plain, that either the people within are asleep,

or

or unaccustomed, at these hours, to open the fortrefs, which you cannot enter before the sun rife. Retire therefore, and wait until the day be farther advanced, and then we shall see whether or not you have any title to be admitted."

"What the devil of a fortrefs or castle is this, that we must observe such ceremony! said one of the company: if you are the innkeeper, order some body to open the door: we are all travellers, and only want to bait, that we may forthwith proceed on our journey; for, we are in haste." "Gentlemen, replied Don Quixote, do you think I resemble an innkeeper?" "I don't know what you resemble, answered the other; but this I know, that you talk nonsense, in calling this inn a castle." "A castle it is, cried the knight, and one of the best in this province; nay, at this very instant, it contains those who have wore crowns on their heads, and wielded sceptres in their hands." "Or rather the reverse, said the traveller: that is, the sceptre on the head, and the crown in the hand \*; but, perhaps, there may be within some company of strollers who frequently wear these crowns and sceptres you mention; for, otherwise, in such a sorry inn, without any sort of noise or stir, I cannot believe that any persons of such note would lodge." "You know little of the world, replied Don Quixote, since you are so ignorant of the events that happen in knight-errantry."

The other horsemen being tired with this dialogue that passed between the knight and their companion, began again to knock and bawl with such vociferation, that the landlord waking, rose to see who called so furiously: about this time, one of the horses belonging to the travellers, drew near and smelted at Rozinante, who sad and melancholy, with his ears hanging down, stood supporting his outstretched master, without stirring; but, at length, being made of flesh, tho' he seemed to have been carved out of a block, he was sensible of the civility, and turned about to repay the compliment to the courteous stranger; and scarce had he moved one step, when both his master's feet slipping from the saddle, he would have tumbled to the ground, had not he hung by his arm, which endured such torture in the shock, that he verily believed it was cut off by the wrist, or torn away by the shoulder. He was suspended so low, that the tops of his toes almost touched the ground; a circumstance that increased his calamity; for, feeling how little he wanted of being firmly sustained, he stretched and fatigued himself with endeavouring to set his feet upon the ground, like those wretches who, in undergoing the strappado, being hoisted up a very little space, increase their own torment by their eager efforts to lengthen their bodies, misled by the vain hope of reaching the ground.

\* Alluding to the delinquents, who were branded and marked with these figures.

## C H A P. XVII.

A continuation of the surprising events that happened in the inn.

**D**ON Quixote actually made such a hideous outcry, that the innkeeper opened the door, and ran out to see what was the matter; while the strangers that remained without were no less astonished at his bellowing. Maritornes being also waked by the same noise, conjectured what might be the case, and going straight to the hay-loft, without being perceived, untied the halter that sustained him, so that the knight came to the ground, in sight of the landlord and strangers, who running up, asked what was the matter with him, and wherefore he cried so violently? Without answering one word, he loosed the tether from his wrist, and rising up, mounted Rozinante, braced his target, couched his lance, and making a pretty large circuit in the field, returned at a half gallop, pronouncing with great emphasis, "If any person whatever sayeth, that I have justly suffered enchantment, I here, with the permission of my lady princess Micomicona, give him the lie, challenge and defy him to single combat."

The travellers were amazed at his words; but, their astonishment abated, when the innkeeper told them who Don Quixote was, observing that they ought not to mind what he did, because he was disordered in his brain: they then asked if he had seen a youth about sixteen years of age, dressed like a young muleteer, with such and such marks, giving an exact description of Donna Clara's lover. The landlord answered, there were so many people in his house, that he could not possibly distinguish the person for whom they enquired; but, one of them perceiving the judge's coach, "He must certainly be here, said he; for this is the coach, which they say he followed: let one of us stay at the door, and the rest go in to search for him; it will also be proper that one go round the whole house, to prevent his escaping over the yard-wall. This plan being agreed upon, two of them entered the inn, another remained at the door, and the fourth rode round the house to reconnoitre; while the landlord observing every thing that passed, could not conceive the meaning of all this care and diligence, altho' he believed they were in search of the youth whom they had described. By this time, it was clear day-light, and upon that account, as well as in consequence of Don Quixote's roaring, all the company were awake, and got up, especially Donna Clara and Dorothea, who had slept very little that night; the first being disturbed and alarmed, by reflecting that her lover was so near, and the other kept awake by the desire of seeing this pretended muleteer.

Don

Don Quixote seeing that none of the travellers took the least notice of him, or made any answer to his defiance, was transported with rage and vexation; and if he could have recollected any law of chivalry, authorising a knight-errant to undertake another enterprize, while he was under promise and oath, to abstain from any adventure, until that in which he was engaged already, was atchieved; he would have assaulted them all together, and forced them to reply, contrary to their inclination: but, thinking it was neither expedient nor just to begin a new enterprize, until he had re-established the princess Micomicona on her throne; he chose to be silent, waiting to see the effects of that diligence practised by the new comers, one of whom found the youth they came in quest of, sleeping by the side of a muleteer, and little dreaming that any body was in search of him; much less that he was in any danger of being discovered. The man, however, took him by the arm, saying, "Truly, signor Don Lewis, this is a very suitable dress for one of your quality; and the bed in which you now lie, extremely well adapted to the tenderness and delicacy in which your mother brought you up."

The youth rubbed his sleepy eyes, and looking stedfastly at the person who held him by the arm, no sooner perceived that he was one of his father's servants, than he was so much surpris'd and confounded, that for a good while, he could not speak one word: while the domestic proceeded, saying, "At present, Don Lewis, there is nothing else to be done, but, to exert your patience, and return home, if you are not resolv'd that your father and my lady shall visit the other world; for, nothing else can be expected from their anxiety at your absence." "How did my father get notice that I travelled this road, and in this habit?" said Don Lewis. "A student, replied the servant, to whom you imparted your intention, was so much moved by the sorrow that took possession of your parents, the moment you were miss'd, that he disclos'd your scheme to your father, who instantly dispatch'd four of his domestics in search of you; and we are all here, at your service, infinitely rejoic'd that we have now an opportunity of returning speedily, and carrying you back to the longing eyes of those by whom you are so much beloved." "That may depend upon my own will and the appointment of heaven," said the young nobleman. "What should you will, or heaven ordain, but your immediate return, which indeed you cannot possibly avoid."

All this conversation was overheard by the muleteer with whom Don Lewis lay, who got up immediately, and going to Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the ladies, who were already dress'd, told them how the man called his fellow-servant Don, and communicated every thing that pass'd between them, concerning the domestic's proposal of conducting him home again,  
and



and the youth's refusal to comply with his desire. This information, together with the knowledge of that sweet voice with which heaven had endowed him, excited in all the company, a desire of knowing more particularly who he was, and even of assisting him, should they offer any violence to his inclination: for this purpose, therefore, they repaired to the place where he still stood, talking and disputing with his father's servant. At the same time, Dorothea coming out of her apartment, followed by Donna Clara, in the utmost confusion, called Cardenio aside, and briefly related to him, the story of the musician and the judge's daughter: and he in his turn, informed her of what passed on the arrival of his father's servants. This, he spoke not so softly, but that he was overheard by Clara, who was so much affected at the news, that if Dorothea had not supported her, she would have fallen to the ground: but, Cardenio desired them to retire into their apartment, saying, he would endeavour to set every thing to rights, and they accordingly followed his advice. Mean while, the four, who had come in quest of Don Lewis, stood round him in the inn, persuading him to return, without loss of time, and console his melancholy father; but, he assured them, he could by no means comply with their request, until he had finished an affair, upon which his honour, life and soul depended. Then the domestics began to be more urgent, protesting they would, in no shape, return without him; and declaring, that if he would not go willingly, they should be obliged to carry him off, by force. "That you shall never do, replied Don Lewis, unless you carry me off, dead: and indeed you may as well kill me, as force me away, in any shape."

Most of the people in the house were now gathered together to hear the dispute, particularly Cardenio, Don Fernando, his companions, the judge, curate, barber, and Don Quixote, who thought it was no longer necessary to guard the castle. Cardenio being already acquainted with the young man's story, asked what reason the domestics had to carry off the youth, contrary to his own inclination? "Our motive, replied one of the four, is to retrieve his father's life, which is in danger of being lost, on account of this young gentleman's absence." To this declaration Don Lewis answered, "There is no reason why I should here give an account of my affairs; I am free, and will return, if I please; otherwise, none of you shall compel me into your measures." "Your honour will, I hope, hear reason, said the servant; or if you should not, it will be enough for us to execute our errand, as we are in duty bound."

Here the judge desiring to know the whole affair from the bottom, the man having lived in the same neighbourhood, knew him, and replied, "My lord judge, don't you know that young gentleman is your neighbour's

bour's son, who hath absented himself from his father's house, in a dress altogether unbecoming his quality, as your lordship may perceive?" Then the judge looking at him more attentively, recollected his features, and embracing him, said, "What a frolick is this, Don Lewis? or what powerful cause hath induced you to come hither in a garb so ill suited to your rank and fortune?" The tears gushing into the young man's eyes, he could not answer one word to the judge, who desired the four domestics to make themselves easy, for, all would be well; then taking Don Lewis by the hand, he led him aside, and asked again, the cause of his coming in that manner.

While he was employed in this and other questions, they heard a great noise at the inn-door, occasioned by two men, who had lodged all night in the house, and who seeing every body intent upon knowing the business of the four last comers, resolved to march off without paying their reckoning: but, the innkeeper, who minded his own affairs, more than those of any other person, stopped them on the threshold, demanded his money, and upbraided them for their evil intention, with such abusive language, as provoked them to answer by dint of fists, which they began to employ so dextrously, that the poor landlord found himself under the necessity of calling aloud for assistance. His wife and daughter seeing no body so idle, consequently so proper for the purpose, as Don Quixote, the damsel addressed him in these words; "Sir knight, I beseech your worship, by the valour which God hath given you, to go to the assistance of my poor father, whom two wicked men are now beating to a jelly." To this request the knight replied, with great leisure and infinite phlegm, "Beautiful young lady, I cannot, at present, grant your petition, being restricted from intermeddling in any other adventure, until I shall have accomplished one, in which my honour is already engaged: all that I can do for your service, is this; run and desire your father to maintain the combat as well as he can, and by no means allow himself to be overcome, until I go and ask permission of the princess Micomicona, to succour him in his distress; and, if I obtain it, be assured that I will rescue him from all danger." "Sinner that I am! cried Maritornes, who was then present, before your worship can obtain that permission, my master will be in the other world." "Allow me, madam, answered Don Quixote to go and solicit the licence I mention, which if I obtain, I shall not make much account of his being in the other world, from whence I will retrieve him, though all its inhabitants should combine to oppose me; at least, I shall take such vengeance on those who have sent him thither, as will give you full and ample satisfaction."

So saying, he went and kneeled before Dorothea, begging, in the stile and manner of knight-errantry, that her highness would be pleased to give him permission to run and assist the constable of the castle, who was, at that time, involved in a very grievous disaster. The princess having very graciously granted his request, he braced on his target, unsheathed his sword, and ran to the gate where the two guests still continued pummelling the landlord; but, as soon as he beheld them, he stopped short, as if suddenly surprized, and when Maritornes and her mistress asked what hindered him from giving assistance to their master and husband, "I am hindered, answered the knight, by a law, which will not permit me to use my sword against plebeians; but, call hither my squire Sancho, for to him it belongs, and is peculiar to engage in such vengeance or defence."

This transaction happened on the very field of battle, while kicks and cuffs were dealt with infinite dexterity, to the no small prejudice of the innkeeper's carcase, and the rage of his wife, daughter, and Maritornes, who were half-distracted at seeing the cowardice of Don Quixote, and the distress of their lord and master. But, let us here leave him awhile; for, he shall not want one to assist him; or else, let him suffer with patience, and hold his tongue as becomes those who rashly undertake adventures which they have not strength to achieve; and let us retreat backwards, about fifty yards, to see what answer Don Lewis made to the judge, whom we left inquiring the cause of his travelling on foot in such a mean habit. The youth, squeezing both his hands with great eagerness, in token of the excessive grief that wrung his heart, and shedding a flood of tears, replied to this question, "Dear sir, I can give you no other reason, but that from the first moment that fortune made us neighbours, and heaven ordained that I should see Donna Clara, your daughter and my delight, I, that instant, made her mistress of my heart; and if your inclination, my real lord and father, does not oppose my happiness, this very day she shall be my lawful wife: for her I forsook my father's house, and disguised myself in this manner, with a resolution to follow whithersoever she should go, directing my views towards her, like the arrow to its mark, and the needle to the pole; though she knows no more of my passion than what she may have understood from the tears which, at a distance, she hath often seen me shed. You yourself, my lord, know the rank and fortune of my father, whose sole heir I am: if you think that a motive sufficient for venturing to make me perfectly happy, receive me immediately as your son; and though my father, prompted, perhaps, by other views, should be disobligeed at the blessing which I have chosen

for myself, it is in the power of time to work greater changes and alterations than human prudence can foresee."

Here the enamoured youth left off speaking, and the judge remained in the utmost suspense; not only, admiring the discretion with which Don Lewis had disclosed his passion, but also finding himself perplexed about the resolution he was to take, in such a sudden and unexpected affair. He therefore made no other reply for the present, but, to desire he would make himself easy, and detain his servants a day longer, that he might have time to consider what steps it would be most proper to take, for the satisfaction of all concerned. Don Lewis kissed his hands by force, and even bathed them with his tears; a circumstance sufficient to melt an heart of marble, much more that of the judge, who, being a man of prudence, had already conceived all the advantages of such a match for his daughter; though he wished it could be effected, if possible, with the consent of the young man's father, who, he knew, had some pretensions to a title for his son.

By this time peace was re-established between the innkeeper and his two lodgers, who being persuaded by the arguments and exhortations of Don Quixote, more than by his threats, had paid their reckoning to the last farthing; and the servants of Don Lewis waited the result of the judge's advice, together with their master's resolution; when the devil, who is ever watchful, so ordered matters, that the barber should just then enter the inn; that very barber from whom Don Quixote had retrieved Mambrino's helmet, and Sancho Panza taken, by force, the furniture of his ass, which he had exchanged for his own. This individual shaver, as he led his beast to the stable, perceived Sancho employed in mending something that belonged to the pannel, and knowing him at first sight, assaulted the squire in a trice, crying, "Ha! Don thief, I have caught you at last. Restore my bason and pannel, with all the furniture you stole from me."

Sancho seeing himself so suddenly attacked, and hearing the reproachful language of his antagonist, with one hand laid fast hold on the pannel, and with the other bestowed upon the barber such a slap in the face, as bathed his whole jaws in blood. But, for all that, he would not quit the pannel which he had also seized; on the contrary, he raised his voice so high as to alarm the whole company, and bring them to the scene of contention, crying, "Justice! help in the king's name! this robber wants to murder me, because I endeavour to recover my own property." "You lie, answered the squire, I am no robber; my lord Don Quixote won these spoils fairly in battle." The knight coming up, among the rest, beheld, with infinite satisfaction, his squire so alert in offending and defend-  
ing.

ing, and looking upon him from thenceforward as a man of valour, resolved, in his heart, to have him dubbed with the first opportunity, confident that on him the order of knighthood would be very well bestowed. Among other things alledged by the barber in the course of the fray, "Gentlemen, said he, that pannel belongs as much to me as my soul belongs to God; for, I know it as well, as if it had been produced by my own body; and though I had all the mind in the world, my ass, which is now in the stable, would not suffer me to tell a falsehood: since you will not take my word, pray go and try it upon his back, and if it does not fit him to a hair, I shall give you leave to call me the greatest liar upon earth. Besides, the very same day on which they took my pannel, they also robbed me of a new brass bason never handled, that cost me a good crown\*."

Don Quixote hearing this, could contain himself no longer, but interposed between the combatants, whom he parted, and depositing the pannel on the ground, to be publickly viewed until the truth should appear, addressed himself thus, to the spectators, "Gentlemen, you may now clearly and manifestly perceive how this honest shaver errs in his judgment, by calling that a bason, which was, is, and shall be, Mambrino's helmet: a piece of armour I won in fair and open battle, and now possess by the just laws of conquest. With regard to the pannel I will not intermeddle: all that I can say of the matter, is, that my squire Sancho having asked permission to take the trappings of that coward's horse, and adorn his own with them, I gave him leave, and he took them accordingly; though I can give no other reason for their being now converted into a pannel, but, that such transformations frequently happen in the events of chivalry: yet, as a confirmation of what I say, run, friend Sancho, and bring hither the helmet, which this honest man calls a bason."

"Fore God! answered Sancho, if your worship has no better proof of our honourable doings than what you mention, Mambrino's helmet will turn out a bason, as certainly as this honest man's trappings are transmogrified into a pannel." "Do what I order, replied the knight; sure I am, every thing in this castle cannot be conducted by enchantment." Sancho went accordingly, and fetched this bason or helmet of Mambrino, as his master called it, which Don Quixote taking in his hand, said, "Behold, gentlemen, with what face this plebeian can affirm that this is a bason, and not the helmet I have mentioned: now, I swear by the order of knighthood I profess, that this is the individual helmet which I took from him, without the least addition or diminution." "Without all manner of doubt, said Sancho; for since my master won it, to this good hour he

\* Literally, "Lady of a crown."

hath used it but in one battle, when he delivered those mischievous galley-slaves; and, if it had not been for that same bason-helmet, he could not have come off so well: for, there was a deadly shower of stones rained upon his pate in that storm.

C H A P. XVIII.

The decision of the doubts concerning Mambrino's helmet and the pannel; with a full and true account of many other adventures.

“Gentlemen, said the barber, pray, favour me with your opinion, concerning what is affirm'd by these gentlefolks, who so obstinately maintain that this is not a bason but a helmet?” “And if any one affirms to the contrary, replied Don Quixote, I will make him sensible that he lies, if he be a knight; and if a plebeian, that he lies a thousand times.” His own townsman, who was present all the while, being well acquainted with the knight's humour, resolv'd to encourage him in his extravagance, and carry on the joke for the diversion of the company: with this view, he address'd himself to the other shaver, saying, “Mr. Barber, or whosoever you are, you must know that I am of the same profession: I have had a certificate of my examination these twenty years; and know very well, all the instruments of the art, without excepting one: I was moreover, a soldier in my youth, consequently can distinguish an helmet, a morrion, and a casque, with its beaver, together with every thing relating to military affairs; I mean, the different kinds of armour wore by soldiers in the field: I say, under correction, and still with submission to better judgment, that the object now in dispute, which that worthy gentleman holds in his hand, is not only no barber's bason, but also, as far from being one as black is from white, or falshood from truth. I likewise aver that tho' it is an helmet, it is not entire.” “You are certainly in the right, said Don Quixote, for it wants one half, which is the beaver.”

The curate, who by this time, understood the intention of his friend, seconded this asseveration which was also confirmed by Cardenio, Don Fernando, and his companions; and the judge himself would have bore a part in the jest, had he not been engross'd by the affair of Don Lewis; but, that earnest business kept him in such perplexity of thought, that he could give little or no attention to the joke that was going forward.

“Good God! cried the barber, with amazement, is it possible that so many honourable persons should pronounce this bason to be a helmet! an assertion sufficient to astonish a whole university, let it be never so learned. Well: if that bason be an helmet, I suppose the pannel must be

a horse's trappings too, as this gentleman says." "To me it seems a pannel, replied the knight: but, as I have already observed, I will not pretend to decide whether it be the pannel of an ass, or the furniture of a steed." "Don Quixote has no more to do but speak his opinion, said the curate; for, in affairs of chivalry, all these gentlemen, and even the ladies, yield to his superior understanding." "By heaven! gentlemen, cried the knight, so many strange accidents have happened to me, twice that I have lodged in this castle, that I will not venture positively to affirm the truth of any thing that may be asked relating to it; for, I imagine that every thing in this place is conducted by the power of enchantment. The first time I passed the night in this place, I was harrassed extremely, by an enchanted Moor that resides in the castle, while Sancho was almost as roughly handled by some of his attendants; and this very night I was suspended by one arm, for the space of two hours, without knowing how or wherefore I incurred that misfortune. For me therefore, to give my opinion in a case of such perplexity, would be a rash decision: with regard to the helmet which they say is a bason, I have already expressed my sentiments; but, dare not give a definitive sentence, by declaring, whether that be a pannel, or horse's furniture. That I leave to the judgment of the good company; who, not being knights as I am, perhaps are not subjected to the enchantments of this place, but, enjoying their faculties clear and undisturbed, can judge of these things, as they really and truly are, not as they appear to my imagination." "Doubtless, replied Don Fernando, signor Don Quixote manifests his own prudence, in observing, that to us belongs the determination of this affair, which, that it may be the better founded, I will, in private, take the opinions of this company, one by one, and then openly declare the full result of my inquiry."

To those who were acquainted with the knight's humour, this proposal afforded matter of infinite diversion; but, the rest being ignorant of the joke, looked upon it as a piece of downright madness: this was particularly the opinion of the domestics belonging to Don Lewis, which was even espoused by himself and four travellers just arrived, who seemed to be troopers of the holy brotherhood, as indeed they were; but, he that almost ran distracted, was the barber whose bason was, even in his own sight, transformed into Mambrino's helmet, while he expected every moment that his pannel would be certainly declared the rich trappings and furniture of a horse. Every body laughed to see Don Fernando going about with great gravity, collecting opinions in whispers, that each might privately declare, whether that jewel, about which there had been such obstinate disputes, was the pannel of an ass, or the furniture of a steed.

Having

Having received the answers of all those who knew Don Quixote, he pronounced aloud, "Truly, honest friend, I am quite tired with asking so many opinions; for, every one to whom I put the question, affirms it is downright distraction to call this a pannel, which is certainly the furniture of a horse, and that too of an excellent breed. Therefore you must e'en have patience; for, in spite of you and the testimony of your ass to boot, an horse's furniture it must remain, as you have failed so egregiously in the proof of what you alledge." "May I never taste the joys of heaven! cried the transported barber, if you are not all deceived; and so may my soul appear before God, as this appears to me, a meer pannel, and not the furniture of an horse! but, thus \* might overcomes—I say no more, neither am I drunk, being fresh and fasting from every thing but sin."

The company laughed as heartily at the simplicity of the barber as the extravagance of the knight, who upon this decision, said, "Nothing now remains, but that every one should take his own again; and may † St. Peter bless what God bestows." One of the four servants belonging to Don Lewis now interposed, saying, "If this be not a premeditated joke, I cannot persuade myself that people of sound understanding, such as all this company are or seem to be, should venture to say and affirm, that this is no bason, nor that a pannel; yet, seeing this is both said and affirmed, I conceive there must be some mystery in thus insisting upon a thing so contrary to truth and experience; for, by God! (an oath he swore with great emphasis) all the people on earth shall never make me believe that this is not a barber's bason, or that not the pannel of an he-ass." "Why not of a she-ass?" said the curate, "That distinction makes no difference, said the servant, nor has it any concern with the dispute, which is occasioned by your saying that it is not a pannel at all."

At the same time, one of the troopers, who had entered and been witness to the quarrel and question, could no longer contain his choler and displeasure at what he heard, and therefore said, in a furious tone, "If that is not a pannel, my father never begat me; and he that says, or shall say the contrary, must be drunk." "You lie, like an infamous scoundrel, replied Don Quixote, who lifting up his lance, which he still kept in his hand, aimed such a stroke at the trooper's skull, that if he had not been very expeditious in shifting it, he would have been stretched at full length upon the ground, on which the weapon was shivered to pieces: the rest of the troop, seeing their companion so roughly handled, raised their voices, cry-

\* The original would be more literally translated, by saying, "The law's measure is the king's pleasure."

† A bridal benediction.





C. Hayman inv. et del.

C. Grogan fecit



ing for help to the holy brotherhood: the innkeeper being of that fraternity, ran in for his tipstaff and sword, and espoused the cause of his brethren; the domestics surrounded Don Lewis, that he might not escape in the scuffle; the barber seeing the house turned topsy turvy, laid hold again of the pannel, which was at the same time seized by Sancho; Don Quixote attacked the troopers sword in hand; Don Lewis called to his servants to leave him, and go to the assistance of Cardenio and Don Fernando, who had ranged themselves on the side of Don Quixote; the curate exhorted, the landlady screamed, the daughter wept, Maritornes blubbered, Dorothea was confounded, Lucinda perplexed, and Donna Clara fainted away; the barber pummelled Sancho, who returned the compliment; one of the servants presuming to seize Don Lewis by the arm, that he might not run away, the young gentleman gave him such a slap in the face, as bathed all his teeth in blood; the judge exerted himself in his defence. Don Fernando having brought one of the troopers to the ground, kicked his whole carcase to his heart's content: the landlord raised his voice again, roaring for help to the holy brotherhood; so that the whole inn was a scene of lamentation, cries, shrieks, confusion, dread, dismay, disaster, back-strokes, cudgelling, kicks, cuffs, and effusion of blood. In the midst of this labyrinth, chaos, and composition of mischief, Don Quixote's imagination suggested, that he was all of a sudden involved in the confusion of Agramonte's camp; and therefore pronounced, with a voice that made the whole inn resound, "Let every man forbear, put up his sword, be quite and listen, unless he be weary of his life."

On hearing this exclamation, all the combatants paused, while he proceeded thus: "Did not I tell you, gentlemen, that this castle was enchanted, and doubtless, inhabited by a whole legion of devils; as a proof of which, you may now perceive, with your own eyes, how the discord and mutiny in Agramonte's camp is translated hither: behold, in one place, we fight for a sword; in another, for a horse; in a third, for an eagle; and in a fourth, for a helmet; in short, we are all by the ears together, for we know not what. Advance therefore, my lord judge, and Mr. curate, and in the persons of Agramonte and king Sobrino, re-establish peace among us; for, by Almighty God! it were wicked and absurd, that persons of our importance should be slain in such a frivolous cause."

The troopers, who did not understand the knight's stile, and found themselves very severely treated by Don Fernando, Cardenio, and their companions, would not be pacified; but, it was otherwise with the barber, who, in the scuffle, had lost both his pannel and beard: Sancho, who like a faithful servant, minded the least hint of his master, willingly obeyed; and the servants of Don Lewis were fain to be quiet, seeing how little they

had got by concerning themselves in the fray; the innkeeper alone, insisted upon their chastising the insolence of that madman, who was every moment throwing the whole house into confusion; at length, the disturbance was appeased, the pannel remained as an horse's furniture, till the day of judgment, the bafon as an helmet, and the inn as a castle, in Don Quixote's imagination.

Every thing being thus amicably composed, by the persuasion of the judge and priest, the servants of Don Lewis began again to press him, with great obstinacy, to set out with them for his father's house immediately; and while he expostulated with them, the judge consulted with Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the curate, about what he should do on this occasion; imparting to them the declaration Don Lewis had made: at last, it was agreed that Don Fernando should tell the servants who he was; and express a desire, that Don Lewis should accompany him to Andalusia, where his brother the marquis should entertain him according to his rank and merit; for, he well knew the young gentleman was fixed in the determination of being cut to pieces, rather than return to his father, at that time. The domestics being informed of Don Fernando's quality, and understanding the resolution of Don Lewis, determined amongst themselves, that three of them should return and give the father an account of what had happened, while the fourth should attend the young gentleman, until they should either come back for him, or know his father's pleasure.

In this manner was that accumulation of quarrels appeased, by the authority of Agramonte and prudence of king Sobrino; but, the enemy of concord and rival of peace, being thus foiled and disappointed, and seeing how little fruit he had reaped from the labyrinth of confusion in which he had involved them, determined to try his hand once more, and revive discord and disturbance anew; and these were the means he practised for this purpose: the troopers apprised of the quality of those with whom they had been engaged, were fain to be quiet, and retreat from the fray, concluding that whatever might happen, they would have the worst of the battle; but, one of them who had been pummelled and kicked by Don Fernando, recollected that among other warrants for apprehending delinquents, he had one against Don Quixote, issued by the holy brotherhood, on account of his having set the galley-slaves at liberty, as Sancho had very justly feared: this coming into his head, he was resolved to assure himself, whether or not the knight's person agreed with the description; and pulling out of his bosom, a bundle of parchment, he soon found what he sought, and beginning to spell with great deliberation (for, he was by no means an expert reader) between every word he fixed his eyes upon the knight, whose physiognomy he compared with the marks specified in the warrant, and discovered

covered beyond all doubt, that he was the very person described: no sooner was he thus convinced, than putting up the parchment, and holding the warrant in his left hand, he with his right seized Don Quixote so fast by the collar, that he could scarce fetch his breath, roaring aloud, "Help, in the name of the holy brotherhood; and that you may see my demand is just, read that warrant for apprehending this highwayman."

The curate, upon perusing the warrant, found what the trooper said was true, and that the description exactly agreed with the person of Don Quixote, who seeing himself so unworthily treated by such a ragamuffin, was incensed to the highest degree, so that every bone in his body trembled with rage; and he made shift to fasten on the trooper's throat with both hands, so violently, that if his companions had not come to his assistance, he would have quitted his life before the knight had quitted his hold. The innkeeper being obliged to succour his brethren, ran immediately to their assistance; his wife seeing her husband re-engaged in the quarrel, exalted her voice anew; Maritornes and the daughter sqalled in concert, imploring heaven and the by-standers for help: Sancho perceiving what passed, "By the Lord! cried he, what my master says about the enchantments of this castle is certainly true; for, it is impossible to live an hour in quiet, within its walls!"

Don Fernando parted the knight and trooper, to their mutual satisfaction; unlocking their hands, which were fast clinched in the doublet-collar of the one, and the windpipe of the other: but, for all that, they did not cease demanding their prisoner, and the assistance of the company, in binding and delivering him to their charge, agreeable to the service of the king, and the order of the holy brotherhood, in whose behalf they repeated their demand of favour and assistance, to secure that felon, robber and thief. Don Quixote smiled at hearing these epithets, and with much composure, replied, "Come hither, ye vile and base-born race! Do you call it the province of an highwayman, to loose the chains of the captive, and set the prisoner free; to succour the miserable, raise the fallen, and relieve the distressed? Ah! infamous crew! whose low and grovelling understanding renders you unworthy, that heaven should reveal to you the worth that is contained in knight-errantry, or make you sensible of your sin and ignorance, in neglecting to revere the very shadow, much more the substance of any knight. Come hither, ye rogues in a troop, and not troopers; ye robbers licensed by the holy brotherhood; and tell me what ignorant wretch he was, who signed a warrant of caption against such a knight as me? who did not know that we are exempted from all judicial authority, and that a knight's own sword is his law, he being privileged by his valour, and restricted only by his will and pleasure? Who was the blockhead, I say,

who does not know, that no gentleman's charter contains so many rights and indulgencies as adhere to a knight-errant, the very day on which he is dubbed, and devotes himself to the painful exercise of arms? What knight-errant ever paid tax, toll, custom, duty or excise? What taylor ever brought in a bill for making his cloaths? What governor ever made him pay for lodging in his castle? What king did ever neglect to seat him at his own table? What damsel ever resisted his charms, or refused to submit herself intirely to his pleasure and will? And in fine, what knight-errant ever was, is, or will be, whose single valour is not sufficient to annihilate four hundred troopers, should they presume to oppose him?"

#### C H A P. XIX.

In which is concluded the notable adventure of the troopers; with an account of the surprising ferocity of our worthy knight Don Quixote.

**W**HILE Don Quixote harranged in this manner, the curate was employed in persuading the troopers, that he was a man disordered in his judgment, as they might perceive both by his words and actions, and therefore they ought not to proceed any further in the affair; for, even if they should apprehend him, he would soon be dismissed as a person non compos. To this observation, the man who had the warrant replied, that it was not his business to judge of Don Quixot's madness, but, to obey the orders of his superiors; and that if he was apprehended once, they might discharge him three hundred times over, if they would." "For all that, said the priest, you must not carry him off, at present, nor do I believe he will suffer himself to be so treated."

In short, the curate talked so effectually, and the knight himself acted such extravagancies, that the troopers must have been more mad than he, if they had not plainly perceived his defect; therefore they thought proper to be satisfied, and even performed the office of mediators betwixt the barber and Sancho Panza, who still maintained the fray with, great animosity; for, the troopers, as limbs of justice, brought the cause to an arbitration, and decided it in such a manner, as left both parties, if not fully satisfied, at least in some sort content with the determination, which was, that the pannels should be exchanged, but the girths and halters remain as they were. With regard to Mambrino's helmet, the curate, unperceived by Don Quixote, took the barber aside, and paid him eight rials for the bason, taking a receipt in full, that cleared the knight from any suspicion of fraud, from thence forward, for ever, amen.

These

These two quarrels, which were of the greatest importance of any that happened, being luckily composed, it remained, that three of the servants belonging to Don Lewis should return, and the fourth accompany his master to the place whither Don Fernando intended to conduct him; and as good luck and favourable fortune had already begun to quell the spirit of discord, and smooth all difficulties, in behalf of the lovers and heroes in the inn, they were resolved to proceed in such a laudable work, and bring every thing to a happy conclusion; for, the domesticks were satisfied with what Don Lewis proposed; a circumstance that gave such pleasure to Donna Clara, that every body who beheld her face might have discerned the joy of her soul. Zorayda, tho' she did not well understand the incidents she had seen, was sorrowful and gay, by turns, according as she perceived the company affected, particularly her Spaniard, upon whom her eyes and heart were always fixed. The innkeeper, who took particular notice of the full satisfaction which the barber had received from the curate, demanded payment of Don Quixote, for the damage he had done to the bags, and the loss of his wine, swearing that neither Rozinante nor Sancho's ass, should stir from the stable, until he should be satisfied to the last farthing\*. The curate pacified the landlord, and Don Fernando paid the bill, altho' the judge very frankly offered to take that upon himself: in this manner, universal concord was restored; so that, the inn no longer represented the disorder in Agramonte's camp, but, rather the peace and quiet that reigned in the time of Octavius Cæsar: and this blessing was generally ascribed to the laudable intention and great eloquence of the priest, together with the incomparable generosity of Don Fernando.

Don Quixote now finding himself freed and disintangled from so many broils, in which both he and his squire had been involved, thought it high time to proceed on his journey, in order to finish that great adventure to which he had been summoned and chosen: he therefore, with determined purpose, went and fell upon his knees before Dorothea, who refusing to hear him in that posture, he rose, in obedience to her will, and expressed himself in this manner: "It is a common proverb, beauteous princess, that diligence is the mother of success; and in many important causes, experience hath shewn, that the assiduity of the solicitor hath brought a very doubtful suit to a very fortunate issue; but, the truth of this maxim is no where more evinced than in war, where activity and dispatch anticipate the designs of the enemy, and obtain the victory, before he has time to put himself in a posture of defence. This I observe, most high and excellent

\* It were to be wished, for the honour of Spanish innkeepers, that Cervantes had caused mine host to restore Sancho's waller, which he had detained on the day of the blanketing; as such restitution would have increased the general satisfaction.

princess, because, in my opinion, our stay in this castle is unprofitable and prejudicial, as we may one day perceive, when it is too late; for, who knows but, by means of secret and artful spies, your enemy, the giant, may get notice that I am coming to destroy him; and taking the opportunity of our delay, fortify himself in some impregnable castle, against which all my diligence, and the strength of my indefatigable arm, will not avail: wherefore, most noble princess, let us, as I have already observed, prevent his designs by our activity, and set out immediately, in the name of good fortune, which your highness shall not long sigh for, after I shall have come within sight of your adversary."

Here the knight left off speaking, and, with great composure, expected the answer of the beautiful infant, who, with a most princely air, and in a stile perfectly well suited to his address, replied in this manner: "I thank you, Sir knight, for the desire you express, to assist me in my necessity, like a true knight, whose duty and province it is, to succour the fatherless and distressed; and heaven grant that your desire and my expectation may be fulfilled, that you may see there are grateful women upon earth. With regard to my departure, let it be as speedy as you please: my will is altogether included in yours; dispose of me, therefore, according to your own pleasure; for, she who hath once invested you with the charge and defence of her person, and solely depends upon your valour, for being re-established on her throne, would act preposterously, in seeking to contradict what your prudence shall ordain." "In the name of God, then, cried Don Quixote, since a princess humbles herself thus, before me, I will not let slip the opportunity of raising her up, and placing her upon the throne of her ancestors: let us depart immediately; for, the desire of seeing you restored, the length of the journey, and the common reflexion, "that delays are dangerous," act as spurs upon my resolution; and since, heaven hath not created, nor hell ever seen an object that could strike me with terror and consternation, go, Sancho, saddle Rozinante, prepare the queen's palfrey, and get ready your own ass, while we take leave of the constable, and these noble personages, and set forward on our journey, without loss of time."

Here Sancho, who was present all the time, shook his head, saying, "Ah, master, master! there are more tricks in town than you dream of; with submission to the honourable lappets, be it spoken." "What tricks can there be either in town or city, that can redound to my discredit, rascal?" cried the knight. "Nay, if your worship be in a passion, replied the squire, I will keep my tongue within my teeth, and not mention a syllable of what, as a trusty squire, and faithful servant, I am bound to reveal to my master." "Say what thou wouldst, answered Don Quixote, so thy words have no tendency to make me afraid; for, in being susceptible of fear, thou shewest the



the baseness of thy own character, as I, in being proof against all sorts of terror, preserve the dignity of mine." "As I am a sinner to God, cried Sancho, that is not the case; but, this I know for truth and positive certainty, that this lady, who calls herself queen of the great kingdom Micomicon, is no more a queen than my mother; for, if she were what she pretends to be, she would not be nuzzling into a corner with one of this company, at every snatch of an opportunity."

Dorothea's face was overspread with a blush, at these words of Sancho; for, sooth to say, her husband Don Fernando had several times, as he thought, unperceived, made free with her lips, as earnest of that reward his affection deserved; and in so doing, he was observed by Sancho, who thought that such condescension in her looked more like the behaviour of a courtesan than that of such a mighty princess; so, that she neither could nor would answer one word to this charge, but, suffered him to proceed in these words: "This, dear master, I make bold to mention, because, if after we have travelled the Lord knows how far, and passed many weary days and bitter nights, he that is taking his recreation in this inn should gather the fruit of all our labour; we need not be in such a perilous hurry to saddle Rozinante, prepare the palfrey, and get ready the ass; but, had better remain in peace where we are, and as the saying is, "While we enjoy our meal let every harlot mind her spinning-wheel."

Gracious heaven! what a torrent of indignation entered the breast of Don Quixote, when he heard these indecent expressions of his squire: such, I say, was the rage that took possession of his faculties, that with a faltering voice and stammering tongue, while his eyes flashed lightning, he exclaimed, "O villainous, inconsiderate, indecent and ignorant peasant! thou foul-mouthed, unmannerly, insolent and malicious slanderer! darest thou utter such language against these honourable ladies in my presence? darest thou entertain such disgraceful and audacious ideas in thy confused imagination? Get out of my sight, monster of nature, depository of lies, cupboard of deceit, granary of knavery, inventor of mischief, publisher of folly, and foe to that respect which is due to royalty; go, nor presume to see my face again, on pain of my highest displeasure!" So saying, he pulled up his eye-brows, distended his cheeks, looked round him, and with his right foot, stamped violently upon the floor, in consequence of the wrath that preyed upon his intrails.

Sancho was so shrunk and terrified at these words and furious gestures, that he would have been glad, if the earth had opened that instant, under his feet, and swallowed him up; and not knowing what else to do, he sneaked off from the presence of his incensed master: but, the discreet Dorothea, who was so well acquainted with Don Quixote's humour, in order

to appease his indignation, accosted him thus: "Sir knight of the rueful countenance, let not your wrath be kindled by the nonsense which your good squire hath uttered; for, perhaps, he might have had some sort of reason for what he said: and as from his good understanding and christian conscience, he cannot be suspected of a design to bear false witness against any person whatever, it is to be supposed, and indeed I firmly believe, that every thing in this castle, as you, Sir knight, have observed, being conducted by means of enchantment, Sancho, thro' that diabolical medium, must have seen what he affirms, so much to the prejudice of my honour and reputation." "I swear by Almighty God! cried Don Quixote, that your highness hath hit upon the true cause! and the eyes of that poor sinner Sancho, have been fascinated by some delusive vision, of what could not possibly be real; for, unless he had been misled by enchantment, such is the innocence and simplicity of that miserable wretch, that I know he neither could nor would invent a slander against any living soul." "That certainly is, and shall be the case, said Don Fernando; for which reason, signor Don Quixote ought to pardon and restore him to the bosom of his favour, Sicut erat in principio, before those illusions impaired his understanding."

The knight promised to forgive him accordingly; upon which, the curate went in quest of Sancho, who came in with great humility, and falling on his knees, begged leave to kiss his master's hand: this favour was granted by Don Quixote, who also gave him his benediction, saying, "Thou wilt now, son Sancho, be convinced of the truth of what I have so often told thee, that all things in this castle are performed by the power of enchantment." "I believe so too, replied the squire, except in the affair of the blanketting, which really happened in the ordinary course of things." "Thou must not imagine any such thing, answered the knight; for, had that been the case, I should have revenged thy cause at the time, and even now would do thee justice; but, neither at that time, nor now, could I, or can I find, any persons to chastise as the cause of thy disaster."

The company being desirous of knowing the affair of the blanket, the landlord gave a very minute detail of Sancho's capering, to the no small diversion of all present, except the master and the squire himself, who would have been very much out of countenance, had not the knight assured him anew, that the whole was effected by enchantment: tho' the folly of Sancho never rose to such a pitch, but that he firmly believed, without the least mixture of doubt or delusion, that his blanketting had been performed by persons of flesh and blood, and not by phantoms or imaginary beings, according to the opinion and affirmation of his master.

Two days had this illustrious company already passed at the inn, from whence thinking it now high time to depart, they concerted matters in such a manner, as that, without putting Dorothea and Don Fernando to the trouble of returning with Don Quixote to the place of his habitation, in order to carry on the scheme concerning the restoration of queen Micomicona, the curate and barber were enabled to execute their design of carrying him to his own house, where endeavours might be used, for the cure of his disorder. In consequence of this plan, they agreed with the master of an ox-waggon, who chanced to pass that way, for transporting the knight in the following manner : having made a sort of wooden cage, capacious enough to hold Don Quixote at his ease, Don Fernando, with his companions, the servants of Don Lewis, together with the troopers and inn-keeper, by order and direction of the curate, covered their faces and disguised themselves, some in one shape, some in another, so as to appear, in Don Quixote's eyes, quite different from the people he had seen in the castle. Thus equipped, they entered, with all imaginable silence, into the chamber where he lay asleep and fatigued with the toil he had undergone in the skirmishes already described ; and laying fast hold on him, while he securely enjoyed his ease, without dreaming of such an accident, tied both his hands and feet so effectually, that when he waked, in surprize, he could neither move, nor do any other thing but testify his wonder and perplexity at sight of such strange faces. He then had recourse to what his distempered imagination continually suggested, and concluded that all these figures were phantomes of that enchanted castle ; and that he himself was, without all question, under the power of incantation, seeing he could not even stir, in his own defence : and this conceit was exactly foreseen by the curate, who was author of the whole contrivance. The only person of the whole company who remained unaltered, both in figure and intellect, was Sancho, who, though his lack of understanding fell very little short of his master's infirmity, was not so mad but that he knew every one of the apparitions, though he durst not open his mouth, until he should see the meaning of this assault and capture of the knight, who likewise expected, in silence, the issue of his own misfortune.

Having brought the cage into his apartment, they enclosed him in it, and fixed the bars so fast, that it was impossible to pull them asunder ; then taking it on their shoulders, in carrying it out, they were saluted by as dreadful a voice as could be assumed by the barber (I do not mean the owner of the pannel) who pronounced these words ; " O knight of the rueful countenance ! afflict not thyself on account of thy present confinement, which is necessary towards the more speedy accomplishment of that great adventure in which thy valour hath engaged thee ; and which

will be atchieved when the furious Manchegan lion is coupled with the white Tobofian dove, their lofty necks being humbled to the soft matrimonial yoke. From which unheard-of conjunction, the world shall be blessed with courageous whelps, who will imitate the tearing talons of their valiant sire; and this will happen, e'er the pursuer of the fugitive nymph shall have twice performed his visit through the resplendent constellations, in his natural and rapid course. And O! thou the most noble and obedient squire that ever wore sword in belt, beard on chin, or smell in nostril, be not dismayed nor discontented at seeing the flower of knight-errantry thus carried off before thine eyes; for, if it please the creator of this world, soon shalt thou be so exalted and sublimed, as that thou wilt not even know thyself; neither shalt thou be defrauded of the fruit of those promises which thy worthy lord has made in thy behalf; and I assure thee, in the name of the sage Fibberiana\*, that thy salary shall be faithfully paid, as in effect thou wilt see: follow, therefore, the footsteps of the valiant and enchanted knight; for, it is necessary that you should proceed together, to the end of your career; and as I am not permitted to declare myself more explicitly, I bid you heartily farewell, and will return I well know whither." Towards the end of this prophecy, he raised his voice to the highest pitch, and then sunk it gradually, to such a faint and distant tone, that even those who were privy to the joke, were tempted to believe what they had heard.

Don Quixote remained very much comforted by this prophecy, the meaning of which he no sooner heard than comprehended; interpreting the whole into a promise, that he should one day see himself joined in the just and holy bonds of matrimony with his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso, from whose fortunate womb would proceed those whelps (meaning his sons) which would perpetuate the glory of la Mancha. In this persuasion, therefore, and firm belief, he raised his voice, and heaving a profound sigh, replied, "O thou! whosoever thou art, whose prognostication sounds so favourably in mine ears, I beg thou wilt, in my name, beseech the sage inchanter who takes charge of my affairs, that he will not leave me to perish in the confinement which I now suffer, until I shall have seen the accomplishment of those joyful and incomparable promises which thou hast uttered in my behalf. So shall I glory in the hardships of this prison, and bear with pleasure, these chains with which my limbs are fettered; and instead of comparing the boards on which I lie, to the rough, uncomfortable field of battle, consider them as the soothing down of the most happy and luxurious marriage-bed. With respect to the consolation of Sancho Panza, my squire, I confide in his virtue and affection, which

\* A word of equal signification with *Mentironiana*, from *Mentiroso*, a liar.

will not allow him to forsake me either in prosperity or adversity; for, should his evil fortune, or my unhappy fate, hinder me from bestowing upon him the island, or some equivalent, according to my promise; at least, he shall not lose his wages, specified and bequeathed to him in my will that is already made; a recompence which, though proportioned to my own slender ability, comes far short of his great and faithful services."

Here the squire bowed, in the most respectful manner, and kissed both his hands, as he could not make his compliments to one of them apart, they being fast bound together. Then the apparitions taking the cage upon their shoulders, carried it to the waggon, in which it was immediately fixed.

## C H A P. XX.

An account of the strange manner in which Don Quixote was enchanted; with other remarkable events.

**D**ON Quixote seeing himself thus encaged, and placed upon a cart, could not help saying, "Many very grave histories have I read, concerning knights-errant; but, never did I read, see, or hear, that enchanted knights were transported in this manner, at such a pace as these lazy, slow-footed animals seem to promise; for, they used always to be carried through the air, with surprizing swiftness, wrapt up in some dark and dusky cloud, or in a fiery chariot, or mounted on a hypogriff, or some such creature: so that, before God! I am utterly confounded at my own fate, in being thus transported on a waggon drawn by oxen. But, perhaps the chivalry and enchantments of this age follow a different path from that which was pursued of old; and, as I am a new knight on the face of the earth, and the first who revived the long forgotten order of errantry; perhaps, they may have also newly invented other kinds of incantation, and other methods of conveying those whom they inchant. What is thy opinion of the matter, son Sancho?" "I know not what my opinion is, replied the squire, because I am not so well read in the scriptures of errantry as your worship: but, for all that, I will venture to affirm, ay and swear to it, that these apparitions who strole about us, are not altogether catholic." "Catholic! my \*stars! answered the knight, how can they be catholic, when they are all devils who have assumed fantastical shapes, and come hither on purpose to perform this deed, and leave me in my pre-

\* In the original *mi padre!* my father! which I have changed for an exclamation more frequently used in our language.

sent situation? but, that thou mayest be † convinced of the truth of what I alledge, endeavour to touch and feel them, and thou wilt perceive that they have no other bodies but forms of condensed air, consisting of nothing but meer semblance." "Fore God! sir, cried Sancho, I have made that trial already, and that same devil who goes about so busy, is well provided with good substantial flesh, and has another property widely different from what is reported of evil spirits, all of whom, they say, stink of brimstone and other bad smells; whereas, he is so well scented with amber, that you may perceive it, at the distance of half a league." "Marvel not at that circumstance, friend Sancho, replied the knight, for thou must know that devils are a set of very sagacious beings, and although they bring smells along with them, they themselves being spirits, can produce no smell; or if any odour proceeds from them, it cannot be agreeable, but rather stinking and unwholsome, because they carry their hell about them, wheresoever they are, and their torments admit of no kind of alleviation: now, sweet smells being agreeable and delicious, cannot possibly proceed from beings which are productive of nought but evil: therefore if, in thy opinion, that devil smells of amber, either thy senses are perverted, or he wants to impose upon thy understanding, by making thee believe that he is not an inhabitant of hell."

Don Fernando and Cardenio overhearing this dialogue between the master and the squire, were afraid of Sancho's stumbling upon the discovery of their whole plot, in which he seemed already to have made great progress; therefore, determined to hasten their departure, and calling the landlord aside, ordered him to saddle Rozinante, and put the pannel on Sancho's ass. This task he performed with great dispatch, while the curate agreed to give the troopers so much a day, for attending Don Quixote to the town where he lived. Cardenio having fastened the target to one side of the pommel of Rozinante's saddle, and the bason to the other, made signs for Sancho to mount his ass, and lead his master's steed by the bridle, and then stationed two of the troopers, with their carbines, on each side of the waggon. But, before it began to move, the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes, came out to take leave of Don Quixote, feigning themselves extremely affected with his misfortune; upon which he said to them, "Weep not, worthy ladies; all these disasters are incident to those who choose my profession, and if I were not subject to such calamities, I should not deem myself a renowned knight-errant; for, these things never happen to knights of little fame and reputation, who are never regarded, scarce even remembred on the face of the earth. It is quite otherwise with

† In the text, the knight is guilty of a palpable solecism, in desiring Sancho to touch and feel that which, he himself expressly observes, was subject neither to touch or feeling.

the valiant, whose virtue and valour is envied by many princes and rivals, who endeavour, by the most perfidious means to destroy them; but, nevertheless, virtue is so powerful, that of herself she will, in spite of all the negromancy possessed by the first inventor Zoroaster, come off conqueror in every severe trial, and shine refulgent in the world, as the sun shines in the heavens. Pardon me, beauteous ladies, if I have given you any disgust, through neglect or omission; for, willingly and knowingly, I never offended a living soul; and pray to God to deliver me from this prison in which I am confined by some malicious inchanter: for, if I were at liberty, the favours I have received from your courtesy, in this castle, shall never escape my remembrance, but always be acknowledged with gratitude, service and respect.”

While the knight made these professions to the ladies of the castle, the curate and barber took their leave of Don Fernando and his companions, the captain and his brother, and all the happy ladies, especially Dorothea and Lucinda: they embraced each other, and agreed to maintain a correspondence by letters, Don Fernando giving the curate a direction by which he might write to him an account of the knight's future behaviour and fate, than which, he protested, nothing could yield him more pleasure; and promising, for his own part, to inform the priest of every thing which he thought would conduce to his satisfaction, relating to his own marriage, the baptism of Zorayda, the success of Don Lewis, and the return of Lucinda to her father's house: the priest having assured him, that he would obey his commands with the utmost punctuality, they embraced again, and repeated their mutual proffers of service. The innkeeper coming to the curate, put into his hand a bundle of papers, which he said he had found in the lining of the portmantua, along with the novel of the Impertinent Curiosity; and since the owner had not returned that way, he desired the priest to accept of them; for, as he himself could not read, he had no occasion for such useless furniture: the curate thanked him for his present, which he immediately opened, and found written in the title page, *Rinconete and Cortadilla*\*, a novel: from hence he concluded, that since the *Impertinent Curiosity* was an entertaining story, this might also have some merit, as being probably a work of the same author; and on this supposition put it carefully up, intending to peruse it, with the first convenient opportunity: then he and his friend the barber mounting their beasts, with their faces still disguised, that they might not be known by Don Quixote, jogged on, behind the waggon, and the order of their march was this: first of all proceeded the cart, conducted by the driver, and guarded on each side by the troopers with their carbines, as we have already observed; then followed

\* Written by Cervantes himself.

Sancho Panza upon his ass, leading Rozinante by the bridle; and in the rear of all, came the curate and the barber masked, and mounted on their trusty mules, with a grave and solemn air, marching no faster than the slow pace of the oxen would allow; while the knight sat within his cage, leaning against the bars, with such silence and resignation, that he looked more like a statue of stone than a man of flesh and blood: in this slow and silent manner they had travelled about a couple of leagues, when they arrived in a valley, which the waggoner thinking a convenient spot for his purpose, proposed to the curate, that they should halt to refresh themselves, and let the oxen feed; but, the barber was of opinion, that they should proceed a little farther to the other side of a rising-ground, which appeared at a small distance, where he knew there was another valley better stored with grass, and much more agreeable than this in which the waggoner proposed to halt. The advice of Mr. Nicolas was approved, and they jogged on accordingly.

About this time, the curate chancing to look back, perceived behind them, six or seven men well mounted, who soon overtook them, as they did not travel at the phlegmatic pace of the oxen, but, like people who rode on ecclesiastic mules, and were desirous of spending the heat of the day at an inn that appeared within less than a league of the waggon: these expeditious strangers coming up with our slow travellers, saluted them courteously, and one among them, who was actually a canon of Toledo, and master of those who accompanied him, observing the regular procession of the waggon, troopers, Sancho, Rozinante, the curate and barber, and in particular, Don Quixote encaged and secured as he was, could not help asking why, and whither they were conveying that man in such a manner? tho' he had already conjectured, from the badges of the troopers, that he must be some atrocious rober or delinquent, the punishment of whom belonged to the holy brotherhood. One of the troopers, to whom the question was put, answered, "Signor, the gentleman himself will tell you the meaning of his travelling in this manner; for our parts, we know nothing at all of the matter." The knight overhearing what passed, said to the strangers, "Gentlemen, if you are skilled and conversant in matters of knight-errantry, I will communicate my misfortune; otherwise there is no reason why I should fatigue myself with the relation."

By this time, the curate and barber having perceived the travellers in conversation with the knight, came up, in order to prevent their plot from being discovered, just as the canon had begun to answer Don Quixote in these words: "Truly, brother, I am better acquainted with books of chivalry than with the summaries of Villalpando; so that, if there be nothing else requisite, you may freely impart to me as much as you please."

God's



God's name then, said Don Quixote, if that be the case, you must know, signor cavalier, that I am enchanted in this cage, thro' the envy and fraud of mischievous negromancers; for, virtue is always more persecuted by the wicked than beloved by the righteous: a knight-errant I am, tho' none of those whose names fame never enrolled in her eternal records; but, of that number, whom maugre, and in despite of Envy herself, and all the magi whom Persia ever produced, with the brachmans of India, and gymnosophists of Æthiopia, will leave their names engraved on the temple of immortality, as examples and patterns to succeeding ages, by which all knights-errant may see what steps they must follow, if they wish to attain the height and honourable summit of arms."

Here the curate interposing, said, "Signor Don Quixote speaks no more than the truth; he is enchanted in that waggon, not on account of his own crimes or misdemeanours, but thro' the malice of those who are disgusted at virtue, and offended at valour: this, signor, is the knight of the rueful countenance, whose name perhaps you have heard, and whose valiant exploits, and mighty achievements, will be engraved on durable brass, and carved in eternal marble, in spite of the unwearied efforts of malice to cancel, and of envy to obscure them."

The canon hearing such a stile proceed, not only from the prisoner's mouth, but also from the lips of him who was free, had well nigh crossed himself with astonishment, and could not conceive what had befallen him, while his whole company were seized with the same degree of amazement: but, Sancho Panza, who was near enough to hear what passed, being willing to undeceive the strangers, said to them, "Gentlemen, whether what I am going to say, be ill or well taken, I must tell you the case is this: my master Don Quixote is no more enchanted than the mother that bore me; he enjoys his right wits, eats, drinks, and does his occasions, like other men, and as he himself was wont to do, before he was encaged: now, if this be the truth of the matter, how can any man persuade me that he is enchanted? since I have heard divers persons observe, that those who are enchanted, neither eat, sleep, nor speak; whereas, my master, if he is not hindered, will talk like thirty barristers." Then turning to the curate, he proceeded thus: "Ah Mr. curate, Mr. curate! you think I don't know you, and imagine that I cannot dive into the meaning of these new enchantments; but, you are mistaken: I know you very well, for all your masking, and can smell out your plots, disguise them as you will; in short, as the saying is, Just are virtue's fears, where envy domineers; and bounty will not stay, where niggards bear the sway. Damn the devil, if it had not been for your reverence, my master, by this time, would have been married to the princess Micomicona, and.

and I should have been an earl, at least; for, less I could not expect, either from the generosity of my lord of the rueful countenance, or from the greatness of my own services: but, now I see the truth of what is commonly said, that fortune turns faster than a mill-wheel; and that those who were yesterday at top, may find themselves at bottom to day. It grieves me, on account of my poor wife and children, who, instead of seeing their father come home, in the post of governor or viceroy of some island or kingdom, as they had great reason to expect, will behold him returning in the station of a common groom: all this I have observed, Mr. curate, for no other reason, but to prevail upon your fathership, to make a conscience of the ill treatment my master receives at your hands; and consider that God may call you to account in the next world, for this captivity of my lord Don Quixote, and for all the succours and benefits that are prevented by his being thus confined."

"Snuff me these candles, (cried the barber, hearing the squire's declaration) why, sure Sancho you belong to your master's fraternity; by the Lord! I find you ought to keep him company in his cage, and undergo the same sort of enchantment, so much are you infected with the humour of his chivalry: in an unhappy moment were you got with child by his promises, and in an evil hour did that island you harp so much upon, take possession of your skull." "I am not with child by any person whatever, answered Sancho, nor will I suffer any king in Christendom to beget a child upon my body; for, tho' I be a poor man, I'm an old christian, and owe no man a farthing: if I long for an island, others long for things that are worse, every one being the son of his own works: the lowest mortal may come to be pope, much more governor of an island, especially as my master may gain more than he knows well what do with. Mr. barber, you had better think before you speak: there is something else to do than shaving of beards; and \* one Pedro may differ from another: this I say, because we know one another; and you must not think to palm false dice upon me: with regard to the enchantment of my master, God knows the truth, and there let it lie; for, as the saying is, the more you stir it, the more it will—you know what." The barber durst not make any reply, lest Sancho's simplicity should discover what he and the curate were so desirous of concealing; and the priest being under the same apprehension, desired the canon to ride on with him, a little before the waggon, promising to disclose the mystery of the encaged knight, with other particulars that would yield him some diversion: the canon put on accordingly, with his servants, listening attentively to every thing the curate was pleased to

\* Equivalent to our saying, "Every jack is not a good-fellow."

communicate, concerning the rank, employment, madness, and manners of Don Quixote; for, he briefly recounted the cause and beginning of his disorder, with the whole progress of his adventures, until he was secured in the cage, by their contrivance, that they might carry him home to his own house, and endeavour to find some cure for his distemper.

The canon and his servants were astonished anew, at hearing the strange story of Don Quixote, which being finished, the Toledan replied, "Truly, Mr. curate, I am firmly persuaded that those books of chivalry are very prejudicial in the commonwealth; for, though I have been induced by a false taste and idle curiosity, to read the beginning of almost every one that hath been printed, I never could prevail upon myself to read any one of them from the first to the last page; because, in my opinion, they are all of the same stamp, without any essential difference; and indeed that kind of composition seems inferior to the Milesian fables, which are no other than extravagant tales calculated for meer amusement, without any tendency to instruction: on the contrary, the scope of your apologues, is to convey instruction and delight together. Now, though the principal intention of those books is to delight and entertain the reader, I do not see how they can answer that end, being, as they are, stuffed with such improbable nonsense: for, the pleasure that the soul conceives, is from the beauty and harmony of those things which are contemplated by the view, or suggested by the imagination; so, that we can receive no pleasure from objects that are unnatural and deformed. And what beauty, symmetry or proportion can be observed in a book, containing the history of a youth of seventeen, who, with one back-stroke, cuts through the middle a giant like a tower, with as much ease as if he had been made of paste; and in the description of a battle, after having observed, that there are no less than a million of combatants on the side opposite to that which our author espouses, we must, in despite of common sense, believe, that such a knight obtained the victory, by the single valour of his invincible arm. Then, how shall we account for the confidence with which some queen, empress, or orphan heiress, throws herself into the protection of an unknown knight-errant? What mind, if not wholly barbarous and uncultivated, can be pleased with an account of a huge tower full of knights, sailing upon the sea, like a ship before the wind; being over-night, upon the coast of Lombardy, and next morning arrived in the dominions of Prester John, in the Indies, or in some other country which Ptolemy never discovered, nor Marcus Polus ever saw? If to this observation, it be answered, that the authors of those books do not pretend that the stories they contain, are true; and therefore, they are under no necessity of adhering to such niceties of composition: I reply, that fiction is always the better, the

nearer it resembles truth, and agreeable in proportion to the probability it bears, and the doubtful credit which it inspires. Wherefore, all such fables ought to be suited to the understanding of those who read them, and written so, as that by softening impossibilities, smoothing what is rough, and keeping the mind in suspense, they may surprize, agreeably perplex, and entertain, creating equal admiration and delight; and these never can be excited by authors who forsake probability and imitation, in which the perfection of writing consists. I have never as yet seen, in any book of chivalry, an intire body of a fable, with all its members so proportioned, as that the middle corresponds with the beginning, and the end is suitable to both; on the contrary, one would think the author's intention is commonly to form a chimera or monster, instead of a figure well proportioned in all its parts. Besides, their stile is usually harsh, their achievements incredible, their amours lascivious, their courtesy impertinent, their battles tedious, their dialogue insipid, their voyages extravagant, and, in short, the whole void of all ingenuity of invention; so that they deserve to be banished as useles members from every christian commonwealth."

The curate, who had listened with great attention, hearing the canon talk so sensibly, looked upon him as a man of excellent understanding, and assented to every thing he said, observing that, in consequence of his being of the same opinion, and of the grudge he bore to such books of chivalry, he had burned a great number of those that belonged to Don Quixote. He then gave him a detail of the scrutiny which had been made, distinguishing such as he spared, from those that he condemned to the flames.

The traveller laughed heartily at this account of such an extraordinary trial, saying, that notwithstanding what he had advanced to the disadvantage of such books, there was one thing in them which he could not but approve; namely, the subject they presented for a good genius to display itself, opening a large and ample field in which the pen might, at leisure, expatiate, in the description of shipwrecks, tempests, battles and encounters; painting a valiant general with all his necessary accomplishments, sage and penetrating into the enemy's designs; eloquent and effectual, either in persuading or dissuading his soldiers, ripe in council, prompt in execution, and equally brave in standing or in giving an assault. One while, recounting a piteous, tragical story; at another time, describing a joyful and unexpected event; here, a most beautiful lady endued with virtue, discretion and reserve; there, a christian knight possessed of courtesy and valour; in a third place, an outrageous boasting barbarian; and in a fourth, a polite, considerate gallant prince; not forgetting to describe the faith and loyalty of vassals, together with the grandeur and generosity of great men. The author may also shew himself an astrologer, geographer, musician,

cian, and well skilled in state-affairs; nay, if he be so minded, he will sometimes have an opportunity of manifesting his skill in negromancy and magic: he may represent the cunning of Ulysses, the piety of Æneas, the valour of Achilles, the misfortunes of Hector, the perfidy of Sinon, the friendship of Euryalus, the liberality of Alexander, the ability of Cæsar, the clemency and candour of Trajan, the fidelity of Zopyrus, the wisdom of Cato, and finally, all those qualifications which constitute the perfection of an illustrious hero; sometimes, uniting them in one, sometimes dividing them into several characters; and the whole being expressed in an agreeable style and ingenious invention, that borders as near as possible, upon the truth, will, doubtless, produce a web of such various and beautiful texture, as when finished, to display that perfection which will attain the chief end and scope of such writings, which, as I have already observed, is to convey instruction mingled with delight. Besides, the unlimited composition of such books gives the author opportunities of shewing his talents in epics, lyrics, tragedy and comedy, and all the different branches of the delicious and agreeable arts of poetry and rhetoric: for, epics may be written in prose as well as verse."

## C H A P. XXI.

In which the canon prosecutes the subject of knight-errantry, and makes other observations worthy of his genius.

"**M**R. canon, said the curate, what you have observed, is extremely just; and therefore those authors deserve the greater reprehension, who have composed such books, without the least regard to good sense or the rules of art, by which they might have conducted their plans, and rendered themselves as famous in prose as the two princes of Greek and Latin poetry are now in verse." "I, myself, replied the canon, have been tempted to write a book of chivalry, observing all the maxims and precautions I have now laid down: nay, to tell you the truth, no less than an hundred sheets of it are already written; and, in order to try if my own opinion of it was well founded, I have communicated my performance to a great many people, who are passionately fond of that kind of reading, not only, men of learning and taste, but also ignorant persons, who chiefly delight in extravagant adventures; and I have been favoured with the agreeable approbation of them all: nevertheless, I have not proceeded in the work; because, I not only thought it foreign to my profession, but, likewise concluded, that the world abounds much more with

fools than people of sense ; and though an author had better be applauded by the few that are wise, than laughed at by the many that are foolish, I was unwilling to expose myself to the uninformed judgment of the arrogant vulgar, whose province it principally is, to read books of this kind : but, what contributed most, to my laying aside the pen, and indeed all thoughts of bringing the work to a conclusion, was, a reflection I made upon the comedies of the present age. If, said I to myself, our modern plays, not only those which are formed upon fiction, but likewise such as are founded on the truth of history, are all, or for the greatest part, universally known to be monstrous productions, without either head or tail, and yet received with pleasure by the multitude, who approve and esteem them as excellent performances, though they are far from deserving that title ; and if the authors who compose, and the actors who represent them, affirm, that this and no other method is to be practised, because the multitude must be pleased ; that those which bear the marks of contrivance, and produce a fable digested according to the rules of art, serve only for entertainment to four or five people of taste, who discern the beauties of the plan, which utterly escape all the rest of the audience ; and that it is better for them to gain a comfortable livelihood by the many, than starve upon reputation with the few ; at this rate, said I, if I should finish my book, after having scorched every hair in my whiskers, in poring over it, to preserve those rules and precepts already mentioned, I might fare at last, like the \* sagacious botcher, who sewed for nothing, and found his customers in thread. I have sometimes endeavoured to persuade the players, that they were mistaken in their maxims ; and that they would bring more company to their house, and acquire much more reputation, by representing regular comedies, than such absurd performances ; but, I always found them so obstinately bigotted to their own fancies, that no evidence or demonstration could alter their opinion in the least. I remember, I once said to one of those pragmatic fellows, Don't you recollect, that a few years ago, three tragedies were acted, composed by a celebrated poet of this kingdom ; and that they raised admiration, pleasure and surprize, in all who saw them exhibited, gentle as well as simple, ignorant as well as learned, and brought more money to the actors than thirty of the best that have since appeared ? Doubtless, answered the player, you mean, Isabella, Phillis, and Alexandria ?" The very same, said I ; and pray take notice, whether or not they are composed according to rule, or failed to please every body, because they were regular ? Wherefore, the fault does not lie in the multitude's demanding absurdities, but, in those who can represent nothing else ; for, there is nothing absurd in the play

\* A Spanish proverb, applicable to a great many modern projectors and reformers.

of Ingratitude Revenged, nor in Numantia, the Merchant Lover, the Favourable female Foe, nor in some others which were composed by poets of genius, to their own reputation, and the advantage of those who represented them. I made use of many more arguments, by which he seemed to be confuted, though not so much satisfied or convinced, as to retract his erroneous opinions."

" Mr. canon, said the curate, interrupting him in this place, the subject you have touched upon awakes in me an old grudge I have bore to our modern plays, even equal to that I entertain against books of chivalry. Comedy, according to Tully, ought to be the mirror of life, the exemplar of manners, and picture of truth; whereas those that are represented in this age, are mirrors of absurdity, exemplars of folly, and pictures of lewdness; for, sure nothing can be more absurd, in a dramatic performance, than to see the person, who in the first scene of the first act, was produced a child in swaddling-cloaths, appear a full grown man with a beard, in the second; or to represent an old man active and valiant, a young soldier cowardly, a footman eloquent, a page a counsellor, a king a porter, and a princess a scullion. Then, what shall we say concerning their management of the time and place, in which the actions have, or may be supposed to have, happened? I have seen a comedy, the first act of which was laid in Europe, the second in Asia, and the third was finished in Africa; nay had there been a fourth, the scene would have shifted to America, so that the fable would have travelled through all the four divisions of the globe. If imitation be the chief aim of comedy, how can any ordinary understanding be satisfied with seeing an action that passed in the time of king Pepin and Charlemagne, in which the latter had the principal share, ascribed to the emperor Heraclius, who, like Godfrey of Bulloign, carried the cross into Jerusalem, and made himself master of the holy sepulchre; an infinite number of years having passed between the one and the other. Or, when a comedy is founded upon fiction, to see scraps of real history introduced, and facts misrepresented both with regard to persons and times; not with any ingenuity of contrivance, but with the most manifest and inexcusable errors and stupidity: and what is worst of all, there is a set of ignorant pretenders, who call this the perfection of writing; and that every attempt to succeed by a contrary method is no other than a wild-goose chase\*. Again, if we consider those plays that are written on divine subjects, how many false miracles do they contain? how many apocryphal events misunderstood by the author, who frequently confounds the operations of one saint with those of another? nay, in prophane subjects, they have the assurance to work miracles, for

\* *Buscar Gallerias*, signifies to seek dainties.

no other respect or consideration, but because they think such a miracle will make a very decent appearance in such a place; and, as they term it, attract the admiration of the vulgar, and bring them in crouds to the play: but, all this redounds to the prejudice of truth, the contempt of history, and scandal of our Spanish wits; so that the authors of other nations, who punctually observe the unities of the drama, conclude, that we are barbarous and ignorant, from our absurd and preposterous productions. Neither is it a sufficient excuse, to say, that the intent of all well-governed commonwealths, in permitting public plays to be acted, is to entertain the common people with some honest recreation, in order to divert those bad humours which idleness usually engenders; and that, since this end is answered by any play whatever, either good or bad, there is no occasion to cramp and limit the authors or actors to the just laws of composition; the purpose of the legislature being, as I have said, accomplished without any such restriction. To this suggestion, I answer, that the same end, without any sort of comparison, will be much better answered by good than bad comedies; for, after having seen an artful and well-digested play represented, the hearer will go away, delighted with the comic parts, instructed by the serious, and agreeably surprized with the incidents; collecting information from the dialogue, precaution from the deceits of the fable, experience from the examples exhibited, affection for virtue, and indignation for vice. All these sensations, I say, will a good comedy excite in the spectator's mind, let it be never so stupid and uncultivated; for, of all impossibilities, it is the most impossible, that a comedy, thus perfect in all its parts, should not yield more entertainment, satisfaction, and delight, than one that is defective in each particular, as the greatest part of our modern pieces are. Neither is this want of correctness always to be laid to the author's charge; for, there are some poets among us who are perfectly well acquainted with the rules of writing, and could easily avoid any such errors of composition; but as their pieces are made for sale, they say, it is very true, that the players would not purchase them, if they were of any other stamp: so that the author is fain to accommodate himself to the demand of the actor who pays him for his work. The truth of this observation evidently appears in a great number of comedies, which have been composed by a most happy genius of these \* kingdoms, with so much wit, pleasantry, elegance of versification, genteel dialogue, sententious gravity, and finally, with such elocution and sublimity of stile, that the whole world resounds with his fame: yet, in suiting himself to the false taste of the actors, he hath not been able to bring them all to the requisite point of perfection. Others again, are so inconsiderate in

\* Lopez de Vega Carpio.

their



their productions, that after representation, the players have been frequently obliged to fly, and abscond, for fear of chastisement, on account of having exhibited something to the prejudice of royal heads, or dishonour of noble families: now, all these inconveniencies, with many more that I do not choose to mention, might be prevented, if there was at court, some person of taste and learning, appointed to examine every dramatic performance before its appearance on the stage; and this precaution should affect not only the plays composed in Madrid, but, all pieces whatever to be represented within the monarchy of Spain; for, without the approbation of this licenser, signed and sealed, no magistrates should allow any production to be acted within the bounds of his jurisdiction. In consequence of this expedient, the actors would take care to submit every play to the censure of the examiner, that they might afterwards represent them with safety; and the authors would employ more caution and study in their compositions, knowing that they must pass the rigorous examination of an intelligent judge: in this manner, good comedies would be produced, and the aim of such writings happily accomplished, to the entertainment of the people, and the credit of Spanish wits; while the actors would represent them with security and advantage, and the state be exempted from the trouble of chastising such delinquents. And if the same licenser, or any other person, were invested with the charge of examining books of chivalry, before they see the light, some performances of that sort would certainly appear in all the perfection you have described, enriching our language with the delightful and precious treasure of eloquence; while the old romances would be entirely eclipsed by the light of the new, that would furnish rational amusement not only for the idle, but also for those who are most industrious; seeing, it is impossible for the bow to continue always bent, or that feeble nature can subsist, without some innocent recreation."

Thus far had the canon and curate proceeded in their conversation, when the barber coming up to them, said to his townsman, "Mr. Licentiate, this is the place in which I proposed to halt, that the oxen might have fresh pasture in abundance." The curate approved of the hint, and communicated their intention to the canon, who resolved to stay with them, being invited by the situation of a delicious valley that presented itself to his view; that he might, therefore, enjoy the agreeable spot, together with the conversation of the curate, for whom he had already conceived an affection, and be more particularly informed of Don Quixote's exploits, he ordered his domestics to proceed to an inn, which was not far off, and bring from thence victuals sufficient for the whole company; for he was resolved to spend the afternoon where he was. One of the  
servants.

fervants told him that the sumpter-mule, which by that time had reached the inn, carried provision enough, and that they should want nothing but barley for the beasts. "If that be the case, said the canon, carry the rest to the inn, and bring the sumpter-mule hither."

Mean while, Sancho perceiving that he might now speak to his master, without being overheard by the curate and barber, of whom he was suspicious, approached the cage, and thus addressed himself to the knight: "Truly, Sir, in order to disburthen my conscience, I must tell you something concerning this same enchantment. These people, with masks on their faces, are no other than the curate and barber of our town, who, I verily believe, have contrived to carry you off, in this manner, out of pure envy and spite, because your worship has got the heels of them in your famous atchievements: now, this being supposed, it follows, as plain as the nose upon my face, that you are not enchanted, but rather fooled and bamboozled. As a proof of which, I desire to ask you one question, which if you answer, as I do believe you will, your worship may clap your ten fingers on the trick, and perceive that you are not enchanted, but that your whole brain is turned topsy-turvy." "Ask what you will, son Sancho, replied Don Quixote, I will freely answer, and satisfy your doubts to the best of my power: with regard to your saying, that those who attend us, are our friends and townsmen the curate and barber, so, indeed, they may appear to your eye; but, that they are really and effectually so, you must, by no means, believe; on the contrary, you are to conclude, that if they resemble our friends, the enchanters, who can assume what form they please, have taken that appearance and resemblance, to mislead your credit, and bewilder your imagination in such a labyrinth of perplexity, that even the clue of Theseus would not extricate your thoughts: besides, they may have done it with a view of confounding my judgment, that I might not be able to guess from what quarter my misfortune proceeds; for, if on one hand, you affirm, that I am attended by the barber and curate of our town; and on the other, I find myself encaged, though I am sensible, that nothing but supernatural force could suffice to confine me thus, what would you have me say or think, but, that the manner of my enchantment exceeds every thing I have read in all the histories that treat of enchanted knights? Wherefore, set your heart at rest, and take it for granted, that these are as far from being the persons you have mentioned as I am from being a Turk. With respect to thy desire of asking me questions, I repeat my promise of answering, even if thy interrogation should last till to-morrow morning." "God's blessed mother! cried the squire with great vociferation, is it possible that your worship can be so thick-skulled and brainless, as not to perceive the truth

of

of what I alledge, and see that this imprisonment and misfortune is more owing to malice than enchantment? But, seeing it is so, I will venture to prove, beyond all contradiction, that you are no more enchanted than my afs: tell me, therefore, as God shall deliver you from this mischance, and as you hope to see yourself in the arms of my lady Dulcinea, when you least expect any such good luck—.” “Truce with thy conjuration, said the knight, and ask what thou wilt; I have already promised to answer with the utmost punctuality.” “That is my request, answered Sancho; and what I want to know, is, that your worship will tell me, without eking or curtail- ing God’s precious truth, but, in honest simplicity of heart, as one may, and doth expect from those who, like your worship, profess the occupation of arms, under the title of knights-errant—.” “I tell thee, cried the knight, in- terrupting him, I will not in the least prevaricate: dispatch then, Sancho, for, truly, I am quite tired with so many salvos, sollicitations and preambles.” “I make so bold, replied the squire, because I am well aware of my ma- ster’s goodness and sincerity, which being as it were to the purpose, I ask, (with reverence be it spoken) whether or not, since you have been confined, and as you suppose, enchanted in this cage, your worship hath felt any motion or desire to undam either way, as the saying is?” “I do not know what you mean by undamming, answered Don Quixote; you must be more explicit, Sancho, if you expect an answer to the purpose.” “Is it possible, said the squire, that your worship should be ignorant of the meaning of the word undamming, which is the first thing the boys learn at school? Well then, you must know, I wanted to ask if you never had any inclina- tion to do that which no body else can do for you.” “Now I understand thee, Sancho, said the knight; verily, I have had divers calls of that na- ture, one of which is at present very importunate: pray, fall upon some method to disembarrafs me; for, I believe all is not so sweet and clean as it ought to be.”

## C H A P. XXII.

The sage conversation that passed between Sancho Panza and his master Don Quixote.

“**H**A! cried Sancho, have I caught you at last? this is what I wanted to know, with all my heart and soul; come on, sir, there is no denying of what is commonly said, when any person is in the dumps, I know not what is the matter with such an one; he neither eats, drinks, nor sleeps, nor answers to the purpose, when he is spoke to; sure the man must be enchanted: from whence we are to conclude, that those who are enchanted neither eat, drink, sleep, nor do their natural occasions, as I have observed; but, this is not the case with such as are disturbed with the inclination that your worship at present feels, drinking when they can get liquor, eating when they can lay hold on food, and giving plain answers to every question that is asked.” “Thou art in the right, replied Don Quixote: but, I have already told thee, that there are different kinds of enchantment; and time may have so intirely altered the fashion, that those who are under the power of enchantment in this age may, like me, retain the use of their faculties, tho’ it was quite otherwise of old; so, that there is no arguing or drawing consequences, against the different practice of different times. I am sensible and certain of my being enchanted; and that is sufficient for the quiet of my conscience, which would give me great uneasiness, if I had the least doubt about my fate, and allowed myself to be in this cage, like an idle coward, deceitfully withholding my succour from a great number of the needy and oppressed, who, at this very hour, must be in the most absolute and extreme necessity, from the want of my aid and protection.” “Nevertheless, answered the squire, for your more abundant satisfaction, your worship, methinks, might try to escape from this prison; for my own part, I’ll be bound not only to give my assistance, but even to work your deliverance, and then you may endeavour to remount your trusty Rozinante, who trudges along as melancholy and sad as if he was enchanted also. This being performed, let us try our fate once more, in quest of adventures; and if they do not turn out to our expectation, it will be time enough to return to the cage, in which, I promise, on the faith of a true and loyal squire, to shut myself up with your worship, if perchance, thro’ your ill fortune or my folly, this that I mention, should not succeed.” “I am content to follow thy counsel, brother Sancho, replied the knight, and whenever thou shalt perceive a proper conjuncture for effecting my deliverance, I will implicitly obey thee in every thing;

thing; but, thou wilt soon find thyself deceived in thy opinion of my mis-hap."

This conversation between the knight-errant and the erring squire, lasted until they arrived at the place in which the curate, canon and barber, who had already alighted, waited for them. The waggoner immediately unyoking his oxen, turned them loose in that verdant and delicious spot, the coolness of which was extremely inviting, not only to enchanted people, like Don Quixote, but also to persons of intelligence and discretion, like his squire, who besought the curate to let his master come out of the cage, for a few minutes; because, without such permission, the prison would not be quite so clean as the decency of such a knight required. The curate understanding what he meant, told him that he would willingly grant his request, were he not under some apprehension, that his master, finding himself at liberty, would play one of his old pranks, and be gone where men should never see his face again. "I will be bound for his good behaviour," answered Sancho: "And I also, said the canon, especially, if he will promise, on the word of a knight, not to stir from our presence, until he shall have obtained our consent.

"I will: (cried the knight, who overheard all that passed) the more so, as one who, like me, is enchanted, cannot be at liberty to make use of his own person; for, the enchanter can so utterly deprive him of all motion, that he shall not be able to stir from the place, for three whole ages; and if he should make his escape, would whisk him back thro' the air, in a twinkling." This being the case, he said, they might very safely un-cage him, especially as such indulgence would redound to the benefit of the whole company; for, he protested, that if they did not comply with his present necessities, he should be obliged to incommode their sense of smelling, unless they removed to a greater distance, from the place of his confinement.

The canon, confiding in his word and honour, took him by the hands, tied as they were, and helped him to descend from his cage: then the knight being infinitely rejoiced at his momentary deliverance, stretched every joint in his body, and going up to Rozinante, gave him a slap on the buttocks, saying, "I still hope in God and his blessed mother, thou flower and mirror of steeds! that in a short time, we shall both obtain our heart's desire; thou prancing under the agreeable pressure of thy lord, and I mounted upon thy trusty back, exercising the employment for which heaven sent me into the world." Having pronounced this apostrophe, he retired with Sancho to a remote place, from whence he returned much eased and comforted, and more desirous than ever of executing the project of his squire. The canon could not help gazing upon him, being struck with admiration, at the

ſtrange unaccountable ſymptoms of his diſorder; for, in all his converſation and replies, he gave evident proofs of an excellent underſtanding, and never loſt himſelf \*, except on the ſubject of chivalry, as we have formerly obſerved: he was therefore touched with compaſſion for his infirmity, and when the whole company were ſeated on the graſs, waiting for the return of the ſumpter-mule, addreſſed himſelf to the knight in this manner:

“ Is it poſſible, good ſir, that the idle and unlucky reading of books of chivalry, can have ſo far impaired your judgment, as that you ſhould now believe yourſelf enchanted, and give credit to other illuſions of the ſame kind, which are as far from being true as truth is diſtant from falſehood? Is it poſſible that the human underſtanding can ſuppoſe that ever this world produced that infinite number of Amadiſes, with the whole crowd of famous knights, ſo many emperors of Trebiſond, Fleximartes of Hyrcania, palſreys, damſels, ſerpents, dragons, and giants; ſo many incredible adventures, enchantments of different kinds, battles, dreadful encounters, magnificence of apparel, enamoured princeſſes, ſquires created earls, witty dwarfs, billets, amorous expreſſions, valiant ladies, and finally, ſuch extravagant events as are contained in books of knight-errantry? For my own part, when I read a performance of that ſort, without reflecting that it is a legend of vanity and lies, my imagination is a little amuſed, but, as ſoon as I begin to conſider it in the right point of view, I daſh the volume againſt the wall, and would even commit it to the flames, (if I ſhould chance to be near a fire) as a criminal richly deſerving ſuch puniſhment, on account of its falſehood and impoſture, ſo contrary to nature, and bewildered from the tract of common ſenſe; and as an inventor of new ſects and prepoſterous ways of life; miſleading and inducing the ignorant vulgar to believe the abſurdities which it contains: nay, ſo preſumptuous are ſuch productions as to diſturb the minds of gentlemen of birth and education, as may be too plainly perceived by their effects upon you, ſignor, whom they have reduced to ſuch a paſs, as to make it neceſſary that you ſhould be cooped up in a cage, and transported from place to place, on a waggon, like a lion or tyger, exhibited as a ſhew, for money. Go to, ſignor Don Quixote, have pity upon yourſelf, return into the boſom of diſcretion, and put thoſe happy talents which heaven hath been pleaſed to beſtow upon you, to a better uſe; employing your genius in other ſtudies, which may redound to the increaſe of your honour, as well as to the good of your ſoul; or, if ſwayed by your natural inclination, you are ſtill deſirous of reading the hiſtories of exploits and atchievements, you may have recourſe to the book of Judges, in the holy ſcripture; and there you will find real miracles of might, and actions

\* Literally, Never loſt the ſtirrups.

equally valiant and true. Portugal produced a Viriatus, Rome a Cæsar, Carthage an Hannibal, Greece an Alexander, Castile a count Fernan Gonçales, Valencia a Cid, Andalusia a Gonzalo Fernandez, Estremadura a Diego Garcia de Paredes, Xerez a Garcia Perez de Vargas, Toledo a Garcilasso, Sevil a Don Manuel de Leon; the history of their valiant exploits will afford entertainment, instruction, surprize and delight, to readers of the most sublime conception. Such study as this would be worthy of the good sense of signor Don Quixote, who would thus become learned in history, enamoured of virtue, improved in worth, bettered in morals, brave without rashness, cautious without cowardice; while the whole would redound to the honour of God, his own particular emolument, and the renown of La Mancha, from whence I understand his family and origin is derived."

Don Quixote listened with infinite attention to this harrangue; and even after he perceived it was finished, looked stedfastly at the canon for some time, before he answered in these words: "Signor Hidalgo, if I am not mistaken, the scope of your discourse was to convince me that there never were knights-errant in this world; that all the books of chivalry are false, deceitful, unprofitable, nay, mischievous in a commonwealth; that I have been much to blame in reading, more so in believing, and most of all in imitating the characters they describe, by following the most painful profession of knight-errantry; and lastly, you deny that ever there was an Amadis, either of Gaul or Greece, or that any one of that vast number of knights recorded in those writings had any real existence." "You have exactly summed up my allegations," said the canon. "You were likewise pleased to add, resumed the knight, that such books had done me infinite prejudice, impaired my judgment, and reduced me to the necessity of being confined in a cage; and that I would do well to amend and alter my course of studies, and to use performances which contain more truth, instruction, and delight." "That, said the canon, was my precise meaning." "Why, then, cried Don Quixote, in my opinion, the person impaired in his judgment, and enchanted, is no other than your worship, who have presumed to utter such blasphemies against an order so well received in the world, and established as truth, that he who like you denies it, deserves the same punishment you inflicted upon those books that gave you disgust; for, to say that there never was such a person as Amadis, or any other of those adventurous knights, with whom history abounds, is like an endeavour to persuade people, that frost is not cold, that the sun yields no light, and the earth no sustenance. Will any earthly eloquence make me believe that the story of the infanta Floripes, and Guy of Burgundy, is false; or, that of Fierabras, with the bridge of Mantible, which happened in the time of Charlemagne, and I vow to God! is as true as that the sun shines at noon-day? If this be

a lie, you may also affirm, that there never was such an event as the Trojan war, nor such persons as Hector and Achilles, or the twelve peers of France, or Arthur king of England, who to this day survives in the likeness of a raven, and is every moment expected to reascend his throne. People may as well venture to say, that the history of Guarino Mezquino, and the suit of St. Grial, are pure fiction; and look upon the amours of Don Tristan and queen Iseo, with those of Ginebra and Lançarot, as altogether apocryphal; tho' there are people who almost remember to have seen the duenna Quintanona, who was the best wine-skinker in Great Britain: this is so true, that I myself have heard my grandmother by the father's side, often say, when she happened to see a duenna with a reverend \* biggen, "Grandson, there is a person very like the duenna Quintanona." From whence I conclude, that she must either have known her personally, or at least, seen some picture of that venerable matron: then, who can deny the history of Peter of Provence, and the fair Magalona, since, to this day, may be seen, in the royal armoury, the very peg that turned the wooden horse upon which the valiant Peter travelled thro' the air; by the same token, that it is something larger than the pole of a coach, and stands hard by the saddle of Babieca: nay, at Roncevalles, you may see Orlando's horn, as big as a weaver's beam. From all which circumstances we may justly infer, that the twelve peers, the Peters, the Cids, with all those who were called knights-errant, actually existed, according to the records of their fame: otherwise, they may as well deny, that the valiant Portugeze, Juan de Merlo was a knight-errant; tho' it is well known, that he went to Burgundy, and fought against the city of Ras, with the famous lord of Charne, called Monseigneur Pierre, and afterwards in the city of Basil, with Monseigneur Henrique de Remestan; gaining the victory in each of these combats, with abundance of honourable fame: neither, I suppose, will they credit the defiance and adventures that were also atchieved in Burgundy, by those valiant Spaniards Pedro Barba and Guttierre Quixada, (from whom I am lineally descended on the father's side) who conquered the sons of the count de St. Paul: nay, let them likewise refuse to own that Don Fernando de Guevara went in quest of adventures into Germany, where he fought with Messire George, a knight of the household to the duke of Austria; and say that the jousts and tournaments at Suero de Quinones, and the pafs, were meer illusion, as well as the enterprizes of Monseigneur Lewis de Falfes, against Don Gonçalo de Guzman, a Castilian knight; together with many other exploits performed by christian warriors belonging to these and other foreign realms, so authentic and true, that (I repeat my asseveration) he who denies them is void of all reason and common sense."

\* Toca, which is the original word, signifies a woman's coif, veil or handkerchief.



The canon was struck with admiration, when he heard Don Quixote utter such a medley of fiction and truth; and perceiving that he was intimately acquainted with every circumstance regarding and concerning the achievements of knight-errantry, answered him in these words: "Signor Don Quixote, I cannot deny but what you have said, is partly true, particularly that which regards the Spanish knights: I grant also, that there was an order called the twelve peers of France, but cannot believe that they performed all those exploits recounted by archbishop Turpin; for, the truth is, they were a set of knights, chosen by the kings of France, under the title of the twelve Peers, because they were all equal in point of virtue, rank and valour: at least, if they were not, they ought to have been possessed of this parity of qualifications; for, it was an association resembling the modern orders of St. Jago and Calatrava, which suppose that every member is valiant, virtuous and noble; and as we now say, a knight of St. Juan or Alcantara, in those days, they said a knight of the twelve peers; because those who professed that military order were equal, in all respects, and twelve in number: that there were such persons as the Cid and Bernardo del Carpio, I make no question; but, whether or not they performed all those exploits which are ascribed to them, is, I believe, extremely doubtful: with respect to the peg of count Peter, which, you say, stands by the saddle of Babieca, in the royal armoury, to my shame be it spoken, I am either so ignorant or short-sighted, that altho' I have seen the saddle, I could never observe the peg, large as you have been pleased to describe it." "But, there it certainly is, replied the knight; and what makes it the more remarkable, it is said to be kept in a case of calves leather, that it may not rust." "It may be so, said the canon; but, by my holy orders! I do not remember to have seen any such thing: yet, granting it to be in that place, I am not therefore bound to believe the stories that are recounted of so many Amadisés, and such a rabble of knights: nor is it reasonable, that a person of honour, like you, endowed with so many happy talents, should give credit to such extravagant rhodomontades as are related in the lying legends of knight-errantry."

## C H A P. XXIII.

Of the sage contest between Don Quixote and the canon, with other events.

“ **A** Good jest, truly! replied Don Quixote, that books printed with the licence of kings, and approbation of those who are appointed to examine them, read with universal delight, celebrated by great and small, rich and poor, knights and plebeians, the learned and illiterate; finally, by persons of all ranks and degrees whatever, should contain nothing but lies; notwithstanding the appearance of truth which they maintain, in mentioning the father, mother, country, relations, condition, birth-place; and in giving an exact journal of the exploits peculiar to every individual knight: cease therefore, good sir, to vent such blasphemy, and believe, that in this particular, I advise you to act according to the dictates of good sense: read them again, and you will see what pleasure you will reap for your pains; for, what can be more entertaining than to see, as it were, before our eyes, a vast lake of boiling pitch, thro’ which an infinite number of serpents, snakes, and alligators, with many other kinds of fierce and terrible creatures, are continually winding and writhing along; then to hear a most dismal voice that seems to issue from the middle of this pitchy pool, pronounce, “ O knight! whosoever thou art, that now standest gazing at the dreadful lake, if thou wouldst enjoy the bliss that is concealed beneath these fable waves, display the valour of thy dauntless breast, and dart thyself amidst these black and burning billows; otherwise, thou art not worthy to behold the mighty wonders deposited and contained within the seven castles of the seven nymphs that dwell below this fullen flood.” Scarce hath the sound of this dismal voice ceased to vibrate on his ear, when the knight, without the least hesitation, or reflecting upon the danger he incurs, nay, without putting off his heavy armour, but, recommending himself to God and his mistress, plunges at once into the burning lake; and when he neither cares nor knows what will be his fate, finds himself in the midst of a delightful plain, by which the Elysian fields are infinitely excelled: there the heaven seems more transparent, and the sun shines with new lustre; the eye is entertained with an agreeable forest of tall and leafy trees, whose verdure delights the view, while the ear is regaled with the sweet and artless notes of an infinite number of little painted warblers that hop from bough to bough: here, he perceives a brook, whose refreshing waters, clear as liquid crystal, run murmuring on the yellow sand and glistening pebbles, that emulate the purest pearls and heaps of  
sifted

sifted gold. In one place, springs an artificial fountain adorned with variegated jasper and polished marble; in another, rises a rustic grotto, in which the small shells of the muscle, and the white and yellow twisted domes of the snail, placed in beauteous disorder, and mixed with bits of shining crystal and counterfeit emeralds, compose such an agreeable variety, that nature seems to be excelled by imitative art. In a third place, all of a sudden, appears a strong castle or magnificent palace, the walls of massy gold, the battlements of diamond, the gates of hyacinth, and finally, the workmanship so admirable, as infinitely to excel the materials which are no less than adamant, carbuncles, rubies, pearls, emeralds and gold. Nay, after having thus feasted his eyes, there still remains for him to see a fair bevy of damsels coming out at the castle-gate, dressed in such gay and splendid attire, that were I to describe it minutely, as it is represented in the history, I should never have done. Then, she who appears the principal, takes by the hand the undaunted knight who threw himself into the boiling lake, and leading him into the rich castle or palace, strips him as naked as he was when his mother bore him, and bathes him in water of an agreeable temperature, then anoints his whole body with aromatic essences, and puts upon him a shirt of the finest lawn, all scented and perfumed; then comes another damsel, and throws over his shoulders a mantle, which, at least, is usually valued at the price of a whole city, or more. After all this ceremony, what a sight it is, when, as they relate, he is conducted into another hall, in which a table is furnished with such elegance as to excite his admiration and suspense! when they sprinkle upon his hands water distilled from odoriferous flowers! when he is seated upon a chair of ivory, and attended by all those damsels who serve him in amazing silence! when he is allured by such a variety of dishes, and so favourily cooked, that the appetite is confounded in its choice! then to hear music, during his repast, without seeing the minstrel, or knowing from whence the sound proceeds; and, after he has refreshed himself, and the table is uncovered, while he lolls at ease upon his chair, perhaps, picking his teeth, according to custom, he is surprized with the sight of another young lady, much more beautiful than any of the former, who enters the hall, and, sitting down by the knight, begins to tell him whose castle that is, and how she is enchanted within it, relating other circumstances which create wonder in him, and raise the admiration of those who read the story. I need not further expatiate on this subject, since, from what hath been said, it plainly appears, that any part whatever, of the history of any knight-errant whatever, must yield pleasure and surprize to any reader whatsoever. Believe me, therefore, good sir, and as I have already hinted, take the trouble of reading those books, and you will

see what effectual antidotes they are against melancholy, and how they improve the disposition, when it is bad. For, my own part, I can safely aver, that since I professed the order of knight-errantry, I have been valiant, courteous, liberal, well-bred, generous, civil, daring, good-humoured, and a patient endurer of toils, captivities and enchantment; and tho' I so lately found myself shut up in a cage, like a madman, I hope, by the valour of this my arm, provided heaven shall favour, and fortune cease to oppose me, in a few days, to see myself sovereign of some kingdom, when I shall be enabled to demonstrate the gratitude and generosity which reside within my breast: for, truly, signor, a poor man is incapable of exerting the virtue of liberality, let him possess it in never so eminent a degree; and that gratitude which is restrained to good-will alone, is like faith without works; no more than the ghost of virtue. Wherefore, I wish fortune would speedily furnish me with an opportunity of making myself an emperor, that I may exercise the virtues of my heart, in bestowing benefits on my friends, especially on my poor squire Sancho Panza, one of the best men in the world, whom I intend to create an earl, in consequence of a promise which he obtained from me, long ago; though I fear he wants capacity to manage his estate."

These last words being overheard by Sancho, he said to his master, " Signor Don Quixote, I wish you would take the trouble to give me that same earldom, which is as firmly promised by your worship as expected by me, and I will undertake to find ability to manage it; or, if I should find myself at a loss, I have heard it often said, that there are certain persons who farm the estates of great noblemen, at so much a year, and take charge of the whole, while the owner lolls at his ease, enjoying his income, without troubling his noddle about any other affairs. Now, I would live in the very same manner, minding the cares of this world as little as possible, but, leaving off all sorts of business, enjoying my rents, like any duke, and let the world wag." " Brother Sancho, said the canon, that is to be understood only of the spending your income; but, the lord of a great estate must have regard to the administration of justice, which requires ability, sound judgment, and principally an upright intention; for, if this be wanting in the beginning, the middle and end will always be involved in error: and therefore, heaven usually assists the righteous intent of the simple, while it confounds the wicked aims of the cunning." " I know nothing of these philosophies, answered the squire; but, this I know, that I wish to God I had this earldom, as soon as I should find understanding to manage it; for, I have as big a soul as my neighbours, and as much body as he that has more; and would be as much a king in my own estate, as any he that wears a head: and so being, I would do

do what I pleased; and doing what I pleased, I should please myself; and pleasing myself, I should be satisfied; and in being satisfied, I should have nothing more to desire; and having nothing more to desire, there would be an end; so, let the earldom come a God's-name: I wish we could see it, as one blind man said to another." "These are no bad philosophies, as you call them, Sancho, said the canon; but, for all that, there is much to be said on the subject of earldoms." "I know not what more can be said, replied Don Quixote, for, my own part, I do no more than follow the example transmitted to me by the great Amadis de Gaul, who created his squire earl of the Firm Island; and therefore, I may, without scruple of conscience, bestow the same honour on Sancho Panza, who is one of the best squires that ever served knight-errant." The canon was amazed at the methodical madness of Don Quixote, manifested in his description of the knight of the Lake; and in the impression which the false adventures of chivalry had made upon his imagination: neither was his wonder diminished, when he considered the folly of Sancho, who so ardently desired the possession of that island which his master had promised to give him, as the reward of his services.

By this time the canon's servants had returned from the inn, with the sumpter-mule; and, instead of a table, spread a carpet on the green grass, under the shade of some trees, where the company seating themselves all round, went to dinner, that the waggoner might not lose the opportunity of such a convenient situation, as we have already observed. While they thus enjoyed themselves, their ears were struck with a sudden noise, and the sound of a bell, issuing from the midst of some briars and thickets, that surrounded the place where they sat; and immediately appeared a beautiful she-goat, her skin speckled with spots of white, black and grey, followed by the goatherd, who, in his rustic dialect, called to her to stop and return to the fold. The fugitive goat trembling with affright, came towards the company, and there stopped, as if to implore their protection; while her keeper, seizing her by the horns, accosted her in these words, as if she had been possessed of sense and understanding: "Ah! you spotted wanton, what a rambler you have become of late; the wolves will feast upon you one day—what is the matter with you, my pretty child? yet what else can it be, but, that you are a female, and consequently inconstant! a plague upon your disposition, and all those you resemble; return, return my darling; and if you are not so happy, at least, you will be more secure in the fold, among your companions; for, if you who ought to watch over and guide the rest, stray about in this imprudent manner, what must become of them?"

These words of the goatherd, diverted those who heard them, especially the canon, who said to him, "I beseech you, brother, to pacify yourself, and be not in such a hurry to drive back your goat, which being a female, as you observe, will follow her natural disposition, in spite of all you can do to oppose it. Take this morsel, and alluage your choler with a cup of wine, and in the mean time, the goat will repose herself."

So saying, he presented to him, on the point of a fork, the hind quarter of a cold rabbit, which was thankfully accepted by the goatherd, who having taken a long draught, and composed himself, said to the company, "Gentlemen, you must not take me for a simpleton, because I talk to this animal as if it were a rational creature; for, really, there is a mystery concealed beneath the words I have uttered. I am a peasant, 'tis true, yet not so rustic, but, that I know how to converse with men as well as beasts." "I firmly believe what you say, replied the curate, for, I myself have experienced that the mountains produce learned men, and that philosophers are to be found within the shepherd's cot." "At least, resumed the goatherd, the cottage may contain those who are warned by woeful experience; and to convince you feelingly, that what I alledge is true, I, though undesired, and self-invited, saving the good pleasure of this good company, intreat a moment's hearing, while I recount a true story, which will confirm what that gentleman (pointing to the curate) and myself have observed."

To this proposal Don Quixote replied: "As this affair seems to bear something of the shadow of an adventure, I, for my part, will gladly give you the hearing, brother; and so will all those gentlemen who are persons of taste, and lovers of curious novels, that surprize, delight and entertain the sensible hearer; for, I hope your story will certainly produce these agreeable effects: begin then, friend; we are all attention." "By your leave, cried Sancho, I will e'en betake myself, with this piece of pastry, to yonder brook, and lay in store for three days; for, I have heard my master Don Quixote observe, that the squire of a knight-errant ought to eat as often and as much as he can; because they are frequently so bewildered in woods and forests, that it will take them six whole days to disengage themselves; and if a man's belly or his bags be not well-lined with provision, there he may stay, as he often does, till he withers into perfect mummy." "You are in the right, Sancho, said the knight, go where you will, and eat as much as you please; for, my own part, my grosser appetite is satisfied, and now I want refreshment for the mind, which I shall enjoy in listening to this honest countryman's story." "We shall all share in the repast," replied the canon, who intreated the peasant to perform his promise.

Then

Then the goatherd gave the goat which he held by the horns, two flaps on the buttocks, saying, "Lie down by my side, you speckled nanny; we shall have time enough to return to the fold." The creature seemed to understand his meaning; for, he was no sooner set, than she lay down very quietly, and looking in his face, gave him to understand that she was attentive to what he was going to say; upon which, he began his story, in these words:

## C H A P. XXIV.

The story which the goatherd recounted to the conductors of Don Quixote.

**T**HREE leagues from this valley stands a village, which, tho' small, is one of the richest in all this country; and therein dwelt a farmer in great repute: and albeit, respect follows worldly wealth, he was more beloved for his virtue than respected for his riches; but, what he regarded as the best part of his good fortune, (as he himself was wont to say) was a daughter he had, of such exceeding beauty, rare discretion, modesty and grace, that every one who saw and knew her, marvelled at the happy talents with which heaven and nature had enriched her body and her soul: in the cradle she was handsome, and continually increased in beauty, till at the age of sixteen, she was a most enchanting creature: the fame of her charms, began to spread over all the neighbouring villages; but, what need I say the neighbouring villages! it extended to distant cities, and even made its way into the king's court, filling the ears of all sorts of people, who came from all parts, to see her, as if she had been some great curiosity, or miracle-working image. Her father watched over her with great care, and she took great care of herself; for, truly, a maiden's own prudent reserve is a better guard upon her conduct than all the bolts and spies and padlocks upon earth. The father's wealth, and the daughter's beauty moved a great many people both of town and country, to demand her in marriage; but he, like one who has the disposal of a rich jewel, was perplexed in his mind, and could not determine in favour of any one of the infinite number that solicited his consent. Among the croud of her suitors, I was one, who conceived great and flattering hopes of success; because her father knew me to be his townsman, of an honest family, in the flower of my age, rich in wealth, and in point of understanding not very poor. She was also courted by another young man of our town, who was in every respect my equal; so, that her father was perplexed, and wavered in his choice; because he thought his daughter would be well bestowed upon either of us: wherefore, in order to deliver himself from this suspense, he resolved to communicate our demands to Leandra, (for, that is the name of this wealthy

thy maiden, who hath made me miserable;) and since we were equal in all qualifications, to refer the whole affair to the choice and decision of his beloved daughter. An example worthy to be followed by every father in the settlement of his children: not that I would have parents leave them to their own choice, in things that are manifestly wicked and base; but, first propose a number of prudent schemes, out of which they may be allowed to fix upon that which is most to their liking. I know not to which of us Leandra gave the preference; this only I know, that her father put us off, on pretence of his daughter's tender years, in general terms, which neither laid him under any obligation, nor gave us any cause of complaint. I think proper to tell you, that I am called Eugenio, and my rival Anselmo, that you may be acquainted with the names of the persons principally concerned in this tragedy, which is still depending; tho' one may easily foresee, that it must have a melancholy end.

But, to return to my story: just about that time, there came to our town one Vincent de la Rosa, the son of a poor labouring man that lived in the village; this Vincent, who was just returned from being a soldier in Italy, and other foreign parts, had been carried away, when he was a boy about twelve years of age, by a captain that chanced to march thro' the town with his company; and now, after an absence of another dozen of years, he returned, in the garb of a soldier, pinked up in a thousand colours, and bedecked with a power of glass toys and slender chains of steel. To-day, he dressed himself out in one gay suit; to-morrow in another: but, all his finery and gewgaws were of little weight or value. The labouring people, who are naturally malicious, nay, when idleness gives them opportunity, downright malice itself, observed and took an exact account of all his ornaments and fine apparel, and found that he had no more than three suits of different colours, with garters and hose; but, he found means to disguise them by such inventions, that one who had not been at the pains to detect him, would have sworn that he had appeared in more than ten different dresses, and in upwards of twenty plumes of feathers; and you must not think it impertinent or foolish in me, to give you this account of his cloaths, because they bear a considerable share in the story. He used to seat himself upon a stone, under a tall poplar that grew in our market-place, and there keep us all gaping around him, at the exploits which he recounted: if you would take his word for it, there was not a country on the face of the earth, which he had not seen, nor a battle in which he had not served; he had killed a greater number of Moors than ever Tunis or Morocco produced; and by his own account, fought more single combats than were ever maintained by Gante, Luna, Diego Garcia de Paredes, and a thousand more whom he named, gaining the victory in each, with-  
out



out losing one single drop of his blood: then, he would shew the marks of wounds, which tho' not to be distinguished, he gave us to understand, were the effects of musket-shot he had received in different actions and encounters: finally, with incredible arrogance, he used to thou his own equals, even those who knew his extraction, and say that his own arm was his father, his family the work of his own hands, and being a soldier, he owed nothing even to the king himself: with all this boasting, he knew something of music, and could thrum upon the guitarre, so as that some people said he made it speak; but, his talents did not end here, for, he was also a piece of a poet, and wrote ballads a league and a half long, upon every silly trifle that happened in the village. Well then, this soldier whom I have described, this Vincent de la Rosa, this Braggadocio, this gallant, this musician, and poet, was often seen and observed by Leandra from the window of her apartment, that looked towards the market-place: she was captivated by the tinsel of his gaudy cloths, and enchanted by his ballads; for, he gave away twenty copies of each that he composed; the feats he related of himself, reached her ears; in short, (as the devil himself must certainly have ordained) she fell in love with him, even before he had the presumption to make any attempt upon her heart; and as in the affairs of love, every thing is easily accomplished by the man who is already in possession of the woman's affection, Leandra and Vincent soon came to a right understanding; and before any one of her numerous admirers had the least inkling of her inclination, she had already gratified it, by leaving the house of her loving and indulgent father, (mother had she none) and running away with the soldier, who triumphed in that enterprize, and more effectually than in any one he had ever undertaken.

This event filled not only the whole village, but likewise all who heard of it, with admiration: I, for my part, was amazed, Anselmo astonished, the father overwhelmed with sorrow, and the relations with shame. Justice, however, being solicited, the troopers immediately took the road, examined every copse and thicket thereabouts, and after a search of three days, found the giddy Leandra in the cave of a mountain, naked to the smock, and stripped of a great quantity of money and precious jewels, which she had carried off when she made her escape: when she was brought back to the presence of her afflicted father, and questioned about her misfortune, she frankly owned that Vincent de la Rosa had imposed upon her; that, under promise of marriage, he had persuaded her to forsake her father's house, promising to conduct her to Naples, which, he said, was the most beautiful and flourishing city in the whole world; that she inadvertently, and fondly believed his false professions, and robbing her father, put herself under his protection that same night she was missed, when he carried her

to

to a rocky mountain, and confined her in the cave where she was found: she likewise affirmed that the soldier, without making any attempt upon her virtue, had stripped her of all she had, and left her in that forlorn condition; a circumstance that surpris'd all who heard it, the soldier's continence being so incredible; but, she insisted upon it with such earnest asseverations, that the disconsolate father was in some sort comforted, making little account of the money he had lost, since his daughter was allowed to keep the jewel which, when once lost, there is no hope of retrieving.

The same day that Leandra appeared, her father removed her from our eyes, and shut her up in a monastery of a neighbouring town, hoping that time would efface some part of the bad opinion his daughter had incurred: the tender years of Leandra serve as an excuse for her misconduct, especially with those who are not concerned in the affair; but, those who know her discretion and good sense, do not ascribe her fault to ignorance, but to meer levity, and the natural disposition of women, which is always injudicious and imperfect. Leandra being thus secured, Anselmo's eyes were blind to every thing that could yield him pleasure; and mine remained in darkness, without the least glimpse of light to direct them to any agreeable object: the absence of Leandra increased our affliction, and exhausted our patience; we curs'd the soldier's finery, and exclaimed against her father's want of care; at length, we agreed to quit the village, and repair to this valley, where he feeding a vast flock of sheep, which are his own property, and I tending a numerous fold of goats, which are also mine, we spend our lives under the cool shade of lofty trees, and give vent to our passion, either by singing, in concert, the praise or dispraise of the beautiful Leandra, or each by himself, sighing in the lonely grove, and ejaculating his complaint to heaven. In imitation of us, many more of Leandra's lovers have betaken themselves to these rugged mountains, and the exercise of the same employment; so that this spot seems to be transformed into a pastoral Arcadia, every field being crowded with shepherds and folds, and every corner resounding with the name of the fair Leandra. One curses and calls her fickle, inconstant and immodest; a second condemns her credulity and lightness of behaviour; a third acquits and forgives her, while she is arraigned and reproached by a fourth; some celebrate her beauty; others find fault with her disposition: in short, she is censured and adored by them all; nay, to such a pitch hath their extravagance risen, that some of them complain of her disdain, tho' they never spoke to her; and others, in their lamentations, pretend to feel the rage of jealousy, which is a passion she never inspired; for, as I have already mentioned, her fault was known before her inclination was suspected: there is not the hollow of a rock, the margin of a rill, nor the shade of a tree, that is not occupied by some shepherd,

shepherd recounting his misfortune to the winds; wherever an echo can be formed, it repeats the name of Leandra; the hills resound with Leandra; the rivulets murmur Leandra: in short, Leandra keeps us all enchanted and perplexed, hoping we know not how, and dreading we know not what. Among the wrongheaded society, he that shews the least, tho' he has the greatest share of judgment, is my rival Anselmo, who notwithstanding all the cause he has to be dissatisfied, complains of absence only, tuning his lamentation to the sound of a rebec, which he touches with admirable skill, in verses that shew the excellence of his genius: I follow a more easy, and in my opinion, a wiser course; namely, to inveigh against the levity of the female sex; their fickleneis, their double dealing, their rotten promises, their broken faith; and finally, their want of judgment in bestowing their affections. These, gentlemen, are my reasons for the discourse you heard me address to my goat, whom (because she is a female) I despise, altho' she be the best of the fold; this is the story I promised to recount; and if I have been prolix in the narration, I shall not be brief in what service you shall please to command: hard by is my cottage, in which I have plenty of new milk, and most savoury cheese, with abundance of the fruit in season, no less agreeable to the taste than to the view."

## C H A P. XXV.

Of the quarrel that happened between Don Quixote and the goatherd, with the curious adventure of the disciplinants, which the knight happily achieved with the sweat of his brow.

**T**HIS story of the goatherd gave infinite pleasure to all that heard it, especially to the canon, who observed, with admiration, his manner of relating it, as distant from the rustic phrase of a peasant as near approaching to the polite stile of a courtier; and therefore, he said the curate had justly observed, that the mountains sometimes produced learned men. Every body made proffers of service to Eugenio, but, he that shewed himself most liberal in compliment, was Don Quixote, who said to him, "Truly, brother goatherd, were it possible for me to undertake any new adventure, I would forthwith set forward in your behalf, and deliver Leandra from that monastery, in which she is, doubtless, detained against her will, in spite of the abbess and all that should oppose my design; and would put her into your hands to be treated according your good will and pleasure, so far as is consistent with the laws of chivalry, by which all damsels are protected from wrongs: tho' I hope in God, that a malicious enchanter

shall not so far prevail, but, that he may be excelled in power, by another of a more righteous disposition; and then, you may depend upon my favour and assistance, according to the duty of my profession, which is no other than to succour the wretched and the weak."

The goatherd stared at Don Quixote, and being struck with admiration at his rueful aspect and dishevelled locks, said to the barber who sat near him, "Signor, pray, who is that man who looks and talks so wildly?" "Who should it be, answered the barber, but the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, the redresser of grievances, the righter of wrongs, the protector of damsels, the terror of giants, and thunderbolt of war?" "That discourse, replied the peasant, puts me in mind of those books which treat of knights-errant, who were commonly distinguished by such titles as you bestow on that man: but, I suppose, you are pleased to be merry, or else, the apartments of this poor gentleman's skull are but indifferently furnished."

"You are a most impudent rascal! (cried the knight, overhearing what he said) it is your skull that is unfurnished and unsound; but, mine is more pregnant than the abominable whore that brought you forth." So saying, he snatched up a loaf, and flung it at the goatherd with such fury, that he levelled his nose with his face.

Eugenio, who did not understand raillery, finding himself maltreated in earnest, without any respect for the carpet, table-cloth or company, leaped upon the knight, and laying hold of his collar, with both hands, would certainly have strangled him, if Sancho Panza had not that instant sprung to his master's assistance, and pulling his antagonist backwards, tumbled him over upon the table, where plates, cups, victuals, wine, and all went to wreck. Don Quixote finding himself disengaged, arose, and in his turn, got upon the goatherd, who being battered by the master, and kicked by the man, was creeping about on all four, in quest of a table-knife, with which he intended to take some bloody revenge; but, was prevented by the canon and curate; the barber, however, managed matters so, as that he got the knight under him, when he rained such a shower of kicks and cuffs upon his carcase, that our hero's countenance was as much overflowed with blood as his own: the curate and canon were ready to burst with laughing, the troopers capered about with joy, and the whole company halloo'd, according to the practice of the spectators, when two dogs are engaged; Sancho Panza alone was distracted, because he could not get out of the clutches of one of the canon's servants, who hindered him from assisting his master. In fine, when every body was thus regaled and rejoiced, except the combatants, who worried each other, they heard a trumpet utter such a melancholy note, that they could  
not

not help turning their heads, and looking towards the place from whence the sound seemed to come; but, he on whom it made the greatest impression was Don Quixote, who, tho' lying under his antagonist, very much against his inclination, and more than sufficiently pummelled, said to the goatherd, "Brother devil, (for, sure thou canst be nothing else, who hast strength and valour sufficient to overcome my efforts) I beg a truce for one hour only; because the doleful sound of that trumpet which salutes our ears, seems to summon me to some new adventure."

The goatherd being by this time heartily tired of drubbing, as well as of being drubbed, immediately complied with his request, and Don Quixote starting up, directed his view towards the place whence the sound seemed to issue, where he descried a great number of people dressed in white, like disciplinants, coming down the side of a neighbouring hill. That year the heavens had withheld refreshing showers from the earth; and thro' all the villages of that district the people instituted processions, disciplines and prayers, beseeching God to open the fountains of his mercy, and favour them with rain: for this purpose, the inhabitants of a neighbouring village were then going in procession, to a holy hermitage, built on an eminence that skirted the valley; and Don Quixote seeing the strange dress of disciplinants\*, without recollecting that he had ever seen such habits before, concluded the whole to be an adventure, which it was the province of him as a knight-errant, to achieve: what served to confirm him in this notion, was an image cloathed in black, which was carried before them, and which he supposed to be some princefs, whom those discourteous robbers were carrying off by force.

This whim no sooner entered his brain, than he ran with great agility to Rozinante, who was feeding very quietly, and taking the bridle and shield, which hung upon the pommel of the saddle, clapt the bit in his mouth, in a twinkling, and demanding his sword from Sancho, mounted his steed, and braced his target, calling aloud to the company, "Now, honourable gentlemen, ye shall perceive the importance of those who profess the order of knight-errantry! now, I say, ye shall, in the deliverance of that excellent lady, who is at present a captive, behold how much knight-errants ought to be esteemed."

So saying, he clapt heels to Rozinante, (spurs he had none) and at a hand-gallop, (for, we do not find in this true history, that ever Rozinante went full speed) rode up to attack the disciplinants. Tho' the canon, curate and barber made efforts to detain him, they found it impracticable; he was even deaf to the cries of Sancho, who bawled with great vociferation: "Where are you going, signor Don Quixote? what devil possesses and pro-

\* Persons hired to whip themselves on such occasions.

vokes you to act against our catholic faith! take notice—a plague upon me! take notice that this is no other than a procession of disciplinants, and that lady carried on the beer the blessed image of the immaculate virgin! Consider, signor, what you are about; for, sure I am you do not know!”

In vain did Sancho strain his lungs: his master was so intent upon overtaking the apparitions, and setting the lady in black at liberty, that he heard not one syllable; nor if he had, would he have returned, even if the king had commanded him so to do. When he approached the procession, he stopped Rozinante, who was already out of breath, and with a hoarse disordered voice, pronounced, “You there, who, perhaps, disguise yourselves for no good, stop, and give ear to what I am going to say.”

Those who carried the image were the first that halted, and one of the four priests who sung the litanies, observing the strange aspect of Don Quixote, the leanness of Rozinante, with other ridiculous circumstances belonging to both, answered in these words: “Friend, if you have any thing to say, speak quickly; for, these our brethren are all this while scourging their own flesh, and we cannot, nor is it reasonable we should, tarry to hear any thing that cannot be comprehended in two words.” “I will comprehend what I have to say in one, replied the knight; and it is this: I command you, instantly to set free that beautiful lady, whose tears and melancholy deportment clearly demonstrate that you are carrying her off, contrary to her inclination, after having done her some notorious wrong; and I, who was born to redress such grievances, will not suffer you to proceed one step farther, until she shall have obtained that liberty she deserves.”

From these words, concluding that he must be some madman, all of them began to laugh very heartily; and their mirth acting as a train of gunpowder to the knight's choler, he drew his sword, and without uttering another word, attacked the bearers, one of whom, leaving his share of the load to his companions, opposed himself to this aggressor, brandishing a fork or pole, on which (when they were wearied) they supported the bier. Don Quixote, with a furious backstroke, cut this implement in two; but, with the piece which remained in the hand of the defendant, received such a thwack upon the shoulder above his sword-arm, that his buckler was unable to sustain the shock of such a rude assault, and down came the poor knight, in a most lamentable condition.

Sancho Panza, who came puffing after his master, seeing him fall, called aloud to his antagonist to forbear; for, he was a poor enchanted knight, who had never done the least harm to man, woman, or child: but, the peasant's forbearance was not owing to this exclamation of the squire, so much as to the situation of Don Quixote, who neither moved hand nor foot; so  
that

that believing he had done his business, he hastily gathered up his frock, and fled through the field, as nimble as a buck. By this time, the whole company were come up to the place where Don Quixote lay; and those belonging to the procession, seeing so many people running towards them, accompanied by the troopers with their cross-bows, began to be in dread of some mischievous event, and formed themselves into a circle around the image; then the disciplinants wielding their scourges, and the priests their long tapers, waited the assault, with full determination to defend themselves, and, if possible, act offensively against all who should attack them. But, fortune disposed of things more favourably, than they expected; for, all that Sancho did, was to throw himself upon the body of his master, who, he believed, was actually dead, and utter the most doleful and ludicrous lamentation that ever was heard. The curate was immediately known by a brother of the cloth, who belonged to the procession, and this acquaintance dispelled the apprehension which both squadrons had begun to conceive. Our licentiate told his friend, in a few words, who Don Quixote was, upon which he was joined by the whole croud of disciplinants, who went to see whether or not the poor knight was dead, and heard Sancho Panza, with tears in his eyes, lamenting in these words: "O! Flower of chivalry, who, by the single stroke of a cudgel hast finished the career of thy well-spent life! O! thou honour of thy family, thou glory of la Mancha, ay, and of the whole world, which being deprived of thee, will soon be filled with evil doers, who will prosper without fear of chastisement for their wicked deeds! Oh! thou wast more liberal than all the Alexanders that ever lived! for, thou gavest me, for eight months service, only, the best island that ever the sea surrounded. Oh! thou wast humble with the haughty, and haughty with the humble, tempting dangers, enduring disgraces, in love without cause, imitating the good, scourging the wicked, a professed enemy to every thing that was base; in short, a knight-errant, and that is every thing in one word!"

The cries and groans of Sancho revived his master, and the first words he pronounced were these: "He who is condemned to live absent from thee, most amiable Dulcinea! is subjected to much greater hardships than these. Friend Sancho, help to lay me on the enchanted car, for, I am incapable of pressing Rozinante's saddle, this whole shoulder being crushed to pieces." "That I'll do very willingly, dear master, replied the squire, and let us return to our own habitation, in company of these gentlemen, who wish you well; and there we will lay a scheme for another sally, which, I hope, will be more fortunate and creditable." "You are in the right, Sancho, replied Don Quixote, and it will be very prudent in us to let the malign influence of the stars pass over."

The

The canon, curate and barber approved of his intention, and being extremely diverted with the squire's simplicity, conveyed the knight to his former situation in the waggon. The procession was formed anew, and set forwards accordingly; the goatherd took his leave of the company, the troopers being unwilling to go farther, were paid by the curate for their trouble; the canon having intreated the priest to inform him by letter, of Don Quixote's fate, with regard to the continuation or cure of his extravagance, bad him farewell, and proceeded on his journey; in short, there was a general separation, till at length the curate, barber, Don Quixote and Panza were left by themselves, with the trusty Rozinante, who, with the patience of his master, bore and beheld every thing that passed.

The waggoner yoking his oxen, accommodated the knight with a truss of hay, and with his usual phlegm jogged on, according to the priest's directions, till, at the end of six days, they arrived at their own village, which they entered about noon; and it chancing to be Sunday, the market-place through which they were obliged to pass was crowded with people, who running to see what was in the cage, recognized their townsman, and were struck with astonishment. A boy ran immediately to his housekeeper and niece, whom when he informed of their master's arrival, in a most meagre, withered condition, stretched upon a truss of hay, in a waggon; it was a piteous thing to hear the cries that were uttered by these worthy ladies, who buffeted themselves through vexation, and vented bitter curses against the wicked books of chivalry; which lamentations, buffetings and curses were repeated with greater violence than ever, when they saw the knight enter his own gate.

Sancho Panza's wife, who had got intimation, that he was gone with Don Quixote in quality of his squire, hearing of their return, ran strait to her husband, and the first question she asked, was, Whether or not the ass was in good health? when the squire answered, that the ass was in better health than his master, "Thanks be to God, cried she, for that and all his other mercies. But, now tell me, friend, what good you have got by your squireship? Have you brought home a new petticoat for me, or shoes for your children?" "I have brought no such matters, my dear, replied Sancho, but, things of greater consideration and importance." "I am glad of that, with all my heart, said the wife; pray, shew me these things of greater consideration and importance, that the sight of them may rejoice my heart, which hath been so sad and discontented all the weary time of your being away." "You shall see them at home, answered Sancho; and heark'ee, wife, make yourself easy for the present, for, an it please God, that we set out again in quest of adventures, you shall speedily behold your husband an earl, or governor of an island; I don't mean your

common



common islands, but, one of the best that ever was seen." "The Lord in heaven grant it, husband! for I am sure we have need enough of such windfalls: but, tell me, what is an island; for, truly, I know not the meaning of the word." "Honey was not made for the mouth of an ass, said the squire; you shall see what it is, all in good time, my dear; ay, and admire to hear all your vassals call you, my lady." "What is that you say, Sancho, of ladies, islands, and vassals?" cried Joan Panza; for, that was the name of the squire's wife, though she was not related to Sancho before marriage, but, it is the custom in la Mancha, for the women to take the names of their husbands. "Don't be in such a hurry to know every thing, Joan, replied the squire; it is sufficient that I tell thee nothing but truth; let this therefore stop that mouth of thine: mean time, however, I care not if I tell thee, that it is one of the most pleasant occupations in the world, for an honourable person like me, to be squire to a knight-errant, when he is in quest of adventures. True it is, the greatest part of them do not fall out quite so much to one's liking as one could wish; for, out of an hundred in which we are engaged, ninety-nine are generally crofs and unfortunate. That I know by experience, having been sometimes threshed and sometimes blanketed: but, howsoever, it is a curious pastime to be always in expectation of adventures, crossing huge mountains, searching woods, climbing rocks, visiting castles, lodging at inns, where we live at rack and manger, and the devil a farthing to pay."

While this conversation passed between Sancho and his wife, the house-keeper and niece received Don Quixote, whom they undressed and put to bed in his old chamber, while he eyed them askance, without being able to comprehend where he was. The curate laid his injunctions on the niece, to cherish her uncle with great tenderness, and charged them both, to take especial care, that he might not escape again, giving them an account of the trouble he had been at, in bringing him back to his own house. Here they raised their voices again, in concert, renewing their curses upon the books of chivalry, and beseeching heaven to confound the authors of such madness and lies, to the lowest pit of hell: in short, they were half-distracted with the apprehension of losing him again, as soon as his health should be re-established; and this was actually the case.

But, the author of this history, although he inquired with the utmost curiosity and diligence, concerning the actions of Don Quixote, in his third fall, could never find any satisfactory and authentic account of them; only, fame hath preserved some memoirs in la Mancha, by which it appears, that Don Quixote, when he set out the third time, went to Saragossa, where he was present at a most celebrated tournament, in which,

many

many things happened to him worthy of his genius and valour: but, with regard to his death and burial, he could obtain no information, and must have remained entirely ignorant of that event, had he not luckily met with an old physician, who had in his custody a leaden box, which he said he found under the foundation of an ancient hermitage that was repairing. This box contained some skins of parchment, on which were written in Gothic characters, and Castilian verse, many of our knight's exploits, with a description of Dulcinea's beauty, Rozinante's figure, Sancho's fidelity, and Don Quixote's own funeral, celebrated by divers epitaphs, and panegyrics on his life and morals. All that could be read and fairly copied, are those which are here inserted by the faithful author of this new and surprising history, who, in recompence for the immense trouble he has undergone in his inquiries, and in examining the archives of la Mancha, that he might publish it with more certainty, desires the reader to favour him with the same credit which intelligent persons give to those books of chivalry that pass so currently in the world; and herewith he will rest fully satisfied; and perhaps, be animated to search after, and find out other histories, if not as authentic, at least as full of invention and entertainment.

The verses which were written in the first skin of parchment found in the leaden box, were these.

The academicians of Argamasilla, a town of la Mancha, on the life and death of the valiant Don Quixote de la Mancha, hoc scripserunt.

Monicongo, academician of Argamasilla, on the sepulture of Don Quixote.

E P I T A P H.

THE bully that la Mancha deck'd  
 With spoils that shame the Cretan Jason,  
 Whose judgment ripe, and wit uncheck'd  
 The trumpet of renown shall blason;  
 That arm, whose valour did extend  
 To Gaeta, from remote Cathay,  
 That muse which did the welkin rend  
 With verse which brazen plates display;  
 He who to Amadis turned tail,  
 And deem'd Galaor a meer baby,

Whose

Whose gallantry did so prevail,  
 As shew'd ev'n Belianis shabby ;  
 He that on Rozinante rode,  
 Now mingles with this clay-cold clod !

Paniguado, academician of Argamafilla, in praise of Dulcinea del Toboso.

## S O N G.

**T**HE maid you see with cheeks so blouzy,  
 High-chested, vigorous and frouzy,  
 Dulcinea, fam'd Toboso's princess,  
 Don Quixote's gen'rous flame evinces :  
 For her, on foot, he did explore  
 The fable mountain o'er and o'er,  
 Through many a weary field did halt,  
 And all through Rozinante's fault.  
 Hard fate ! that such a dame should die  
 In spite of him and chivalry ;  
 That he, whose deeds ev'n stones proclaim,  
 Should mourn a disappointed flame !

Caprichoso, a most ingenious academician of Argamafilla, in praise of  
 Rozinante the renowned steed of Don Quixote de la Mancha.

**O**N a proud trunk of adamant,  
 Whose bloody branches smell'd of war,  
 La Mancha's frantic wight did plant  
 His standard glitt'ring from afar.  
 There hung his arms ; there gleam'd his sword,  
 That won't to level, hack and hew,  
 Yet shall the wond'ring muse afford  
 For new exploits, a stile that's new.  
 Let Gaul of Amadis be proud,  
 Greece boast the champions she hath bore ;  
 Don Quixote triumphs o'er the croud  
 Of all the warlike knights of yore.

For, neither Gaul nor Greece can vye  
 With fam'd La Mancha's chivalry.  
 Ev'n Rozinante wears the bay ;  
 Let Brilladore and Bayard bray.

Burlador, an Argamafillecian academician, on Sancho Panza.

S O N G.

**H**ERE Sancho view of body small,  
 But great in worth, in action clear,  
 The best and simplest squire of all  
 The world e'er saw, I vow and swear.  
 An earl he surely might have been,  
 Had not this knavish age of brass,  
 With insolence and envious spleen,  
 Conspir'd against him and his ass ;  
 That ass ! on which he gently trotted  
 At gentle Rozinante's tail :  
 Vain man ! with flatt'ring hope besotted,  
 How, in a dream, thy prospects fail !

Cachidiablo, academician of Argamafilla, on the sepulture of Don Quixote.

E P I T A P H.

**O**N Rozinante's back  
 The knight that whilome travel'd,  
 Thro' highway, path, and track,  
 Is here bemir'd and gravel'd :  
 And eke as stiff as he,  
 The block of Sancho Panza,  
 A trusty squire, perdie !  
 As ever mortal man saw.

Tiquiloc, academician of Argamafilla, on the sepulture of Dulcinea del Toboso.

**H**ERE lies Dulcinea once so plump,  
 But, now her fat all melts away ;  
 For death, with an inhuman thump,  
 Has turn'd her into dust and clay,

Of a true breed she purely sprung,  
And wanted not external grace ;  
Don Quixote's heart with love she stung,  
And shone the glory of her race.

These were all the verses which could be read ; the rest being worm-eaten were delivered to an academician, that he might attempt to unravel their meaning, by conjecture. This task, we understand, he has performed with infinite pains and study, intending to publish them to the world, in expectation of the third sally of Don Quixote.

“ Fosse altro cantera con miglior plectro.”

END of the FIRST PART.

Of a true heart the fairly young  
 And a noble and constant grace,  
 Don Quixote's heart with love the young  
 And thence the



These were all the virtues  
 that were bestowed to an  
 their meaning by confounding  
 formed with infinite pain and  
 world, in expectation of  
 "Folle also content can right in

End of the FIRST PART.

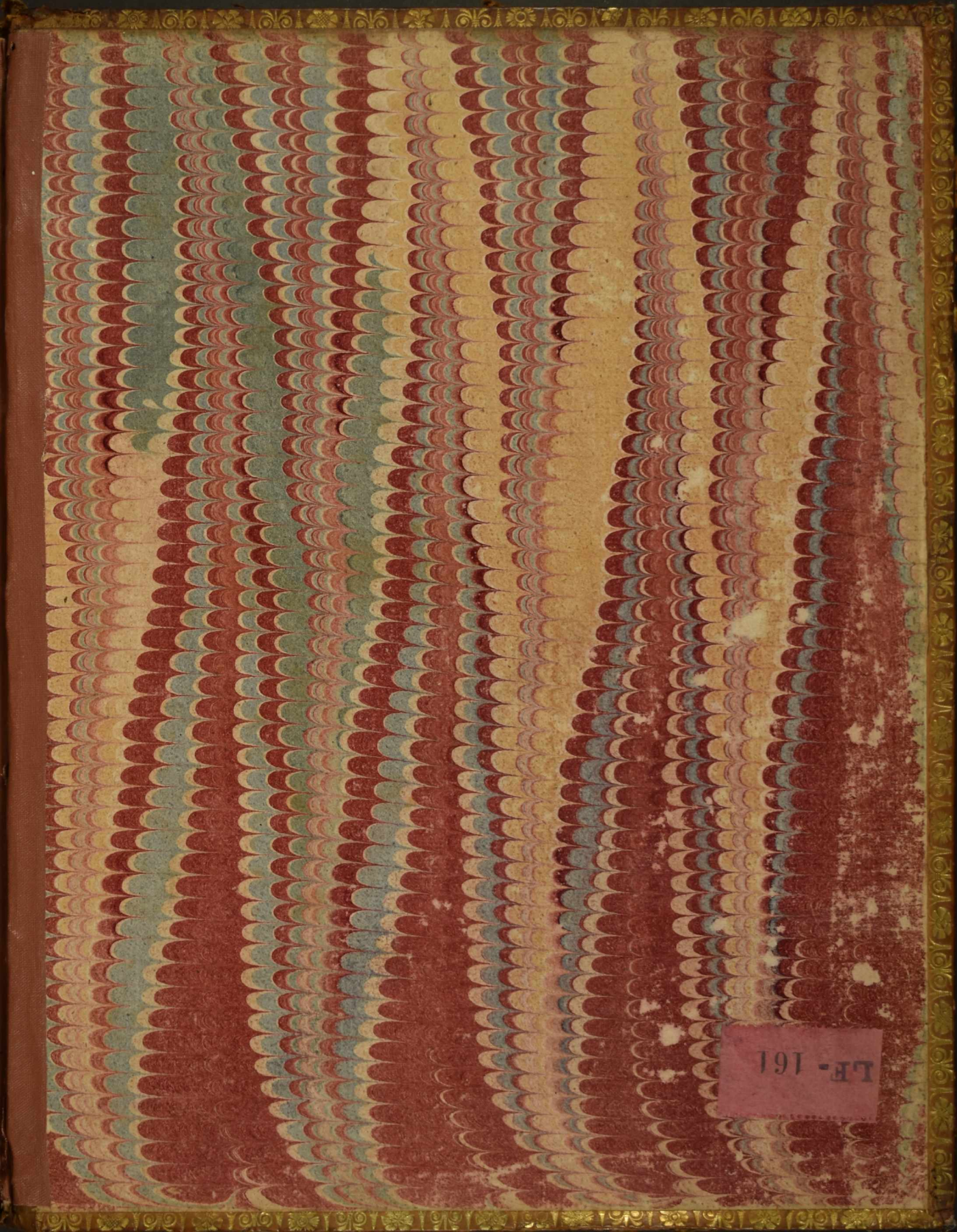










The image shows the front cover of an antique book. The cover is decorated with a traditional marbled paper pattern, often called a 'stone' or 'shell' pattern, featuring repeating, overlapping, teardrop or scallop shapes in shades of red, blue, green, and yellow. The marbling is set within a decorative gold border that has a repeating floral or scrollwork motif. The book shows signs of age, with some wear and discoloration, particularly on the right side. A small, rectangular, light-colored label is affixed to the bottom right corner of the cover.

LF-161



DON  
QUIXOTE

VOL. I.

[Blind-stamped decorative panel with floral and scrollwork motifs]